DATE DUE

D 20 .H6 1913 v.18

The history of nations

3 1539 0047396

TITLE

DATE DUE | BORROWER'S NAME

D 20 .H6 1913 v.18

The history of nations

3 1539 0047396

Latourette Library
William Carey Int'l University
1539 E. Howard, Pasadena, CA 91104
(626) 398-2155 • library@wciu.edu

DEMCO

The History *of* Nations

GERMANY

MEMORIAL
EDITION

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/historyofnations0018sidn_t5f4

THE HISTORY OF NATIONS

HENRY CABOT LODGE, Ph.D., LL.D. · EDITOR-IN-CHIEF

GERMANY

REVISED AND EDITED FROM THE WORK OF

BAYARD TAYLOR

BY SIDNEY B. FAY, Ph.D.

PROFESSOR OF HISTORY
DARTMOUTH COLLEGE

VOLUME XVIII

ILLUSTRATED

P · F · COLLIER & SON COMPANY
PUBLISHERS · NEW YORK

THE IMPERIAL DEPUTIES ARE THROWN OUT OF THE WINDOW OF THE COUNCIL CHAMBER OF THE HRADSHIN IN PRAGUE, THUS PRECIPITATING THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR

Painting by Vaczlav Brozik

—page 268

THE HISTORY OF NATIONS

HENRY CABOT LODGE, Ph. D., LL. D. · EDITOR-IN-CHIEF

GERMANY

REVISED AND EDITED FROM THE WORK OF

BAYARD TAYLOR

BY SIDNEY B. FAY, Ph. D.

PROFESSOR OF HISTORY
DARTMOUTH COLLEGE

VOLUME XVIII

ILLUSTRATED

P · F · COLLIER & SON COMPANY
PUBLISHERS ∴ NEW YORK

Copyright, 1907, by
John D. Morris & Company

Copyright, 1910, by
The H. W. Snow & Son Company

Copyright, 1913, by
P. F. Collier & Son

Copyright, 1916, by
P. F. Collier & Son

Copyright, 1920, by
P. F. Collier & Son Company

Copyright, 1928, by
P. F. Collier & Son Company

MANUFACTURED IN U. S. A.

Wm. Carey Int'l University

THE HISTORY OF NATIONS

EDITOR-IN-CHIEF

HENRY CABOT LODGE, Ph.D., LL.D.

Associate Editors and Authors

ARCHIBALD HENRY SAYCE, LL.D.,
Professor of Assyriology, Oxford University

CHRISTOPHER JOHNSTON, M.D., Ph.D.,
Associate Professor of Oriental History and Archaeology, Johns Hopkins University

C. W. C. OMAN,
Professor of History, Oxford University

THEODOR MOMMSEN,
Late Professor of Ancient History, University of Berlin

ARTHUR C. HOWLAND, Ph.D.,
Department of History, University of Pennsylvania

CHARLES MERIVALE, LL.D.,
Late Dean of Ely, formerly Lecturer in History, Cambridge University

J. HIGGINSON CABOT, Ph.D.,
Department of History, Wellesley College

SIR WILLIAM W. HUNTER, F.R.S.,
Late Director-General of Statistics in India

GEORGE M. DUTCHER, Ph.D.,
Professor of History, Wesleyan University

SIR ROBERT K. DOUGLAS,
Professor of Chinese, King's College London

JEREMIAH WHIPPLE JENKS, Ph.D., LL.D.,
Professor of Political Economy and Politics, Cornell University

KANICHI ASAKAWA, Ph.D.,
Instructor in the History of Japanese Civilization, Yale University

WILFRED HAROLD MUNRO, L.H.D.,
Professor of European History, Brown University

G. MERCER ADAM,
Historian and Editor

FRED MORROW FLING, Ph.D.,
Professor of European History, University of Nebraska

FRANÇOIS AUGUSTE MARIE MIGNET,
Late Member of the French Academy

JAMES WESTFALL THOMPSON, Ph.D.,
Department of History, University of Chicago

SAMUEL RAWSON GARDINER, LL.D.,
Professor of Modern History, King's College, London

P. W. JOYCE, LL.D.,
Commissioner for the Publication of the Ancient Laws of Ireland

ASSOCIATE EDITORS AND AUTHORS—Continued

JUSTIN McCARTHY, LL.D.,
Author and Historian

AUGUSTUS HUNT SHEARER, Ph.D.,
Instructor in History, Trinity College, Hartford

W. HAROLD CLAFLIN, B.A.,
Department of History, Harvard University

CHARLES DANDLIKER, LL.D.,
President of Zurich University

ELBERT JAY BENTON, Ph.D.,
Department of History, Western Reserve University

SIR EDWARD S. CREASY,
Late Professor of History, University College, London

ARCHIBALD CARY COOLIDGE, Ph.D.,
Assistant Professor of History, Harvard University

WILLIAM RICHARD MORFILL, M.A.,
Professor of Russian and other Slavonic Languages, Oxford University

CHARLES EDMUND FRYER, Ph.D.,
Department of History, McGill University

E. C. OTTE,
Specialist on Scandinavian History

EDWARD S. CORWIN, Ph.D.,
Instructor in History, Princeton University

PAUL LOUIS LEGER,
Professor of Slav Languages, College de France

WILLIAM E. LINGELBACH, Ph.D.,
Assistant Professor of European History, University of Pennsylvania

BAYARD TAYLOR,
Former United States Minister to Germany

SIDNEY B. FAY, Ph.D ,
Professor of History, Dartmouth College

J. SCOTT KELTIE, LL.D.,
President Royal Geographical Society

ALBERT GALLOWAY KELLER, Ph.D.,
Assistant Professor of the Science of Society, Yale University

EDWARD JAMES PAYNE, M.A.,
Fellow of University College, Oxford

PHILIP PATTERSON WELLS, Ph.D.,
Lecturer in History and Librarian of the Law School, Yale University

FREDERICK ALBION OBER,
Historian, Author and Traveler

JAMES WILFORD GARNER, Ph.D.,
Professor of Political Science, University of Illinois

JOHN BACH McMASTER, Litt.D., LL.D.,
Professor of History, University of Pennsylvania

JAMES LAMONT PERKINS, Managing Editor -

The editors and publishers desire to express their appreciation for valuable advice and suggestions received from the following: Hon. Andrew D. White, LL.D., Alfred Thayer Mahan, D.C.L., LL.D., Hon. Charles Emory Smith, LL.D., Professor Edward Gaylord Bourne, Ph.D., Charles F. Thwing, LL.D., Dr. Emil Reich, William Elliot Griffis, LL.D., Professor John Martin Vincent, Ph.D., LL.D., Melvil Dewey, LL.D., Alston Ellis, LL.D., Professor Charles H. McCarthy, Ph.D., Professor Herman V. Ames, Ph.D., Professor Walter L. Fleming, Ph.D., Professor David Y. Thomas, Ph.D., Mr. Otto Reich and Mr. Francis J. Reynolds.

NOTE

The editors of "The History of Nations" concluded their work with the chronicling of events to October, 1905, and all additions thereafter, bringing the histories to date, have been supplied by the publishers.

PREFACE

Mr. Taylor was exceptionally well equipped for writing a popular history of Germany. At the time when he wrote (1873) he had already been many years in Germany occupied in his well-known studies of Goethe; he had married a German lady, had traveled widely, and shared in that German enthusiasm which accompanied the foundation of the German Empire. He made use in his history of the best results of the German historical scholarship of his day. But in the generation which has passed scientific historical research has brought to light a mine of new material; the economic historians have taught us to lay a new emphasis on that side of historical development; and time has brought more just judgments in regard to disputed religious questions. It has been the aim of the editor to preserve as nearly as possible the original text, and yet bring it completely into line with the best modern scholarship. The necessary changes were so numerous and so varied in character that for the sake of smoothness in the narrative it has seemed better to incorporate all changes directly in the text rather than distract the reader's attention with innumerable footnotes. The responsibility for the last chapter rests wholly with the editor; in brief space he has attempted to sum up the leading features in the development of Germany in the last thirty years.

Sidney B. Fay.

Dartmouth College

CONTENTS

PART I

EARLY HISTORY. 330 B. C.-911 A. D.

CHAPTER PAGE

I. The Ancient Germans and their Country. 330-70 B. C. 3

II. The Wars with Rome. 70 B. C.-9 A. D. . . 10

III. Hermann, the First German Leader. 9-21 A. D. . 17

IV. The First Three Centuries of our Era. 21-300 A. D. 23

V. The Migration of the Goths. 300-412 A. D. . 31

VI. The Invasion of the Huns. 412-472 A. D. . . 38

VII. The Rise and Fall of the Ostrogoths. 472-570 A. D. 45

VIII. Europe at the End of the Migrations of the Races. 570 A. D. 53

IX. The Kingdom of the Franks. 486-638 A. D. . 59

X. The Dynasty of the Mayors of the Palace. 638-768 A. D. 67

XI. The Reign of Charlemagne. 768-814 A. D. . . 78

XII. The Emperors of the Carolingian Line. 814-911 A. D. 89

PART II

MEDIÆVAL HISTORY. 911-1493

XIII. Conrad I and the Saxon Dynasty. 911-973 A. D. 104

XIV. The Decline of the Saxon Dynasty. 973-1024 . 116

XV. The Franconian Emperors. 1024-1106 . . 124

XVI. End of the Franconian Dynasty, and Rise of the Hohenstaufens. 1106-1152 139

XVII. The Reign of Frederick Barbarossa. 1152-1197 . 147

XVIII. The Reign of Frederick II. and the End of the Hohenstaufen Line. 1197-1268 . . . 158

XIX. The Interregnum. 1256-1273 171

CHAPTER PAGE
XX. FROM RUDOLPH OF HAPSBURG TO LEWIS OF BAVARIA 1273-1347 179
XXI. THE LUXEMBURG EMPERORS, CHARLES IV AND WENZEL. 1347-1410 192
XXII. THE REIGN OF SIGISMUND AND THE HUSSITE WAR 1410-1438 201
XXIII. THE FOUNDATION OF THE HAPSBURG DYNASTY. 1438-1439 212

PART III

PERIOD OF REFORMATION. 1493-1701

XXIV. THE REIGN OF MAXIMILIAN I. 1498-1519 . . 225
XXV. THE REFORMATION. 1517-1546 233
XXVI. GROWTH OF PROTESTANTISM. 1546-1600 . . 254
XXVII. BEGINNING OF THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR. 1600-1634 265
XXVIII. END OF THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR. 1634-1648 . 288
XXIX. DECLINE OF THE IMPERIAL POWER. 1648-1701 . 298

PART IV

RISE AND GROWTH OF PRUSSIA. 1701-1806

XXX. THE WAR OF THE SPANISH SUCCESSION. 1701-1714 311
XXXI. THE RISE OF PRUSSIA. 1714-1740 317
XXXII. THE REIGN OF FREDERICK THE GREAT. 1740-1786 . 326
XXXIII. MARIA THERESA AND JOSEPH II. 1740-1790 . . 347
XXXIV. THE END OF THE GERMAN EMPIRE. 1790-1806 . 354

PART V

THE NEW EMPIRE—ITS RISE, POWER AND DEFEAT. 1806-1918

XXXV. GERMANY UNDER NAPOLEON. 1806-1814 . . 371
XXXVI. THE WAR OF LIBERATION; REACTION. 1814-1848 . 387
XXXVII. THE REVOLUTION OF 1848 AND ITS RESULTS. 1848-1861 398
XXXVIII. THE STRUGGLE WITH AUSTRIA; THE NORTH GERMAN CONFEDERATION. 1861-1870 407
XXXIX. THE FRANCO-PRUSSIAN WAR. 1870-1871 . . 415
XL. THE GERMAN EMPIRE. 1871-1914 428
XLI. THE GERMAN EMPIRE IN THE WORLD WAR. 1914-1918 460

CHAPTER PAGE
XLII. Internal Affairs at the Beginning of the War. 1914-1915 467
XLIII. Political Difficulties. 473
XLIV. Germany's Peace Drives. 1918 481

PART VI

THE GERMAN REPUBLIC. 1918—

XLV. The German Revolution 489
XLVI. The Spartacus Revolt 496
XLVII. Germany and the Peace Treaty 504
XLVIII. Problems of the Peace 512
XLIX. Reparations and Armaments 515
L. Locarno and after. 1925— 518

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

THE IMPERIAL DEPUTIES ARE THROWN OUT OF THE WINDOW OF THE COUNCIL CHAMBER. (Photogravure) . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

HENRY IV. AT CANOSSA 132
HENRY THE LION BEFORE HENRY VI. 148
ENTRY OF MAXIMILIAN INTO GHENT 228
CHRISTIAN OF BRUNSWICK SACKING A CLOISTER . . . 276
FREDERICK, THE GREAT ELECTOR, RECEIVES FRENCH EMIGRÉS . 292
FREDERICK THE GREAT AT THE BIER OF GENERAL SCHWERIN (*In color*) 340
OTTO EDUARD LEOPOLD, PRINCE VON BISMARCK } . . . 420
COUNT HELMUTH KARL BERNHARD VON MOLTKE }
PROCLAMATION OF KING WILLIAM AS EMPEROR OF GERMANY . 436

TEXT MAPS

PAGE

GERMANIA MAGNA 14
PARTITION OF VERDUN 94
CENTRAL EUROPE. *Circa* 980 117
CENTRAL EUROPE. 1180 154
SWITZERLAND 214
THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR 269
GERMANY. 1648 294
NORTHEASTERN EUROPE. 1700 318
CENTRAL EUROPE. 1810 378
EUROPE. 1815 397
THE CAMPAIGN IN BOHEMIA. 1866 411
TERRITORIES OF GERMANY. 1903 450

PART I

EARLY HISTORY. 330 B. C.-911 A. D.

HISTORY OF GERMANY

Chapter I

THE ANCIENT GERMANS AND THEIR COUNTRY
330-70 B. C.

THE original home of our earliest ancestors is still a matter of doubt and uncertainty, hotly debated by men of learning, historians, philologists, and anthropologists; some would locate the cradle of the human race among the islands of the Malay Peninsula, others along the northern shores of the Mediterranean Sea, others in the plains of the Tigris and Euphrates, and others still on the steppes of southern Russia along the foothills of the Caucasus Mountains. But though scholars cannot agree as to the earliest home of our ancestors, they are pretty well agreed in dividing the civilized peoples of Europe on a language basis into five great groups,—Greek, Roman, Celtic, Germanic, and Slavic. The Greeks and Romans settled down in Greece and Italy; the Celts pushed along farther north and west until they were brought to a halt by the waters of the Atlantic, and came to live in Spain, in France, and in the British Isles. Next behind them were the Teutons, or "Germans" (*i. e.,* "neighbors"), as they were called by the Celts to the west. The Germans filled in all the central part of Europe from the Alps northward to the sea, and spread out over the coasts of Scandinavia. There they were found on the amber-producing shores of the Baltic Sea by the Greek explorer Pytheas in the year 330 B. C.—the first mention in history of the Germans. Beyond the Germans, to the east, came finally the Slavs, who for a long time never formed a united government for themselves, but mingled with other races, and only at the present day are beginning to realize that the Russians are one nation and form a mighty empire; and even now there are many Slavs in Prussia, Hungary, and the Balkan Peninsula who are not politically united with the main body of the Slavic nation in Russia.

For more than two hundred years after that exploring voyage of Pytheas there is no further mention of the Germans in history.

Only on the shores of the Baltic numerous stone implements, many of them very perfect specimens, prove that extensive settlements were being made. Then finally in the year 113 B. C. a tremendous horde of these Germans of the North forced their way through the Tyrolese Alps and invaded the Roman territory. They numbered several hundred thousand, and brought with them their wives, their children, and all their movable property. They were composed of two great tribes, the Cimbrians and Teutons, accompanied by some minor allies, Celtic as well as Germanic. Their statement was that they were driven from their homes on the northern ocean by the inroads of the waves, and they demanded territory for settlement, or, at least, the right to pass the Roman frontier. The consul, Papirius Carbo, collected an army and endeavored to resist their advance; but he was defeated by them in a battle fought near Noreia, between the Adriatic and the Alps.

The terror occasioned by this defeat reached even to Rome. The "barbarians," as they were called, were men of large stature, of astonishing bodily strength, with yellow hair and fierce blue eyes. They wore breastplates of iron and helmets crowned with the heads of wild beasts, and carried white shields which shone in the sunshine. They first hurled double-headed spears, in battle, but at close quarters fought with short and heavy swords. The women encouraged them with cries and war songs, and seemed no less fierce and courageous than the men. They had also priestesses, clad in white linen, who delivered prophecies and slaughtered human victims upon the altars of their gods.

Instead of moving toward Rome, the Cimbrians and Teutons marched westward along the foot of the Alps, crossed into Gaul, devastated the country between the Rhone and the Pyrenees, and even obtained temporary possession of part of Spain. Having thus plundered at will for ten years, they retraced their steps and prepared to invade Italy a second time. The celebrated consul, Marius, who was sent against them, found they had divided their forces in order to cross the Alps by two roads. He first attacked the Teutons, two hundred thousand in number, in southern France, at Aix (Aquæ Sextiæ), and almost exterminated them in the year 102 B. C. A historian of that time relates that the land around Aix was so fertilized as to bear fruit in astounding quantities, and that the people hedged in their vineyards with the bones of the slain. Then Marius led his army across the Alps into Italy, and in the following year met the Cimbrians at Vercelli. They were drawn up in a square, the sides of which were nearly three miles long: in the center their wagons, collected together, formed a fortress for the women and children. But the Roman legions broke the Cimbrian square, and obtained a complete victory. The women, seeing that all was lost, slew their children, and then themselves; only a few thousand prisoners were made—among them Teutoboch, the prince of the Teutons, who had escaped from the slaughter at Aix—to figure in the triumph accorded to Marius by the Roman senate.

The Roman conquests, which now began to extend northward into the heart of Europe, soon brought the two races into collision again, especially along the Rhine and Danube. From the earliest reports, as well as the later movements of the tribes, we are able to ascertain the probable order of their settlement, though not the exact boundaries of each. The territory which they occupied was almost the same as that which now belongs to the German Empire. The Rhine divided them from the Gauls, except toward its mouth where the Germanic tribes occupied part of Belgium. A line drawn from the Vistula southward to the Danube nearly represents their eastern boundary, while, up to this time, they do not appear to have crossed the Danube on the south. The district between that river and the Alps, now Bavaria and Styria, was occupied by Celtic tribes. Northward they had made some advance into Sweden, and probably also into Norway. They thus occupied nearly all of central Europe north of the Alpine chain.

At the time of their first contact with the Romans these Germanic tribes had lost even the tradition of their Asiatic origin. They supposed themselves to have originated upon the soil where they dwelt, sprung either from the earth or descended from their gods. According to the most popular legend, the war-god Tuisko, or Tiu, had a son, Mannus (whence the word man is derived), who was the first human parent of the German race. Many centuries must have elapsed since their first settlement in Europe, or they could not have so completely changed the forms of their religion and their traditional history.

Two or three small tribes are represented, in the earliest Roman accounts, as having crossed the Rhine and settled between the Vosges and that river, from Strasburg to Mayence. From the latter point to Cologne none are mentioned, whence it is conjectured that the western bank of the Rhine was here a debatable ground, possessed sometimes by the Celts and sometimes by the Germans. The greater part of Belgium was occupied by the Eburones and Condrusii, Germanic tribes, to whom were afterward added the Aduatuci, formed out of the fragments of the Cimbrians and Teutons who escaped the slaughters of Marius. At the mouth of the Rhine dwelt the Batavi, the forefathers of the Dutch, and, like them, reported to be strong, phlegmatic, and stubborn, in the time of Cæsar. A little eastward, on the shore of the North Sea, dwelt the Frisii, where they still dwell, in the province of Friesland; and beyond them, about the mouth of the Weser, the Chauci, a kindred tribe.

What is now Westphalia was inhabited by the Sicambrians, a brave and warlike people; the Marsi and Ampsivarii were beyond them, toward the Harz, and south of the latter the Ubii, once a powerful tribe, but in Cæsar's time weak and submissive. From the Weser to the Elbe, in the north, was the land of the Cherusci; south of them the equally fierce and indomitable Chatti, the ancestors of the modern Hessians; and still farther south, along the headwaters of the River Main, the Marcomanni. A part of what is now Saxony was in the possession of the Hermunduri, who together with their kindred, the Chatti, were called Suevi by the Romans. Northward, toward the mouth of the Elbe, dwelt the Longobardi (Lombards); beyond them, in Holstein, the Saxons; and north of the latter, in Schleswig, the Angles.

East of the Elbe were the Semnones, who were guardians of a certain holy place,—a grove of the Druids,—where various related tribes came for their religious festivals. North of the Semnones dwelt the Vandals, and along the Baltic coast the Rugii, who have left their name in the island of Rügen. Between these and the Vistula were the Burgundiones, with a few smaller tribes. In the extreme northeast, between the Vistula and the point where the city of Königsberg now stands, was the home of the Goths, south of whom were settled the Slavonic Sarmatians—the same who founded, long afterward, the kingdom of Poland.

Bohemia was first settled by the Celtic tribe of the Boii, whence its name—Boiheim, the home of the Boii—is derived. In Cæsar's day, however, this tribe had been driven out by the Germanic Marcomanni, whose neighbors, the Quadi, on the Danube, were also German. Beyond the Danube all was Celtic; the defeated Boii occupied Austria; the Vindelici, Bavaria; while the Noric and Rhætian Celts took possession of the Tyrolese Alps. Switzerland was inhabited by the Helvetii, a Celtic tribe which had been driven out of Germany; but the mountainous district between the Rhine, the Lake of Constance, and the Danube, now called the Black Forest, seems to have had no permanent owners.

The greater part of Germany was thus in possession of Germanic tribes, bound to each other by blood, by their common religion and their habits of life. At this early period their virtues and their vices were strongly marked. They were not savages, for they knew the first necessary arts of civilized life, and they had a fixed social and political organization. The greater part of the territory which they inhabited was still a wilderness. The mountain chain which extends through central Germany from the Main to the Elbe was called by the Romans the Hercynian Forest. It was then a wild, savage region, the home of the aurox (a kind of wild cattle), the bear, and the elk. The lower lands to the northward of this forest were also thickly wooded and marshy, with open pastures here and there, where the tribes settled in small communities, kept their cattle, and cultivated the soil only enough to supply the needs of life. They made rough roads of communication, which could be traversed by their wagons, and the frontiers of each tribe were usually marked by guardhouses, where all strangers were detained until they received permission to enter the territory.

At this early period the Germans had no cities, or even villages. Their places of worship, which were either groves of venerable oak trees or the tops of mountains, were often fortified; and when attacked in the open country they made a temporary defense of their wagons. They lived in log houses, which were surrounded by stockades spacious enough to contain the cattle and horses belonging to the family. A few fields of rye and barley furnished each homestead with bread and beer, but hunting and fishing were their chief dependence. The women cultivated flax, from which they made a coarse, strong linen; the men clothed themselves with furs or leather. They were acquainted with the smelting and working of iron, but valued gold and silver only for the sake of ornament. They were fond of bright colors, of poetry and song, and were in the highest degree hospitable.

The three principal vices of the Germans were indolence, drunkenness, and gambling. Although always ready for the toils and dangers of war, they disliked to work at home. When the men assembled at night, and the great ox-horns, filled with mead or beer, were passed from one to the other, they rarely ceased until all were intoxicated; and when the passion for gambling came upon them, they would often stake their dearest possessions, even their own freedom, on a throw of the dice. The women were never present on these occasions: they ruled and regulated their households with undisputed sway. They were considered the equals of the men, and exhibited no less energy and courage. They were supposed to possess the gift of prophecy, and always accompanied the men to battle, where they took care of the wounded, and stimulated the warriors by their shouts and songs.

They honored the institution of marriage to an extent beyond that exhibited by any other people of the ancient world. The ceremony consisted in the man giving a horse, or a yoke of oxen, to the woman, who gave him arms or armor in return. Those who proved unfaithful to the marriage vow were punished with death. The children of freemen and slaves grew up together, until the former were old enough to carry arms, when they were separated. The slaves were divided into two classes: those who lived under the protection of a freeman and were obliged to perform for him a certain amount of labor, and those who were wholly "chattels," bought and sold at will.

Each family had its own laws for the government of its free members, its retainers, and slaves. A number of these families formed "a district," which was generally laid out according to natural boundaries, such as streams or hills. In some tribes, however, the families were united in "hundreds," instead of districts. Each of these managed its own affairs, as a little republic, wherein each freeman had an equal voice; yet to each belonged a leader, who was called "count" or "duke." All the districts of a tribe met together in a "General Assembly of the People," which was always held at the time of new or full moon. The chief priest of the tribe presided, and each freeman present had the right to vote. Here questions of peace or war, violations of right or disputes between the districts, were decided, criminals were tried, young men acknowledged as freemen and warriors, and in case of approaching war a leader chosen by the people. Alliances between the tribes, for the sake of mutual defense or invasion, were not common at first; but the necessity of them was soon forced upon the Germans by the encroachments of Rome.

The gods which they worshiped represented the powers of nature. Their mythology was the same originally as that which the Scandinavians preserved, in a slightly different form, until the tenth century of our era. The chief deity was named Wodan, or Odin, the god of the sky, whose worship was really that of the sun. His son, Donar, or Thunder, with his fiery beard and huge hammer, is the Thor of the Scandinavians. The god of war, Tiu or Tyr, was supposed to have been born from the earth, and thus became the ancestor of the Germanic tribes. There was also a goddess of the earth, Hertha, who was worshiped with secret and mysterious rites. The people had their religious festivals, at stated seasons, when sacrifices, sometimes of human beings, were laid upon the altars of the gods, in the sacred groves. Even after they became Christians, in the eighth century, they retained their habit of celebrating some of these festivals, but changed them into the Christian anniversaries of Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide.

Thus, from all we can learn respecting them, we may say that the Germans, during the first century before Christ, were fully prepared, by their habits, laws, and their moral development, for a higher civilization. They were still restless, after so many centuries of wandering; they were fierce and fond of war, as a natural consequence of their struggles with the neighboring races; but they had already acquired a love for the wild land where they dwelt, they had begun to cultivate the soil, they had purified and hallowed the family relation, which is the basis of all good government, and finally, although slavery existed among them, they had established equal rights for free men.

If the object of Rome had been civilization, instead of conquest and plunder, the development of the Germans might have commenced much earlier and produced very different results.

Chapter II

THE WARS WITH ROME. 70 B.C.-9 A.D.

AFTER the destruction of the Teutons and Cimbrians by Marius, more than forty years elapsed before the Romans again came in contact with any German tribe. During this time the Roman dominion over a great part of Gaul was firmly established by Julius Cæsar, and in losing their independence the Celts began to lose, also, their original habits and character. They and the Germans had never been very peaceable neighbors, and the possession of the western bank of the Rhine seems to have been, even at that early day, a subject of contention between them.

About the year 70 B. C. two Gallic tribes, the Ædui in Burgundy and the Arverni in central France, began a struggle for the supremacy in that part of Gaul. The allies of the latter, the Sequani, called to their assistance a chief of the German Suevi, whose name, as we have it through Cæsar, was Ariovistus. With a force of 15,000 men he joined the Arverni and the Sequani, and defeated the Ædui in several battles. After the complete overthrow of the latter he haughtily demanded as a recompense one-third of the territory of the Sequani. His strength had meanwhile been increased by new accessions from the German side of the Rhine, and the Sequani were obliged to yield. His followers settled in the new territory; in the course of about fourteen years they amounted to 120,000, and Ariovistus felt himself strong enough to demand another third of the lands of the Sequani.

Southern France was then a Roman province, governed by Julius Cæsar. In the year 57 B. C. ambassadors from the principal tribes of eastern Gaul appeared before him and implored his assistance against the inroads of the Suevi. It was an opportunity which he immediately seized, in order to bring the remaining Gallic tribes under the sway of Rome. He first sent a summons to Ariovistus to appear before him, but the haughty German chief answered: "When I need Cæsar, I shall come to Cæsar. If Cæsar needs me, let him seek me. What business has he in my Gaul, which I have acquired in war?"

On receiving this answer Cæsar marched immediately with his legions into the land of the Sequani, and succeeded in reaching their capital, Vesontio (the modern Besançon), before the enemy. It was then a fortified place, and its possession gave Cæsar an important advantage at the start. While his legions were resting there for a few days, before beginning the march against the Suevi, the Gallic and Roman merchants and traders circulated through the Roman camp frightful accounts of the strength and fierceness of the Suevi. They reported that the German barbarians were men of giant size and more than human strength, whose faces were so terrible that the glances of their eyes could not be endured. Very soon numbers of the Roman officers demanded leave of absence, and even the few who were ashamed to take this step lost all courage. The soldiers became so demoralized that many of them declared openly that they would refuse to fight if commanded to do so.

In this emergency Cæsar showed his genius as a leader of men. He called a large number of soldiers and officers of all grades together, and addressed them in strong words, pointing out their superior military discipline, ridiculing the terrible stories in circulation, and sharply censuring them for their insubordination. He concluded by declaring that if the army should refuse to march, he would start the next morning with only the tenth legion, upon the courage and obedience of which he could rely. This speech produced an immediate effect. The tenth legion solemnly thanked Cæsar for his confidence in its men and officers, the other legions, one after the other, declared their readiness to follow, and the whole army left Vesontio the very next morning. After a rapid march of seven days Cæsar found himself within a short distance of the fortified camp of Ariovistus.

The German chief now agreed to an interview, and the two leaders met, halfway between the two armies, on the plain of the Rhine. The place is supposed to have been a little to the northward of Basel. Neither Cæsar nor Ariovistus would yield to the demands of the other, and as the cavalry of their armies began skirmishing, the interview was broken off. For several days in succession the Romans offered battle, but the Suevi refused to leave their strong position. This hesitation seemed remarkable, until it was explained by some prisoners, captured in a skirmish, who stated that the German priestesses had prophesied misfortune to Ariovistus if he should fight before the new moon.

Cæsar thereupon determined to attack the German camp without delay. The meeting of the two armies was fierce, and the soldiers were soon fighting hand to hand. On each side one wing gave way, but the greater quickness and superior military skill of the Romans enabled them to recover sooner than the enemy. The day ended with the entire defeat of the Suevi, and the flight of the few who escaped across the Rhine. They did not attempt to reconquer their lost territory, and the three small German tribes who had long been settled between the Rhine and the Vosges (in what is now Alsatia) became subject to Roman rule.

Two years afterward Cæsar, who was engaged in subjugating the Belgæ, in northern Gaul, learned that two other German tribes, the Usipetes and Tencteres, who had been driven from their homes by the Suevi, had crossed the Rhine below where Cologne now stands. They numbered 400,000, and the northern Gauls, instead of regarding them as invaders, were inclined to welcome them as allies against Rome, the common enemy. Cæsar knew that if they remained, a revolt of the Gauls against his rule would be the consequence. He therefore hastened to meet them, got possession of their principal chiefs by treachery, and then attacked their camp between the Meuse and the Rhine. The Germans were defeated, and nearly all their foot-soldiers slaughtered, but the cavalry succeeded in crossing the river, where they were welcomed by the Sicambrians.

Then it was that Cæsar built his famous wooden bridge across the Rhine, not far from the site of Cologne, although the precise point cannot now be ascertained. He crossed with his army into Westphalia, but the tribes he sought retreated into the great forests to the eastward, where he was unable to pursue them. He contented himself for eighteen days with burning their houses and gathering their ripened harvests, when he returned to the other side and destroyed the bridge behind him. From this time Rome claimed the sovereignty of the western bank of the Rhine to its mouth.

While Cæsar was in Britain, in the year 53 B.C., the newly subjugated Celtic and German tribes which inhabited Belgium rose in open revolt against the Roman rule. The rapidity of Cæsar's return arrested their temporary success, but some of the German tribes to the eastward of the Rhine had already promised to aid them. In order to secure his conquests, the Roman general determined to cross the Rhine again, and intimidate, if not subdue, his dangerous neighbors. He built a second bridge, near the place where the first had been, and crossed with his army. But, as before the Suevi and Sicambrians drew back among the forest-covered hills along the Weser River, and only the small and peaceful tribe of the Ubii remained in their homes. The latter offered their submission to Cæsar, and agreed to furnish him with news of the future movements of their warlike countrymen, in return for his protection.

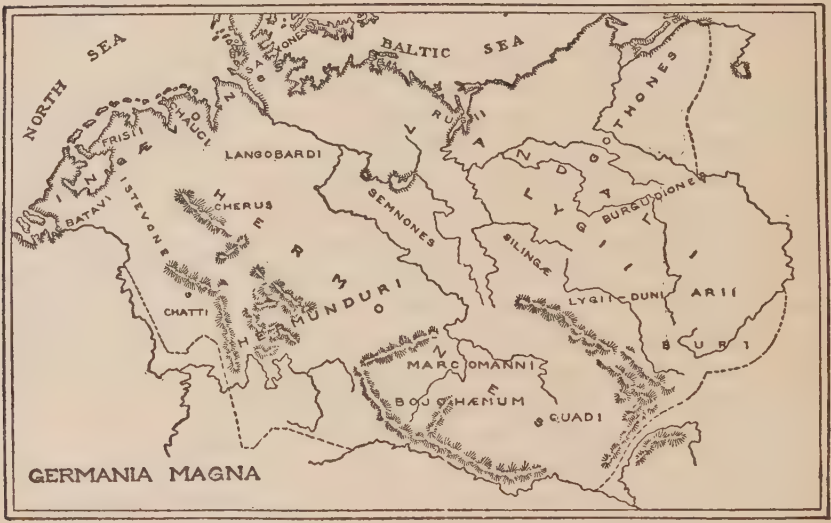
When another revolt of the Celtic Gauls took place, the following year, German mercenaries, enlisted among the Ubii, fought on the Roman side and took an important part in the decisive battle which gave Vercingetorix, the last chief of the Gauls, into Cæsar's hands. He was beheaded, and from that time the Gauls made no further effort to throw off the Roman yoke. They accepted the civil and military organization, the dress and habits, and finally the language and religion of their conquerors. The small German tribes in Alsatia and Belgium shared the same fate: their territory was divided by the Romans into two provinces, called Upper and Lower Germania. The vast region inhabited by the independent tribes, lying between the Rhine, the Vistula, the North Sea, and the Danube, was thenceforth named Germania Magna.

Cæsar's renown among the Germans, and probably also his skill in dealing with them, was so great that when he left Gaul to return to Rome he took with him a German legion of 6000 men, which afterward fought on his side against Pompey on the battlefield of Pharsalus. The Roman agents penetrated into the interior of the country, and enlisted a great many of the free Germans, who were tempted by the prospect of good pay and booty. Even the younger sons of the chiefs entered the Roman army for the sake of a better military education.

No movement of any consequence took place for more than twenty years after Cæsar's last departure from the banks of the Rhine. The Romans, having secured their possesssion of Gaul, now turned their attention to the subjugation of the Celtic tribes inhabiting the Alps and the lowlands south of the Danube, from the Lake of Constance to Vienna. This work had also been begun by Cæsar;

it was continued by the Emperor Augustus, whose step-sons, Tiberius and Drusus, finally overcame the desperate resistance of the native tribes. In the year 15 B. C. the Danube became the boundary between Rome and Germany on the south, as the Rhine already was on the west. The Roman provinces of Rhæti, Noricum, and Pannonia were formed out of the conquered territory.

Augustus now sent Drusus, with a large army, to the Rhine, instructing him to undertake a campaign against the independent German tribes. Drusus built a large fleet on the Rhine, descended that river nearly to its mouth, cut a canal for his vessels to a lake which is now the Zuyder Zee, and thus entered the North Sea. It was a bold undertaking, but did not succeed. He reached the mouth of the River Ems with his fleet, when the weather became so tempestuous that he was obliged to return.



The next year, 11 B. C., he made an expedition into the land of the Sicambrians, during which his situation was often hazardous; but he succeeded in penetrating rather more than a hundred miles to the eastward of the Rhine, and establishing—not far from where the city of Paderborn now stands—a fortress called Aliso, which became a base for later operations against the German tribes. He next set about building a series of fortresses, fifty in number, along the western bank of the Rhine. Around the most important of these towns immediately sprang up and thus were laid the foundations of the cities of Strasburg, Mayence, Coblentz, Cologne, and many smaller places.

In the year 9 B. C. Drusus marched again into Germany. He defeated the Chatti in several bloody battles, crossed the passes of the Thuringian Forest, and forced his way through the land of the Cherusci (the Harz region) to the Elbe. The legend says that he there encountered a German prophetess, who threatened him with coming evil, whereupon he turned about and retraced his way toward the Rhine. He died, however, during the march, and his dejected army had great difficulty in reaching the safe line of their fortresses.

Tiberius succeeded to the command left vacant by the death of his brother, Drusus. Less daring, but of a more cautious and scheming nature, he began by taking possession of the land of the Sicambrians and colonizing a part of the tribe on the west bank of the Rhine. He then gradually extended his power, and in the course of two years brought nearly the whole country between the Rhine and Weser under the rule of Rome.

Of the German tribes who still remained independent, there were the Semnones, Saxons, and Angles, east of the Elbe, and the Burgundians, Vandals, and Goths, along the shore of the Baltic, together with one powerful tribe in Bohemia. The latter, the Marcomanni, who seem to have left their original home in Baden and Würtemberg on account of the approach of the Romans, now felt that their independence was a second time seriously threatened. Their first measure of defense, therefore, was to strengthen themselves by alliances with kindred tribes.

The chief of the Marcomanni, named Marbod, was a man of unusual capacity and energy. It seems that he was educated as a Roman. This rendered him a more dangerous enemy, though it also made him an object of suspicion, and perhaps jealousy, to the other German chieftains. Nevertheless he succeeded in uniting nearly all the independent tribes east of the Elbe under his command and in organizing a standing army of 70,000 foot and 4000 horse, which, disciplined like the Roman legions, might be considered a match for any equal number. His success created so much anxiety in Rome that Augustus determined to send a force of twelve legions against Marbod. Precisely at this time a great insurrection broke out in Dalmatia and Pannonia, and when it was suppressed, after a struggle of three years, the Romans found it prudent to offer peace to Marbod, and he to accept it.

While Augustus was occupied in putting down the insurrection in Dalmatia and Pannonia, with a prospect, it seemed, of having to fight the Marcomanni afterward, his representative in Germany was Quinctillius Varus. Tiberius, in spite of his later vices as emperor, was prudent and conciliatory in his conquests; but Varus, a man of despotic and relentless character, soon turned the respect of the Germans for the Roman power into the fiercest hatred. He applied, in a more brutal form, the same measures which had been forced upon the Gauls. He overturned, at one blow, all the native forms of law, introduced heavy taxes, which were collected by force, punished with shameful death crimes which the people considered trivial, and decided all matters in Roman courts and in a language which was not yet understood.

This violent and reckless policy, which Varus enforced with a hand of iron, produced an effect the reverse of what he anticipated. The German tribes, with hardly an exception, determined to make another effort to regain their independence; but they had been taught wisdom by seventy years of conflict with the Roman power. Up to this time each tribe had acted for itself, without concert with its neighbors. They saw, now, that no single tribe could cope successfully with Rome: it was necessary that all should be united as one people; and they only waited until such a union could be secretly established before rising to throw off the unendurable yoke which Varus had laid upon them.

Chapter III

HERMANN, THE FIRST GERMAN LEADER. 9-21 A. D.

THE Cherusci, who inhabited a part of the land between the Weser and the Elbe, including the Harz Mountains, were the most powerful of the tribes conquered by Tiberius. They had no permanent class of nobles, as none of the early Germans seem to have had, but certain families were distinguished for their abilities and their character, or the services which they had rendered to their people in war. The head of one of these Cheruscan families was Segimar, one of whose sons was named Hermann. The latter entered the Roman service as a youth, distinguished himself by his military talent, was made a Roman knight, and commanded one of the legions which were employed by Augustus in suppressing the great insurrection of the Dalmatians and Pannonians. It seems probable that he visited Rome at the period of its highest power and splendor; it is certain, at least, that he comprehended the political system by means of which the empire had become so great.

When Hermann returned to his people he was a man of twenty-five and already an experienced commander. He is described by the Latin writers as a chief of fine personal presence, great strength, an animated countenance, and bright eyes. He was always self-possessed, quick in action, yet never rash or heedless. He found the Cherusci and all the neighboring tribes filled with hatred of the Roman rule and burning to revenge the injuries they had suffered. His first movement was to organize a secret conspiracy among the tribes which could be called into action as soon as a fortunate opportunity should arrive. Varus was then (9 A. D) encamped near the Weser, in the land of the Saxons, with an army of 40,000 men, the best of the Roman legions. Hermann was still in the Roman service, and held a command under him. But among the other Germans in the Roman camp was Segestes, a chief of the Cherusci, whose daughter, Thusnelda, Hermann had stolen away from him and married. Thusnelda was afterward celebrated in the German legends as a high-hearted, patriotic woman, who was devotedly attached to Hermann; but her father, Segestes, became his bitterest enemy.

In engaging the different tribes to unite Hermann had great difficulties to overcome. They were not only jealous of each other, remembering ancient quarrels between themselves, but many families in each tribe were disposed to submit to Rome, being either hopeless of succeeding or tempted by the chance of office and wealth under the Roman government. Hermann's own brother, Flavus, had become, and always remained, a Roman; other members of his family were opposed to his undertaking, and it seems that only his mother and his wife encouraged him with their sympathy. Nevertheless, he formed his plans with as much skill as boldness, while still serving in the army of Varus. He caused messengers to come to Varus, declaring that a dangerous insurrection had broken out in the lands between him and the Rhine. This was in the month of September, and Varus, believing the reports, broke up his camp and set out to suppress the insurrection before the winter. His nearest way led through the wooded, mountainous country along the Weser, which is now called the Teutoburger Forest. According to one account, Hermann was left behind to collect the auxiliary German troops, and then, with them, rejoin his general. It is certain that he remained, and instantly sent his messengers to all the tribes engaged in the conspiracy, whose warriors came to him with all speed. In a few days he had an army probably equal in numbers to that of Varus. In the meantime the season had changed: violent autumn storms burst over the land, and the Romans slowly advanced through the forests and mountain passes in the wind and rain.

Hermann knew the ground and was able to choose the best point of attack. With his army, hastily organized, he burst upon the legions of Varus, who resisted him, the first day, with their accustomed valor. But the attack was renewed the second day, and the endurance of the Roman troops began to give way; they held their ground with difficulty, but exerted themselves to the utmost, for there was now only one mountain ridge to be passed. Beyond it lay the broad plains of Westphalia, with fortresses and military roads, where they had better chances of defense. When the third day dawned the storm was fiercer than ever. The Roman army crossed the summit of the last ridge and saw the securer plains before them. They commenced descending the long slope, but, just as they reached three steep wooded ravines which were still to be traversed, the Germans swept down upon them from the summits like a torrent, with shouts and far-sounding songs of battle.

A complete panic seized the exhausted and disheartened Roman troops, and the fight soon became a slaughter. Varus, wounded, threw himself upon his sword; the wooded passes below were occupied in advance by the Germans; hardly enough escaped to carry the news of the terrible defeat to the Roman frontier on the Rhine. Those who escaped death were sacrificed upon the altars of the gods, and the fiercest revenge was visited upon the Roman judges, lawyers, and civil officers who had trampled upon all the hallowed laws and customs of the people. The news of this great German victory reached Rome in the midst of the rejoicings over the suppression of the insurrection in Dalmatia and Pannonia, and turned the triumph into mourning. The aged Augustus feared the overthrow of his power. He was unable to comprehend such a sudden and terrible disaster: he let his hair and beard grow for months, as a sign of his trouble, and was often heard to cry aloud: "O Varus, Varus, give me back my legions!"

The location of the battlefield where Hermann defeated Varus has been preserved by tradition. The long southern slope of the mountain, near Detmold, now bare, but surrounded by forests, is called to this day the Winfield. Around the summit of the mountain there is a ring of huge stones, showing that it was originally consecrated to the worship of the ancient pagan deities. Here a pedestal of granite, in the form of a temple, has been built, and upon it has been placed a colossal statue of Hermann in bronze, ninety feet high, and visible at a distance of fifty miles.

Hermann's deeds were afterward celebrated in the songs of his people, as they have been in modern German literature; but the best results of his victory were cast away by the people whom he had liberated. It was now possible to organize into a nation the tribes which had united to overthrow the Romans, and such seems to have been his intention. He sent the head of Varus to Marbod, chief of the Marcomanni, whose power he had secured by carrying out his original design; but he failed to secure the friendship, or even the neutrality, of the rival leader. At home his own family—bitterest among them all his father-in-law, Segestes—opposed his plans, and the Cherusci were soon divided into two parties, one headed by Hermann and the other headed by Segestes.

Hermann succeeded in escaping from his father-in-law, by whom he had been captured and imprisoned, and began to form a new union of the tribes. His first design was to release his wife, Thusnelda, from the hands of Segestes, and then destroy the authority of the latter, who was the head of the faction friendly to Rome. Meanwhile the Emperor Augustus had died, Tiberius had left Germany to take up the reins of government at Rome, and his nephew, Germanicus, succeeded to the command in Germany. Germanicus entered Germany in the summer of 15 A. D. with a powerful army and at once marched to aid Segestes against Hermann. After a few days the Romans reached the scene of the defeat of Varus, and there they halted to bury the thousands of skeletons which lay wasting on the mountain-side. Then they met Segestes, who gave up his own daughter, Thusnelda, to Germanicus as a captive.

The loss of his wife roused Hermann to fury. He went hither and thither among the tribes, stirring the hearts of all with his fiery addresses. Germanicus soon perceived that a storm was gathering, and prepared to meet it. He divided his army into two parts, one of which was commanded by Cæcina, and built a large fleet which transported one-half of his troops by sea and up the Weser. After joining Cæcina, he marched into the Teutoburger Forest. Hermann met him near the scene of his great victory over Varus, and a fierce battle was fought. According to the Romans, neither side obtained any advantage over the other; but Germanicus, with half the army, fell back upon his fleet and returned to the Rhine by way of the North Sea.

Cæcina, with the remnant of his four legions, also retreated across the country, pursued by Hermann. In the dark forests and on the marshy plains they were exposed to constant assaults, and were obliged to fight every step of the way. Finally, in a marshy valley, the site of which cannot be discovered, the Germans suddenly attacked the Romans on all sides. Hermann cried out to his soldiers: "It shall be another day of Varus!" The songs of the women prophesied triumph, and the Romans were filled with forebodings of defeat. They fought desperately, but were forced to yield, and Hermann's words would have been made truth had not the Germans ceased fighting in order to plunder the camp of their enemies. The latter were thus able to cut their way out of the valley and eventually, by forced marches, reached the Rhine. The voyage of Germanicus was also unfortunate: he encountered a violent storm on the coast of Holland, and two of his legions barely escaped destruction. He had nothing to show, as the result of his campaign, except his captive Thusnelda, and her son, who walked behind his triumphal chariot in Rome three years afterward, and never again saw their native land; and his ally, the traitor Segestes, who ended his contemptible life somewhere in Gaul, under Roman protection.

Germanicus was a man of great ambition and of astonishing energy. He was determined not to rest until he had completely subjugated Germany as far as the Elbe. As Julius Cæsar had made Gaul Roman, so he was determined to make Germany Roman. He began his preparations for another expedition in 17 A. D., but the Emperor Tiberius, jealous of his increasing renown, recalled him to Rome, saying that it was better to let the German tribes exhaust themselves in their own internal discords than to waste so many of the best legions in subduing them. Germanicus obeyed, returned to Rome, had his grand triumph, and was then sent to the East, where he shortly afterward died, it was supposed by poison.

The words of the shrewd emperor were true: two rival powers had been developed in Germany through the resistance to Rome, and they soon came into conflict. Marbod, chief of the Marcomanni, and many allied tribes, had maintained his position without war; but Hermann, now the recognized head of the Cherusci and their confederates, who had destroyed Varus and held Germanicus at bay, possessed a popularity, founded on his heroism, which spread far and wide through the German land. Even at that early day the small chiefs in each tribe (corresponding to the later nobility) were opposed to the broad, patriotic union which Hermann had established, because it weakened their power and increased that of the people. They were also jealous of his great authority and influence, and even his uncle, Ingiomar, who had fought bravely against Germanicus, went over to the side of Marbod when it became evident that the rivalry of the two chiefs must lead to war.

In the year 19 A. D. Hermann and Marbod marched against each other, and a great battle took place. Although neither was victorious, the popularity of Hermann drew so many of Marbod's allies to his side that the latter fled to Italy and claimed the protection of Tiberius, who assigned to him Ravenna as a residence. He died there nearly twenty years later, at a very advanced age.

After the flight of Marbod, Hermann seems to have devoted himself to the creation of a permanent union of the tribes which he had commanded. We may guess, but cannot assert, that his object was to establish a national organization, like that of Rome, and in doing this he must have come into conflict with laws and customs which were considered sacred by the people. But his remaining days were too few for even the beginning of a task which included such an advance in the civilization of the race. We only know that he was waylaid and assassinated by members of his own family, in the year 21 A. D. He was then thirty-seven years old and had been for thirteen years a leader of his people. The best monument to his ability and heroism may be found in the words of a Roman, the historian Tacitus, who says: "He was undoubtedly the liberator of Germany, having dared to grapple with the Roman power, not in its beginnings, like other kings and commanders, but in the maturity of its strength. He was not always victorious in battle, but in war he was never subdued. He still lives in the songs of the Barbarians, not known to the annals of the Greeks, who only admire that which belongs to themselves—nor celebrated as he deserves by the Romans, who, in praising the olden times, neglect the events of the later years."

Chapter IV

THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES OF OUR ERA
21-300 A. D.

AFTER the campaigns of Germanicus and the death of Hermann a long time elasped during which the relation of Germany to the Roman Empire might be called a truce. No serious attempt was made by the unworthy successors of Augustus to extend their sway beyond the banks of the Rhine and the Danube; and, as Tiberius had predicted, the German tribes were so weakened by their own civil wars that they were unable to cope with a power such as Rome. Even the Cherusci, Hermann's own people, became so diminished in numbers that before the end of the first century they ceased to exist as a separate tribe: their fragments were divided and incorporated with their neighbors on either side.

About the middle of the first century, however, an event is mentioned which shows that the Germans were beginning to appreciate and imitate the superior civilization of Rome. The Chauci, dwelling on the shores of the North Sea, built a fleet and sailed along the coast to the mouth of the Rhine, which they entered in the hope of exciting the Batavi and Frisii to rebellion. A few years afterward the Chatti, probably for the sake of plunder, crossed the Rhine and invaded part of Gaul. Both attempts failed entirely; and the only serious movement of the Germans against Rome during the century took place while Vitellius and Vespasian were contending for the possession of the imperial throne. A German prophetess, by the name of Velleda, whose influence seems to have extended over all the tribes, promised them victory: they united, organized their forces, crossed the Rhine, and even laid siege to Mayence, the principal Roman city.

The success of Vespasian over his rival left him free to meet this new danger. But in the meantime the Batavi, under their chief, Claudius Civilis, who had been previously fighting on the new emperor's side, joined the Gauls in a general insurrection.

This was so successful that all northern Gaul, from the Atlantic to the Rhine, threw off the Roman yoke. A convention of the chiefs was held at Rheims, in order to found a Gallic kingdom; but instead of adopting measures of defense they quarreled about the selection of a ruling family, the future capital of the kingdom, and other matters of small comparative importance.

The approach of Cerealis, the Roman general sent by Vespasian with a powerful army in the year 70, put an end to the Gallic insurrection. Most of the Gallic tribes submitted without resistance: the Treviri, on the Moselle, were defeated in battle, the cities and fortresses on the western bank of the Rhine were retaken, and the Roman frontier was reëstablished. Nevertheless, the German tribes which had been allied with the Gauls—among them the Batavi—refused to submit, and they were strong enough to fight two bloody battles, in which Cerealis was only saved from defeat by what the Romans considered to be the direct interposition of the gods. The Batavi, although finally subdued in their home in Holland, succeeded in getting possession of the Roman admiral's vessel, by a night attack on his fleet on the Rhine. This trophy they sent by way of the River Lippe, an eastern branch of the Rhine, as a present to the great prophetess, Velleda.

The defeat of the German tribes by Cerealis was not followed by a new Roman invasion of their territory. The Rhine remained the boundary, although the Romans crossed the river at various points and built fortresses upon the eastern bank. They appear, in like manner, to have crossed the Danube, and they also gradually acquired possession of the southwestern corner of Germany lying between the headwaters of that river and the Rhine. This region (now occupied by Baden and part of Würtemberg) had been deserted by the Marcomanni when they marched to Bohemia, and it does not appear that any other German tribe attempted to take permanent possession of it. Its first occupants, the Helvetians, were now settled in Switzerland.

The enlisting of Germans to serve as soldiers in the Roman army, begun by Julius Cæsar, was continued by the emperors. The proofs of their heroism, which the Germans had given in resisting Germanicus, made them desirable as troops; and, since they were accustomed to fight with their neighbors at home, they had no scruples in fighting them under the banner of Rome. Thus one German legion after another was formed, taken to Rome, Spain, Greece, or the East, and its veterans, if they returned home when disabled by age or wounds, carried with them stories of the civilized world, of cities, palaces and temples, of agriculture and the arts, of a civil and political system far wiser and stronger than their own.

The series of Good Emperors, from Vespasian to Marcus Aurelius (70 to 180 A. D.) formed military colonies of their veteran soldiers, whether German, Gallic, or Roman, in the region originally inhabited by the Marcomanni. They were governed by Roman laws, and they paid a tithe, or tenth part, of their revenues to the empire, whence this district was called the *Agri Decumates,* or Tithe-Lands.

To protect these settled regions the Romans built the famous Limes or broad fortification wall, flanked at intervals by fortresses and watch-towers. Traces of it may still be seen. It ran from Ratisbon on the Danube to the River Main, and thence to a point on the Rhine near Cologne. The Roman frontier remained thus clearly defined for nearly two hundred years. On their side of the line the Romans built fortresses and cities, which they connected by good highways, and introduced a better system of agriculture, established commercial intercourse, not only between their own provinces, but also with the independent tribes, and thus extended the influence of their civilization. For the first time fruit trees were planted on German soil: the rich cloths and ornaments of Italy and the East, the arms and armor, the gold and silver, and the wines of the South soon found a market within the German territory; while the horses and cattle, furs and down, smoked beef and honey of the Germans, the fish of their streams, and the radishes and asparagus raised on the Rhine were sent to Rome in exchange. Wherever the Romans discovered a healing spring, as at Baden-Baden, Aix-la-Chapelle, and Spa, they built splendid baths; where they found ores or marble in the mountains they established mines or hewed columns for their temples, and the native tribes were thus taught the unsuspected riches of their own land.

For nearly a hundred years after Vespasian's accession to the throne there was no serious interruption to the peaceful intercourse of the two races. During this time we must take it for granted that a gradual change must have been growing up in the habits and ideas of the Germans. It is probable that they then began to collect in villages; to use stone as well as wood in building their houses and fortresses; to depend more on agriculture and less on hunting and fishing for their subsistence; and to desire the mechanical skill, the arts of civilization, which the Romans possessed. The extinction of many smaller tribes, also, taught them the necessity of learning to subdue their internal feuds, and assist instead of destroying each other. On the north of them was the sea; on the east the Sarmatians and other Slavonic tribes, much more savage than themselves; in every other direction they were confronted by Rome. The complete subjugation of their Celtic neighbors in Gaul was always before their eyes. In Hermann's day they were still too ignorant to understand the necessity of his plan of union; but now that tens of thousands of their people had learned the extent and power of the Roman Empire, and the commercial intercourse of a hundred years had shown them their own deficiencies, they reached the point where a new development in their history became possible.

Such a development came to disturb the reign of the noble emperor, Marcus Aurelius, in the latter half of the second century. About the year 166 all the German tribes, from the Danube to the Baltic, united in a grand movement against the Roman Empire. The Marcomanni, who still inhabited Bohemia, appear as their leaders, and the Roman writers attach their name to the long and desperate war which ensued. We have no knowledge of the cause of this struggle, the manner in which the union of the Germans was effected, or even the names of their leaders; we only know that their invasion of the Roman territory was several times driven back and several times recommenced; that Marcus Aurelius died in Vienna, in 180, without having seen the end; and that his son and successor, Commodus, bought a peace instead of winning it by the sword. At one time during the war the Chatti forced their way through the Tithe-Lands and Switzerland, and crossed the Alps; at another, the Marcomanni and Quadi besieged the city of Aquileia, on the northern shore of the Adriatic.

The ancient boundary between the Roman Empire and Germany was restored, but at a cost which the former could not pay a second time. For a hundred and fifty years longer the emperors preserved their territory. Rome still ruled, in name, from Spain to the Tigris, from Scotland to the Desert of Sahara, but her power was like a vast, hollow shell. Luxury, vice, taxation, and continual war had eaten out the heart of the empire; Italy had grown weak and was slowly losing its population, and the same causes were gradually ruining Spain, Gaul, and Britain. During this period the German tribes, notwithstanding their terrible losses in war, had preserved their vigor by the simplicity, activity, and morality of their habits: they had considerably increased in numbers, and from the time of Marcus Aurelius on they felt themselves secure against any further invasion of their territory.

Then commenced a series of internal changes, concerning which, unfortunately, we have no history. We can only guess that their origin dates from the union of all the principal tribes under the lead of the Marcomanni; but whether they were brought about with or without internal wars; whether wise and far-seeing chiefs or the sentiment of the people themselves contributed most to their consummation; finally, when these changes began and when they were completed—are questions which can never be accurately settled.

When the Germans again appear in history, in the third century of our era, we are surprised to find that the names of nearly all the tribes with which we are familiar have disappeared, and new names, of much wider significance, have taken their places. Instead of twenty or thirty small divisions, we now find the race consolidated into four chief nationalities, with two other inferior though independent branches. We also find that the geographical situation of the latter is no longer the same as that of the smaller tribes out of which they grew. Migrations must have taken place, large tracts of territory must have changed hands, many reigning families must have been overthrown, and new ones arisen. In short, the change in the organization of the Germans is so complete that it can hardly have been accomplished by peaceable means. Each of the new nationalities has an important part to play in the history of the following centuries, and we will therefore describe them separately.

The name of the Alemanni (Allemannen,[1] signifying "all men") shows that this division was composed of fragments of many tribes. The Alemanni first made their appearance along the Main, and gradually pushed southward over the Tithe-Lands, where the military veterans of Rome had settled, until they occupied the greater part of southwestern Germany, and eastern Switzerland, to the Alps. Their descendants inhabit the same territory to this day.

The Franks are believed to have been formed out of the

---

[1] *Alle-magne* remains to-day the French name for Germany.

Sicambrians in Westphalia, together with a portion of the Chatti and the Batavi in Holland, and other tribes. We first hear of them on the Lower Rhine, but they soon extended their territory over a great part of Belgium and Westphalia. Their chiefs were already called kings, and their authority was hereditary.

The Saxons were one of the small, original tribes settled in Holstein. But they soon came to occupy nearly all the territory between the Harz Mountains and the North Sea, from the Elbe westward to the Rhine. The Cherusci, the Chauci, and other tribes named by Tacitus were evidently incorporated with the Saxons, who exhibit the same characteristics. There appears to have been a natural enmity—no doubt bequeathed from the earlier tribes out of which both grew—between them and the Franks.

The Goths in their traditions state that they were settled in Sweden before they were found by the Greek navigators on the southern shore of the Baltic, in 330 B. C. It is probable that only a portion of the tribe migrated, and that the present Scandinavian race is descended from the remainder. As the Baltic Goths increased in numbers, they gradually ascended the Vistula, pressed eastward along the base of the Carpathians and reached the Black Sea, in the course of the second century after Christ. Thus, at the time when they first came in contact with the Romans, about the beginning of the third century after Christ, the Goths possessed a broad belt of territory, situated north of the lower Danube and Black Sea, and separating the rest of Europe from the wilder Slavonic races who occupied central Russia.

The branch called the Thuringians had only a short national existence. It was composed of the Hermunduri, with fragments of other tribes united under one king, and occupied all of central Germany, from the Harz Mountains southward to the Danube.

The Burgundians, leaving their original home on the Baltic, between the Oder and the Vistula, crossed the greater part of Germany in a southwestern direction, and first settled in a portion of what is now Franconia, between the Thuringians and the Alemanni. Not long afterward, however, they passed through the latter, and took possession of the country on the west bank of the Rhine, between Strasburg and Mayence.

The Goths steadily became more and more troublesome to the Romans on the lower Danube. In 251 the Emperor Decius found his death among the marshes of Dacia while trying to stay the

Gothic invasion, and his successor, Gallus, only obtained a temporary peace by agreeing to pay an annual sum of money, thus really making Rome a tributary power. But the empire had become impoverished, and the payment soon ceased. Thereupon the Goths built fleets and made voyages of plunder, first to Trebizond and the other towns on the Asiatic shore of the Black Sea; then they passed the Hellespont, took and plundered the great city of Nicomedia, Ephesus with its famous temple, the Grecian isles, and even Corinth, Argos, and Athens. In the meantime the Alemanni had resumed the offensive: they came through the Alps and descended to Lake Garda in northern Italy.

The emperor, Claudius II., turned back this double invasion. He defeated and drove back the Alemanni, and then, in the year 270, won a great victory over the Goths, in the neighborhood of Thessalonica. His successor, Aurelian, followed up the advantage, and in the following year made a treaty with the Goths, by which the Danube became the frontier between them and the Romans. The latter gave up to them the province of Dacia, lying north of the river, and withdrew their colonists and military garrisons to the southern side.

Both the Franks and Saxons profited by these events. They let their mutual hostility rest for a while, built fleets, and sailed forth in the west on voyages of plunder, like their relatives, the Goths, in the east. The Saxons descended on the coasts of Britain and Gaul; the Franks sailed to Spain, and are said to have even entered the Mediterranean. When Probus became emperor, in the year 276, he found a great part of Gaul overrun and ravaged by them and by the Alemanni, on the Upper Rhine. He succeeded, after a hard struggle, in driving back the German invaders, restored the line of stockade from the Rhine to the Danube, and built new fortresses along the frontier. On the other hand, he introduced into Germany the cultivation of the vine, which the previous emperors had not permitted, and thus laid the foundation of the famous vineyards of the Rhine and the Moselle.

Probus endeavored to weaken the power of the Germans by separating and colonizing them, wherever it was possible. One of his experiments, however, had a very different result from what he expected. He transported a large number of Frankish captives to the shore of the Black Sea; but instead of quietly settling there they got possession of some vessels, soon formed a large fleet, sailed into the Mediterranean, plundered the coasts of Asia Minor, Greece, and Sicily, where they even captured the city of Syracuse, and at last, after many losses and marvelous adventures, made their way by sea to their homes on the Lower Rhine.

Toward the close of the third century Constantine, during the reign of his father, Constantius, suppressed an insurrection of the Franks, and even for a time drove them from their islands on the coast of Holland. He afterward crossed the Rhine, but found it expedient not to attempt an expedition into the interior. He appears to have had no war with the Alemanni, but he founded the city of Constance, on the lake of the same name, for the purpose of keeping them in check.

The boundaries between Germany and Rome still remained the Rhine and the Danube, but on the east they were extended to the Black Sea, and in place of the invasions of Cæsar, Drusus, and Germanicus, the empire was obliged to be content when it succeeded in repelling the invasions made upon its own soil. Three hundred years of very slow, but healthy growth on the one side, and of luxury, corruption, and despotism on the other, had thus changed the relative position of the two races.

Chapter V

THE MIGRATION OF THE GOTHS. 300-412 A.D.

ROME, as the representative of the civilization of the world, and, after the year 313, as the political power which left Christianity free to overthrow the ancient religions, is still the central point of historical interest during the greater part of the fourth century. Until the death of the Emperor Valentinian, in 375, the ancient boundaries of the empire, though frequently broken down, were continually reëstablished, and the laws and institutions of the Romans had prevailed so long throughout the great extent of conquered territory that the inhabitants now knew no other.

But beyond the Danube had arisen a new power, the independence of which, after the time of Aurelian, was never disputed by the Roman emperors. The Goths were the first of the Germanic tribes to adopt a monarchical form of government and to acquire some degree of civilization. They were numerous and well organized; and Constantine, who was more of a diplomatist than a general, found it better to preserve peace with them for forty years, by presents and payments, than to provoke them to war. From them he secured his best soldiers, and it was principally the valor of his Gothic troops which enabled him to defeat the rival emperor, Licinius, in 325. From that time 40,000 Goths formed the main strength of his army.

The important part which these people played in the history of Europe renders it necessary that we should now sketch their rise and growth as a nation. Soon after their arrival upon the shores of the Black Sea they are found to have developed into two distinct nations—East Goths and West Goths, separated by the River Dniester. The Ostrogoths, under their aged king, Hermanric, extended, as their name implies, eastward from the Dniester toward the Caspian Sea; on the north they had no fixed boundary, but they must have reached to the latitude of Moscow. The Visigoths stretched westward from the Dniester to the Danube, and northward from Hungary to the Baltic Sea. The Vandals were for some generations allied with the latter, but war having arisen between them, the Emperor Constantine interposed. He succeeded in effecting a separation of the two, and in settling the Vandals in Hungary, where they remained for forty years under the protection of the Roman Empire.

From the time of their first encounter with the Romans, in Dacia, during the third century, the Goths appear to have made rapid advances in their political organization and the arts of civilized life. They were the first of the Germanic nations who accepted Christianity. On one of their piratical expeditions to the shores of Asia Minor they brought away as captive a Christian boy. They named him Ulfilas, and by that name he is still known to the world. He devoted his life to the overthrow of their pagan faith, and succeeded. From the Greek, Latin, and Runic characters of the Goths he constructed an alphabet for his adopted people, and then translated the Bible into their language. It is interesting to note that he felt war to be a great check to civilization among the Goths, and therefore in his translation of the Old Testament he omitted the Book of Kings, because it tells so much of war and bloodshed.

A part of his translation of the New Testament escaped destruction, and is now preserved in the library at Upsala, in Sweden. It is the only specimen in existence of the Gothic language of that early day. From it we learn how rich and refined was that language, and how many of the elements of the German and English tongues it contained. The following are the opening words of the Lord's Prayer, as Ulfilas wrote them between the years 350 and 370 of our era:

GOTHIC. *Atta unsara, thu in himinam, veihnai namo thein. quimai*
ENGLISH. Father our, thou in heaven, be hallowed name thine. come
GERMAN. Vater unser, du im Himmel, geweiht werde Name dein. komme

GOTHIC. *Thiudinassus Theins. vairthai vilja theins, sve in himina, jah ana airthai.*
ENGLISH. Kingdom thine. be done will thine, as in heaven also on earth.
GERMAN. Herrschaft dein. werde Wille dein, wie im Himmel, auch auf Erden.

Ulfilas was born in 311, became a bishop of the Christian Church, spent his whole life in teaching the Goths, and died in Constantinople in the year 381. There was no evidence that he or any other of the Christian missionaries of his time was persecuted, or even seriously hindered in the good work, by the Goths; the latter seem to have adopted the new faith readily, and the Arian creed which Ulfilas taught, although rejected by the Church of Rome, was held by their descendants for nearly five hundred years.

Somewhere between 360 and 370 the long peace between the Romans and the Goths was disturbed by the sudden appearance on the scene of an entirely new race—the Huns. They came from the steppes of Mongolia, and belonged to the Tartar family; but in the course of their wanderings, before reaching Europe, the Huns had not only lost all the traditions of their former history, but even their religious faith. As they came out of the unknown East, crossed the Volga, and fell upon the Goths, their very appearance struck terror into the Gothic nation, who were so much further advanced in civilization. These new invading Huns were short, clumsy figures, with broad and hideously ugly faces, flat noses, oblique eyes, and long black hair, and were clothed in skins which they wore until they dropped in rags from their bodies. But they were marvelous horsemen, and very skillful in using the bow and lance. The men were on their horses' backs from morning till night, while the women and children followed their march in rude carts. They came in such immense numbers, and showed so much savage daring and bravery, that several smaller tribes, allied with the Ostrogoths, or subject to them, went over immediately to the Huns.

The kingdom of the Ostrogoths, almost without offering resistance, fell to pieces. The king, Hermanric, now more than a hundred years old, threw himself upon his sword, at their approach; his successor, Vitimer, gave battle, but lost the victory and his life at the same time. The great body of the people retreated westward before the Huns, who, following them, reached the Dnieper. Here Athanaric, king of the Visigoths, was posted with a large army, to dispute their passage; but the Huns succeeded in finding a fording-place which was left unguarded, turned his flank, and defeated him with great slaughter. Nothing now remained but for both branches of the Gothic people, united in misfortune, to retreat to the Danube.

Athanaric took refuge among the mountains of Transylvania, and Bishop Ulfilas was dispatched to Constantinople to ask the assistance of the Emperor Valens, who was entreated to permit that the Goths, meanwhile, might cross the Danube and find a refuge on Roman territory. Valens yielded to the entreaty, but attached very hard conditions to his permission: the Goths were allowed to cross unarmed, after giving up their wives and children as hostages. In their fear of the Huns they were obliged to accept these conditions, and hundreds of thousands thronged across the Danube. They soon exhausted the supplies of the region, and then began to suffer famine, of which the Roman officers and traders took advantage, demanding their children as slaves, in return for the cats and dogs which they gave to the Goths as food.

This treatment brought about its own revenge. Driven to desperation by hunger and the outrages inflicted upon them, the Goths secretly procured arms, rose, and made themselves masters of the country. The Roman governor marched against them, but their chief, Fridigern, defeated him and utterly destroyed his army. The news of this event induced large numbers of Gothic soldiers to desert from the imperial army and join their countrymen. Fridigern, thus strengthened, commenced a war of revenge: he crossed the Balkans, laid waste Thrace, Macedonia, and Thessaly, and settled his own people in the most fertile parts of the plundered provinces. But he was unable to take the fortified Roman cities, like Adrianople.

Meanwhile, by 378, the Emperor Valens had raised a large army and marched against Fridigern. Without waiting for reinforcements which were on their way from Rome, Valens unwisely decided to risk an open battle with the Goths before the walls of Adrianople. In this fatal battle of Adrianople the Roman army was not merely defeated, but literally annihilated, and the emperor himself perished in an attempt at flight. His nephew, Gratian, succeeded to the throne, but associated with him Theodosius, a young Spaniard of great ability, as Emperor of the East. While Gratian marched to Gaul, to stay the increasing inroads of the Franks, Theodosius was left to deal with the Goths, who were beginning to cultivate the fields of Thrace, as if they meant to stay there.

He was obliged to confirm them in the possession of the greater part of the country. They were called allies of the empire, were obliged to furnish a certain number of soldiers, but retained their own kings, and were governed by their own laws. For several years the relations between the two powers continued peaceful and friendly.

In Italy, Valentinian II. succeeded his brother Gratian. His chief minister was a Frank, named Arbogast, who, learning that he was to be dismissed from his place, had the young Valentinian assassinated, and set up a new emperor, Eugene, in his stead. This act brought him into direct conflict with Theodosius. Arbogast called upon his countrymen, the Franks, who sent a large body of troops to his assistance, while Theodosius strengthened his army with 20,000 Gothic soldiers. Then, for the first time, Frank and Goth—West-German and East-German—faced each other as enemies. The Gothic auxiliaries of Theodosius were commanded by two leaders, Alaric and Stilicho, already distinguished among their people, and destined to play a remarkable part in the history of Europe. The battle between the two armies was fought near Aquileia, in the year 394. The sham emperor, Eugene, was captured and beheaded, Arbogast threw himself upon his sword, and Theodosius was master of the West.

The emperor, however, lived but a few months to enjoy his single rule. He died at Milan, in 395, after having divided the government of the empire between his two sons. Honorius, the elder, was sent to Rome, with the Gothic chieftain, Stilicho, as his minister and guardian; while the boy Arcadius, at Constantinople, was intrusted to the care of a Gaul, named Rufinus. Alaric, perhaps a personal enemy of the latter, perhaps jealous of the elevation of Stilicho to such an important place, refused to submit to the new government. He collected a large body of his countrymen and set out on a campaign of plunder through Greece. Every ancient city, except Thebes, fell into his hands, and only Athens was allowed to buy her exemption from pillage.

The Gaul, Rufinus, took no steps to arrest this devastation; wherefore, it is said, he was murdered at the instigation of Stilicho, who then sent a fleet against Alaric. This undertaking was not entirely successful, and the government of Constantinople finally purchased peace by making Alaric the imperial legate in Illyria. In the year 402 he was sent to Italy, as the representative of the Emperor Arcadius, to overthrow the power of his former fellow-chieftain, Stilicho, who ruled in the name of Honorius. His approach, with a large army, threw the whole country into terror. Honorius shut himself up within the walls of Ravenna, while Stilicho called the legions from Gaul, and even from Britain, to his support. A great battle was fought between the rivals at Pollentia, in which Alaric was worsted; he and his Visigothic followers were glad to be allowed to return to Illyria with all the booty they had gathered in Italy.

Five years afterward, when Stilicho was busy endeavoring to keep the Franks and Alemanni out of Gaul, and to drive back the incursions of mixed German and Celtic bands which began to descend from the Alps, Alaric again made his appearance, demanding the payment of certain sums which he claimed were due to him. Stilicho, having need of his military strength elsewhere, satisfied Alaric's claim by the payment of 4000 pounds of gold; but the Romans felt themselves bitterly humiliated, and Honorius, listening to the rivals of Stilicho, gave his consent to the assassination of the latter and his whole family, including the emperor's own sister, Serena, whom Stilicho had married.

When the news of this atrocious act reached Alaric, he turned and marched back to Italy. There was now no skillful commander to oppose him; the cowardly Honorius took refuge in Ravenna, and the Visigoths advanced without resistance to the gates of Rome. The walls, built by Aurelian, were too strong to be taken by assault, but all supplies were cut off, and the final surrender of the city became only a question of time. When a deputation of Romans represented to Alaric that the people still numbered half a million, he answered: "The thicker the grass, the better the mowing!" They were finally obliged to yield to his demands, and pay a ransom consisting of 5000 pounds of gold, 30,000 pounds of silver, many thousands of silk robes, and a large quantity of spices—a total value of something more than three millions of dollars. In addition to this, 40,000 slaves, mostly of Germanic blood, escaped to his camp and became free.

Alaric only withdrew into northern Italy, where he soon found a new cause of dispute with the government of Honorius, in Ravenna. He seems to have been a man of great military genius, but little capacity for civil rule; of much energy and ambition, but little judgment. The result of his quarrel with Honorius was that he marched again to Rome, proclaimed Attalus, the governor of the city, emperor, and then demanded entrance for himself and his troops, as an ally. The demand could not be refused; Rome was opened to the Visigoths, who participated in the festivals which accompanied the coronation of Attalus. It was nothing but a farce, and seems to have been partly intended as such by Alaric, who publicly deposed the new emperor shortly afterward.

There were further negotiations with Honorius, which came to nothing; then Alaric advanced upon Rome the third time, not now as an ally, but as an avowed enemy. The city could make no resistance, and on August 24, 410, Alaric and his followers entered it as conquerors. This event, so famous in history, has been greatly misrepresented. Later researches show that, although the citizens were despoiled of their wealth, the buildings and monuments were spared. The people were subjected to violence and outrage for the space of six days, after which Alaric marched out of Rome with his army, leaving the city, in its external appearance, very much as he found it.

He directed his course toward southern Italy, with the intention, it was generally believed, of conquering Sicily and then crossing into Africa. The plan was defeated by his death, in 411, at Cosenza, a town on the banks of the Busento, in Calabria. His soldiers turned the river from its course, dug a grave in its bed, and there laid the body of Alaric, with all the gems and gold he had gathered. Then the Busento was restored to its channel, and the slaves who had performed the work were slain, in order that Alaric's place of burial might never be known.

His brother-in-law, Ataulf (Adolph), was his successor. He was also the brother-in-law of Honorius, having married the latter's sister, Placidia, after she was taken captive by Alaric. He was therefore strengthened by the conquests of the one and by his family connection with the other. The Visigoths, who had gradually gathered together under Alaric, seem to have had enough of marching to and fro, and they acquiesced in an arrangement made between Ataulf and Honorius, according to which the former led them out of Italy in 412, and established them in southern Gaul. They took possession of all the region lying between the Loire and the Pyrenees, with Toulouse as their capital.

Thus, in the space of forty years, the Visigoths left their home on the Black Sea, between the Danube and the Dniester, passed through the whole breadth of the Roman Empire, from Constantinople to the Bay of Biscay, after having traversed both the Grecian and Italian peninsulas, and settled themselves again in what seemed to be a permanent home. During this extraordinary migration they maintained their independence as a people, they preserved their laws, customs, and their own rulers; and, although frequently at enmity with the empire, they were never made to yield it allegiance. But the impetus given to this branch of the Germanic race by the invasion of the Huns did not affect it alone. Before the Visigoths reached the shores of the Atlantic all central Europe was in movement.

Chapter VI

THE INVASION OF THE HUNS. 412-472 A.D.

THE westward movement of the Huns was followed, soon afterward, by an advance of the Slavonic tribes on the north, who first took possession of the territory on the Baltic relinquished by the Goths, and then gradually pressed onward toward the Elbe. The Huns themselves, temporarily settled in the fertile region north of the Danube, pushed the Vandals westward toward Bohemia, and the latter, in their turn, pressed upon the Marcomanni. Thus, at the opening of the fifth century, all the tribes from the Baltic to the Alps, along the eastern frontier of Germany, were partly or wholly forced to fall back. This gave rise to a union of many of them, including the Vandals, Alans, Suevi, and Burgundians, under a chief named Radagast. Numbering half a million, they crossed the Alps into northern Italy and demanded territory for new homes.

Stilicho, exhausted by his struggle with Alaric, whose retreat from Italy he had just purchased, could only meet this new enemy by summoning his legions from Gaul and Britain. He met Radagast at Fiesole (near Florence), and so crippled the strength of the invasion that Italy was saved. The German tribes recrossed the Alps and entered Gaul the following year. Here they gave up their temporary union, and each tribe selected its own territory. The Alans pushed forward, crossed the Pyrenees, and finally settled in Portugal; the Vandals followed and took possession of all southern Spain, giving their name to (V)-Andalusia; the Suevi, after fighting, but not conquering, the native Basque tribes of the Pyrenees, selected what is now the province of Galicia; while the Burgundians stretched from the Rhine through western Switzerland, and southward nearly to the mouth of the Rhone. The greater part of Gaul was thus already lost to the Roman power.

The withdrawal of the legions from Britain by Stilicho left the population unprotected. The Britons had become greatly demoralized during the long decay of the empire, were unable to resist the invasions of the Picts and Scots, and in this emergency summoned the Saxons and Angles to their aid. Two chiefs of the latter, Hengist and Horsa, accepted the invitation, landed in England in 449, and received lands in Kent. They were followed by such numbers of their German countrymen, who were feeling the pressure in their rear of the advancing Huns, that they soon conquered the Britons in southern and eastern England, and took the land for themselves and their families. They brought with them their speech and their ancient pagan religion, and for a time overthrew the rude form of Christianity which had prevailed among the Britons since the days of Constantine. Only Ireland, the Scottish Highlands, Wales, and Cornwall resisted the Saxon rule, as, across the Channel, in Brittany, a remnant of the Celtic Gauls resisted the sway of the Franks. From the year 449 until the landing of William the Conqueror, in 1066, nearly all England and the Lowlands of Scotland were in the hands of the Saxon race.

Ataulf, the king of the Visigoths, was murdered soon after establishing his people in southern France. Wallia, his successor, crossed the Pyrenees, drove the Vandals out of northern Spain, and made the Ebro River the boundary between them and his Visigoths. Fifteen years afterward, in 429, the Vandals, under their famous king, Geiseric or Genseric, were invited by the Roman governor of Africa to assist him in a revolt against the empire. They crossed the Straits of Gibraltar in a body, took possession of all the Roman provinces as far eastward as Tunis, and made Carthage the capital of their new kingdom. The Visigoths immediately occupied the remainder of Spain, which they held for nearly three hundred years afterward.

Thus, although the name and state of an emperor of the West were kept up in Rome until the year 476, the empire never really existed after the invasion of Alaric. The dominion over Italy, Gaul, and Spain, claimed by the emperors of the East, at Constantinople, was acknowledged in documents, but (except for a short time, under Justinian) was never practically exercised. Rome had been the supreme power of the known world for so many centuries that a superstitious influence still clung to the very name, and the ambition of the Germanic kings seems to have been, not to destroy the empire, but to conquer and make it their own.

The rude tribes which in the time of Julius Cæsar were buried among the mountains and forests of the country between the Rhine, the Danube, and the Baltic Sea, were now, five hundred years later, scattered over all Europe, and beginning to establish new nations on the foundations laid by Rome. As soon as they cross the old boundaries of Germany they come into the light of history, and we are able to follow their wars and migrations; but we know scarcely anything, during this period, of the tribes which remained within those boundaries. We can only infer that the Marcomanni settled between the Danube and the Alps, in what is now Bavaria; that early in the fifth century the Thuringians established a kingdom including nearly all central Germany; and that the Slavonic tribes, pressing westward through Prussia, were checked by the valor of the Saxons, along the line of the Elbe, since only scattered bands of them were found beyond that river at a later day.

The first impulse to all these great migrations came, as we have seen, from the Huns. These people, as yet unconquered, were so dreaded by the emperors of the East that their peace was purchased, like that of the Goths a hundred years before, by large annual payments. For fifty years they seemed satisfied to rest in their new home, making occasional raids across the Danube, and gradually bringing under their sway the fragments of Germanic tribes already settled in Hungary or left behind by the Goths. In 428 Attila and his brother Bleda became kings of the Huns, but the latter's death, in 445, left Attila sole ruler. His name was already famous, far and wide, for his strength, energy, and intelligence. His capital was established near Tokay, in Hungary, where he lived in a great castle of wood, surrounded with moats and palisades. He was a man of short stature, with broad head, neck and shoulders, and fierce, restless eyes. He scorned the luxury which was prevalent at the time, wore only plain woolen garments, and ate and drank from wooden dishes and cups. His personal power and influence were so great that the Huns looked upon him as a demigod, while all the neighboring Germanic tribes, including a large portion of the Ostrogoths, enlisted under his banner.

Toward the close of the year 449 Attila made preparations for a grand war of conquest. He already possessed unbounded influence over the Huns, and supernatural signs of his coming career were soon supplied. A peasant dug up a jeweled sword, which, it is said, had long before been given to a race of kings by the god of war. This was brought to Attila, and thenceforth worn by him. He was called "The Scourge of God," and the people believed that wherever the hoofs of his horse had trodden no grass ever grew again. The fear of his power, or the hope of plunder, drew large numbers of the German tribes to his side, and the army with which he set out for the conquest, first of Gaul and then of Europe, is estimated at from 500,000 to 700,000 warriors. With this he passed through the heart of Germany, much of which he had already made tributary, and reached the Rhine. Here Gunther, the king of the Burgundians, opposed him with a force of 10,000 men, and was speedily crushed. Even a portion of the Franks, who were then quarreling among themselves, joined him, and now Gaul, divided between Franks, Romans, and Visigoths, was open to his advance.

The minister and counselor of Valentinian III., the grandson of Theodosius and emperor of the West, was Aëtius, the son of a Gothic father and a Roman mother. As soon as Attila's design became known he hastened to Gaul, collected the troops still in Roman service, and procured the alliance of Theodoric and the Visigoths. The Alans, under their king, Sangipan, were also persuaded to unite their forces; the independent Celts in Brittany and a large proportion of the Franks and Burgundians, all of whom were threatened by the invasion of the Huns, hastened to the side of Aëtius, so that the army commanded by himself and Theodoric became nearly if not quite equal in numbers to that of Attila. The latter, by this time, had marched into the heart of Gaul, laying waste the country through which he passed, and meeting no resistance until he reached the walled and fortified city of Orleans. This was in the year 451.

Orleans, besieged and hard pressed, was about to surrender, when Aëtius approached with his army. Attila was obliged to raise the siege at once, and retreat in order to select a better position for the impending battle. He finally halted on the broad plains of the province of Champagne, near the present city of Châlons, where his immense body of armed horsemen would have ample space to move. Aëtius and Theodoric followed and pitched their camp opposite to him, on the other side of a small hill which rose from the plain. That night Attila ordered his priests to consult their pagan oracles, and ascertain the fate of the morrow's struggle. The answer was: "Death to the enemy's leader, destruction to the Huns!" but the hope of seeing Aëtius fall prevailed on Attila to risk his own defeat.

The next day witnessed one of the greatest battles of history.

Aëtius commanded the right and Theodoric the left wing of their army, placing between them the Alans and other tribes, of whose fidelity they were not quite sure. Attila, however, took the center with his Huns, and formed his wings of the Germans and Ostrogoths. The battle began at dawn, and raged through the whole day. Both armies endeavored to take and hold the hill between them, and the hundreds of thousands rolled back and forth, as the victory inclined to one side or the other. A brook in the plain ran red with the blood of the fallen. At last Theodoric broke Attila's center, but was slain in the attack. The Visigoths immediately lifted his son, Thorismond, on a shield, proclaimed him king, and renewed the fight. The Huns were driven back to the fortress of wagons, where their wives, children, and treasures were collected, when a terrible storm of rain and thunder put an end to the battle. Between 200,000 and 300,000 dead lay upon the plain.

All night the lamentations of the Hunnish women filled the air. Attila had an immense funeral pile constructed of saddles, whereon he meant to burn himself and his family, in case Aëtius should renew the fight the next day. But the army of the latter was too exhausted to move, and the Huns were allowed to commence their retreat from Gaul. Enraged at his terrible defeat, Attila destroyed everything in his way, leaving a broad track of blood and ashes from Gaul through the heart of Germany, back to Hungary.

By the following year, 452, Attila had collected another army, and now directed his march toward Italy. This new invasion was so unexpected that the passes of the Alps were left undefended, and the Huns reached the rich and populous city of Aquileia, on the northern shore of the Adriatic, without meeting any opposition. After a siege of three months they took and razed it to the ground so completely that it was never rebuilt, and from that day to this only a few piles of shapeless stones remain to mark the spot where it stood. The inhabitants who escaped took refuge upon the low marshy islands, separated from the mainland by the lagoons, and there formed the settlement which, two or three hundred years later, became known to the world as Venice.

Attila marched onward to the Po, destroying everything in his way. Here he was met by a deputation, at the head of which was Leo, the Bishop (or Pope) of Rome, sent by Valentinian III. Leo so worked upon the superstitious mind of the savage monarch that the latter gave up his purpose of taking Rome and returned to Hungary with his army, which was suffering from disease and want. The next year he died suddenly, in his wooden palace at Tokay. The tradition states that his body was enclosed in three coffins, of iron, silver, and gold, and buried secretly, like that of Alaric, so that no man might know his resting place. He had a great many wives, and left so many sons behind him that their quarrels for the succession to the throne divided the Huns into numerous parties and quite destroyed their power as a people.

The alliance between Aëtius and the Visigoths ceased immediately after the great battle. Valentinian III., suspicious of the fame of Aëtius, recalled him to Rome, the year after Attila's death, and assassinated him with his own hand. The treacherous emperor was himself slain, shortly afterward, by Maximus, who succeeded him, and forced his widow, the Empress Eudoxia, to accept him as her husband. Out of revenge, Eudoxia sent a messenger to Geiseric, the old king of the Vandals, at Carthage, summoning him to Rome. The Vandals had already built a large fleet and pillaged the shores of Sicily and other Mediterranean islands. In 455 Geiseric landed at the mouth of the Tiber with a powerful force, and marched upon Rome. The city was not strong enough to offer any resistance; it was taken, and during two weeks surrendered to such devastation and outrage that the word vandalism has ever since been used to express savage and wanton destruction. The churches were plundered of all their vessels and ornaments, the old palace of the Cæsars was laid waste, priceless works of art destroyed, and those of the inhabitants who escaped with their lives were left almost as beggars.

When " the old king of the sea," as Geiseric was called, returned to Africa, he not only left Rome ruined, but the Western Empire practically overthrown. For seventeen years afterward Ricimer, a chief of the Suevi, who had been commander of the Roman auxiliaries in Gaul, was the real ruler of its crumbling fragments. He set up, set aside, or slew five or six so-called emperors at his own will, and finally died in 472, only four years before the boy, Romulus Augustulus, was compelled to throw off the purple and retire into obscurity as " the last emperor of Rome."

In 455, the year when Geiseric and his Vandals plundered Rome, the Germanic tribes along the Danube took advantage of the dissensions following Attila's death and threw off their allegiance to the Huns. They all united under a king named Ardaric, gave battle, and were so successful that the whole tribe of the Huns was forced to retreat eastward into southern Russia. From this time they do not appear again in history, although it is probable that the Magyars, who came later into the same region from which they were driven, brought the remnants of the tribe with them.

During the fourth and fifth centuries the great historic achievements of the German race, as we have now traced them, were performed outside of the German territory. While from Thrace to the Atlantic Ocean, from the Scottish Highlands to Africa, the new nationalities overran the decayed Roman Empire, constantly changing their seats of power, we have no intelligence of what was happening within Germany herself. Both branches of the Goths, the Vandals, and a part of the Franks had become Christians; but the Alemanni, Saxons, and Thuringinians were still heathens, although they had by this time adopted many of the arts of civilized life. They had no educated class corresponding to the Christian priesthood in the East, Italy, and Gaul, and even in Britain; and thus no chronicle of their history has survived.

Chapter VII

THE RISE AND FALL OF THE OSTROGOTHS

472-570 A. D.

AFTER the death of Ricimer, in 472, Italy, weakened by invasion and internal dissension, was an easy prey to the first strong hand which might claim possession. Such a hand was soon found in a chief named Odoacer (or Odovakar). He commanded a large force composed of the smaller German tribes from the banks of the Danube who had thrown off the yoke of the Huns. Many of these troops had served the last half dozen Roman emperors whom Ricimer had set up or thrown down, and they now claimed one-third of the Italian territory for themselves and their families. When this was refused, Odoacer, at their head, took the boy Romulus Augustulus prisoner, banished him, and proclaimed himself king of Italy, in 476, making Ravenna his capital.

The dynasty at Constantinople still called its dominion "The Roman Empire," and claimed authority over all the West. But it had not the means to make its claim acknowledged, and in this emergency the Emperor Zeno turned to Theodoric, the young king of the Ostrogoths, who had been brought up at his court, in Constantinople. He was the successor of three brothers, who, after the dispersion of the Huns, had united some of the smaller German tribes with the Ostrogoths and restored the former power and influence of the race.

Theodoric (who must not be confounded with his namesake, the Visigoth king who fell in conquering Attila) was a man of great natural ability, which had been well developed by his education in Constantinople. He accepted the appointment of general and governor from the emperor, yet the preparations he made for the expedition to Italy show that he intended to remain and establish his own kingdom there. It was not a military march, but the migration of a people, which he headed. The Ostrogoths and their allies took with them their wives and children, their herds and household goods; they moved so slowly, up the Danube and across the Alps, now halting to rest and recruit, now fighting a passage through some hostile tribe, that several years elapsed before they reached Italy.

Odoacer had reigned fourteen years, with more justice and discretion than was common in those times, and was able to raise a large force, in 489, to meet the advance of Theodoric. After three severe battles had been fought, he was forced to take shelter within the strong walls of Ravenna; but he again sallied forth and attacked the Ostrogoths with such bravery that he came near defeating them. Finally, in 493, after a siege of three years, he capitulated, and was soon afterward treacherously murdered, by order of Theodoric, at a banquet to which the latter had invited him.

Having the power in his own hands, Theodoric now threw off his assumed subjection to the Eastern Empire, put on the Roman purple and proclaimed himself king. All Italy, including Sicily, Sardinia, and Corsica, fell at once into his hands; and, having left a portion of the Ostrogoths behind him, on the Danube, he also claimed all the region between, in order to preserve a communication with them. He was soon so strongly settled in his new realm that he had nothing to fear from the Emperor Zeno and his successors. The latter did not venture to show any direct signs of hostility toward him, but remained quiet; while, on his part, beyond seizing a portion of Pannonia, he refrained from interfering with their rule in the East.

In the West, however, the case was different. Five years before Theodoric's arrival in Italy the last relic of Roman power disappeared forever from Gaul. A general named Syagrius had succeeded to the command, after the murder of Aëtius, and had formed the central provinces into a Roman state, which was so completely cut off from all connection with the empire that it became practically independent. The Franks, who now held all northern Gaul and Belgium, were by this time so strong and well organized that their king, Clovis (or Chlodoweg), boldly challenged Syagrius to battle. The challenge was accepted: a battle was fought near Soissons, in the year 486, the Romans were cut to pieces, and the River Loire became the southern boundary of the Frankish kingdom and the city of Paris its capital. The territory between the Loire and the Pyrenees still belonged to the Visigoths.

While Theodoric was engaged in giving peace, order, and a new prosperity to the war-worn and desolated lands of Italy, his Frankish rival, Clovis, defeated the Alemanni near Strasburg in 496. It was immediately after this battle that Clovis, in accordance, it is said, with a vow made during the battle, adopted the Christian religion of his wife and allowed himself to be baptized by the Archbishop of Rheims. His example was followed by his Frankish chieftains, and thus began that close union between the Frankish kings and the Roman Catholic Church which was to last for centuries. For Clovis and the Franks adopted the orthodox or Roman Catholic form of Christianity, and not the Arian form, which had been adopted by almost all the other Germans who had become Christians. We must return to Clovis and the history of his dynasty in a later chapter, and will now only briefly mention those incidents of his reign which brought him into conflict with Theodoric.

In the year 500 Clovis defeated the Burgundians and for a time rendered them tributary to him. He then turned to the Visigoths and made the fact of their being Arian Christians a pretext for declaring war against them. Their king was Alaric II., who had married the daughter of Theodoric. A battle was fought in 507; the two kings met, and, fighting hand to hand, Alaric II. was slain by Clovis. The latter soon afterward took and plundered Toulouse, the Visigoth capital, and added to the Frankish kingdom all of southern Gaul except a strip of land along the Mediterranean from the Rhone to the Pyrenees, known as Septimania or Gothia. His power and fame were so great that the Emperor Anastasius, to keep up the pretense of retaining his power in Gaul, appointed Clovis Roman consul, and sent him a royal diadem and purple mantle. So much respect was still attached to the name of the empire that Clovis accepted the title, and was solemnly invested by a Christian bishop with the crown and mantle. In the year 511 he died, having founded the Frankish Kingdom.

The power of Theodoric was not again assailed. As king of the Ostrogoths he ruled over Italy and the islands, and the lands between the Adriatic and the Danube; as guardian of the young Visigothic king, Amalaric, son of Alaric II., his sway extended over southern France and all of Spain. He was peaceful, prudent, and wise, and his reign, by contrast with the convulsions which preceded it, was called "a golden age" by his Italian subjects. Although he and his people were Germanic in blood and Arians in faith, while the Italians were Roman and Athanasian, he guarded the interests and subdued the prejudices of both, and the respect which his abilities inspired preserved peace between them. The murder of Odoacer is a lasting stain upon his memory; the execution of the philosopher Boëthius is another, scarcely less dark; but, with the exception of these two acts, his reign was marked by wisdom, justice, and tolerance. The surname of "The Great" was given to him by his contemporaries, not so much to distinguish him from the Theodoric of the Visigoths, as on account of his eminent qualities as a ruler. From the year 500 to 526, when he died, he was the most powerful and important monarch of the civilized world.

During Theodoric's life Ravenna was the capital of Italy. Rome had lost her ancient renown, but her bishops, who were now called Popes, were the rulers of the Church of the West, and she thus became a religious capital. The ancient enmity of the Arians and Athanasians had only grown stronger by time, and Theodoric, although he became popular with the masses of the people, was always hated by the priests. When he died a splendid mausoleum was built for his body at Ravenna and still remains standing. It is a circular tower, resting on an arched base with ten sides, and surmounted by a dome, which is formed of a single stone, thirty-six feet in diameter and four feet in thickness. The sarcophagus in which he was laid was afterward broken open, by the order of the Pope of Rome, and his ashes were scattered to the winds, as those of a heretic.

When Theodoric died the enmities of race and sect which he had suppressed with a strong hand broke out afresh. He left behind him a grandson, Athalaric, only ten years old, to whose mother, Amalasunta, was intrusted the regency, during his minority. His other grandson, Amalaric, was king of the Visigoths, and sufficiently occupied in building up his power in Spain. In Italy the hostility to Amalasunta's regency was chiefly religious; but the Eastern emperor, on the one side, and the Franks on the other, were actuated by political considerations. The former, Justinian, the last of the great emperors, determined to recover Italy for the empire; the latter only waited an opportunity to get possession of the whole of Gaul. Amalasunta was persuaded to sign a treaty, by which the territory of Provence was given back to the Burgundians. The latter were immediately assailed by the sons of Clovis, and in the year 534 the kingdom of Burgundy, after having stood for 125 years, was absorbed into the Frankish Kingdom.

While these changes were taking place in the West, Justinian had not been idle in the East. He was fortunate in having two great generals, Belisarius and Narses, who had already restored the lost prestige of the imperial army. His first movement was to recover northern Africa from the Vandals, who had now been settled there for a hundred years, and had begun to consider themselves the inheritors of the Carthaginian power. Belisarius, with a fleet and a powerful army, was sent against them. Here, again, the difference of religious doctrine between the Vandals and the Romans whom they had subjected made his task easy. The last Vandal king, Gelimer, was defeated and besieged in Pappua, a fortress on the northern coast of Africa west of Carthage. After the siege had lasted all winter, Belisarius sent an officer, Pharas, to demand surrender. Gelimer refused, but added: " If you will do me a favor, Pharas, send me a loaf of bread, a sponge, and a harp." Pharas, astonished, asked the reason of this request and Gelimer answered: " I demand bread, because I have seen none since I have been besieged here; a sponge, to cool my eyes, which are weary with weeping, and a harp, to sing the story of my misfortunes." Soon afterward he surrendered, and in 534 all northern Africa was restored to Justinian. The Vandals disappeared from history, as a race, but some of their descendants, with light hair, blue eyes and fair skins, still live among the valleys of the Atlas Mountains, where they are called Berbers, and keep themselves distinct from the Arab population.

Amalasunta, in the meantime, had been murdered by a relative whom she had chosen to assist her in the government. This gave Justinian a pretext for interfering, and Belisarius was next sent with his army to Italy. The Ostrogoths chose a new king, Vitiges, and the struggle which followed was long and desperate. Rome and Milan were taken and ravaged; in the latter city 300,000 persons are said to have been slaughtered. Belisarius finally obtained possession of Ravenna, the Gothic capital, took Vitiges prisoner and sent him to Constantinople. The Goths immediately elected another king, Totila, who carried on the struggle for eleven years longer. Visigoths, Franks, Burgundians, and even Alemanni, whose alliance was sought by both sides, flocked to Italy in the hope of securing booty, and laid waste the regions which Belisarius and Totila had spared.

When Belisarius was recalled to Constantinople, Narses took his place, and continued the war with the diminishing remnant of the Ostrogoths. Finally, in the year 552, in a great battle among the Apennines, Totila was slain, and the struggle seemed to be at an end. But the Ostrogoths proclaimed the young Prince Teias as their king, and marched southward under his leadership, to make a last fight for their existence as a nation. Narses followed, and not far from Cumæ, on a mountain opposite Vesuvius, he cut off their communication with the sea, and forced them to retreat to a higher position, where there was neither water for themselves nor food for their animals. Then they took the bridles off their horses and turned them loose, formed themselves into a solid square of men, with Teias at their head, and for two whole days fought with the valor and the desperation of men who know that their cause is lost, but nevertheless will not yield. Although Teias was slain, they still stood; and on the third morning Narses allowed the survivors, about one thousand in number, to march away, with the promise that they would leave Italy.

Thus gloriously came to an end, after enduring sixty years, the Gothic power in Italy, and thus, like a meteor, brightest before it is quenched, the Gothic name fades from history. The Visigoths retained their supremacy in Spain until 711, when Roderick, their last king, was slain by the Saracens; but the Ostrogoths, after this campaign of Narses, are never heard of again as a people. Between Hermann and Charlemagne there is no leader so great as Theodoric; but his empire died with him. He became the hero of the earliest German songs; his name and character were celebrated among tribes who had forgotten his history, and his tomb is one of the few monuments left to us from these ages of battle, migration, and change. The Ostrogoths were scattered and their traces lost. Some, no doubt, remained in Italy, and became mixed with the native population; others joined the people which were nearest to them in blood and habits; and some took refuge among the fastnesses of the Alps. It is supposed that the Tyrolese, for instance, may be among their descendants.

The apparent success of Justinian in bringing Italy again under the sway of the Eastern Empire was also only a flash before its final extinction. The Ostrogoths were avenged by one of their kindred races. Narses remained in Ravenna as vicegerent of the empire; his government was stern and harsh, but he restored order to the country, and his authority became so great as to excite the jealousy of Justinian. After the latter's death, in 565, it became evident that a plot was formed at Constantinople to treat Narses as his great contemporary, Belisarius, had been treated. He determined to resist, and, in order to make his position stronger, is said to have summoned the Longobards (Long-Beards) to his aid.

This tribe, in the time of Cæsar, occupied a part of northern Germany, near the mouth of the Elbe. About the end of the fourth century we find them on the north bank of the Danube, between Bohemia and Hungary. The history of their wanderings during the intervening period is unknown. During the reign of Theodoric they overcame their Germanic neighbors, the Heruli, to whom they had been partially subject; then followed a fierce struggle with the Gepidæ, another Germanic tribe, which terminated in the year 560, with the defeat and destruction of the latter. Their king, Kunimund, fell by the hand of Alboin, king of the Longobards, who had a drinking-cup made of his skull. The Longobards, though victorious, found themselves surrounded by new neighbors who were much worse than the old. The Avars, who are supposed to have been a branch of the Huns, pressed and harassed them on the east; the Slavonic tribes of the north descended into Bohemia, and they found themselves alone between races who were savages in comparison with their own.

The invitation of Narses was followed by a movement similar to that of the Ostrogoths under Theodoric. Alboin marched with all his people, their herds, and household goods. The passes of the Alps were purposely left undefended at their approach, and in 568, accompanied by the fragments of many other Germanic tribes who gave up their homes on the Danube, they entered Italy and took immediate possession of all the northern provinces. The city of Pavia, which was strongly fortified, held out against them for four years, and then, on account of its strength and gallant resistance, was chosen by Alboin for his capital.

Italy then became the kingdom of the Longobards, and the permanent home of their race, whose name still exists in the province of Lombardy. Only Ravenna, Naples, and Genoa were still held by the Eastern emperors, constituting what was called the Exarchy. Rome was also nominally subject to Constantinople, although the Popes were beginning to assume the government of the city. The young republic of Venice, already organized, was safe on its islands in the Adriatic.

The migrations of the races, which were really commenced by the Goths when they moved from the Baltic to the Black Sea, terminated with the settlement of the Longobards in Italy. They therefore occupied two centuries, and form a grand and stirring period of transition between the Roman Empire and the Europe of the Middle Ages. With the exception of the invasion of the Huns, and the slow and rather uneventful encroachment of the Slavonic race, these great movements were carried out by the kindred tribes who inhabited the forests of "Germania Magna," in the time of Cæsar.

Chapter VIII

EUROPE AT THE END OF THE MIGRATIONS OF THE RACES. 570 A. D.

THUS far we have been following the history of the Germanic races, in their conflict with Rome, until their complete and final triumph at the end of six hundred years after they first met Julius Cæsar. Within the limits of Germany itself there was, as we have seen, no united nationality. Even the consolidation of the smaller tribes under the names of Goths, Franks, Saxons, and Alemanni, during the third century, was only the beginning of a new political development which was not continued upon German soil. With the exception of Denmark, Sweden, Russia, Ireland, Wales, the Scottish Highlands, and the Byzantine territory in Turkey, Greece, and Italy, all Europe was under Germanic rule at the end of the migrations of the races, in the year 570.

The Longobards, even after the death of Alboin, still prospered greatly, and under the wise rule of Queen Theodolind were persuaded to become Christians. They then gave up their nomadic habits, scattered themselves over the country, learned agriculture and the mechanic arts, and gradually became amalgamated with the native Romans. Their descendants form a large portion of the population of northern Italy at this day.

The Franks, at this time, were firmly established in Gaul, under the dynasty founded by Clovis. They owned nearly all the territory west of the Rhine, part of western Switzerland, and the valley of the Rhone, to the Mediterranean. Only the small strip of territory on the southeast, between the Pyrenees and the upper waters of the Garonne, known as Septimania, still belonged to the Visigoths. The connection of the Visigoths with the other German races gradually ceased. They conquered the Suevi, driving them into the mountains of Galicia, subdued the Alans in Portugal, and during a reign of two centuries more impressed their traces indelibly upon the Spanish people. Their history, from this time on, belongs to Spain. Their near relations, the Vandals, as we have already seen, had ceased to exist. Like the Ostrogoths, they were never named again as a separate people.

The Saxons had made themselves such thorough masters of England and the Lowlands of Scotland that the native Romanized Celtic population was driven into Wales and Cornwall. This native population had become Christian under the empire, and looked with horror upon the paganism of the Saxons. During the early part of the sixth century they made a bold but brief effort to expel the invaders, under the lead of the half-fabulous King Arthur of the Round Table. The Angles and Saxons, however, not only triumphed, but planted their language, laws, and character so firmly upon English soil that the England of the later centuries grew from the basis they laid, and the name of Anglo-Saxon has become the designation of the English race all over the world.

Along the northern coast of Germany the Frisii and the Saxons who remained behind had formed two kingdoms and asserted a fierce independence. The territory of the latter extended to the Harz Mountains, where it met that of the Thuringians, who still held central Germany, southward to the Danube. Beyond that river the new nation of the Bavarians was permanently settled, and had already risen to such importance that Theodolind, the daughter of its king, Garibald, was selected for his queen by the Longobard king, Autharis.

East of the Elbe, through Prussia, nearly the whole country was occupied by various Slavonic tribes. One of these, the Czechs, had taken possession of Bohemia, where they soon afterward established an independent kingdom. Beyond them the Avars occupied Hungary, now and then making invasions into German territory, or even to the borders of Italy. Denmark and Sweden, owing to their remoteness from the great theater of action, were scarcely affected by the political changes we have described.

Finally, the Alemanni, though defeated and held back by the Franks, maintained their independence in the southwestern part of Germany and in eastern Switzerland, where their descendants are living at this day. Each of all these new nationalities included remnants of the smaller original tribes, which had lost their independence in the general struggle, and which soon became more or less mixed (except in England) with the former inhabitants of the conquered soil.

Nearly all Europe was thus portioned among men of German blood, very few of whom ever again migrated from the soil whereon they are now settled. It was their custom to demand one-third—in some few instances two-thirds—of the conquered territory for their own people. In this manner, Frank and Gaul, Longobard and Roman, Visigoth and Spaniard, found themselves side by side, and reciprocally influenced each other's speech and habits of life. It must not be supposed, however, that the new nations lost their former character and took on that of the Germanic conquerors. Almost the reverse of this took place. It must be remembered that the Gauls, for instance, far outnumbered the Franks; that each conquest was achieved by a few thousand men, most of them warriors, while each of the original Roman provinces had hundreds of thousands of inhabitants. There must have been at least ten of the ruled to one of the ruling race.

The latter, moreover, were greatly inferior to the former in all the arts of civilization. In the homes, the dress and ornaments, the social intercourse, and all the minor features of life, they found their new neighbors above them, and they were quick to learn the use of unaccustomed comforts or luxuries. All the cities and small towns were Roman in their architecture, in their municipal organization, and in the character of their trade and intercourse; and the conquerors found it easier to accept this old-established order than to change it.

Another circumstance contributed to Latinize the German races outside of Germany. After the invention of a Gothic alphabet by Bishop Ulfilas, and his translation of the Bible, we hear no more of a written German language until the eighth century. There was at least none that was accessible to the people, and the Latin continued to be the language of government and religion. The priests were nearly all Romans, and their interest was to prevent the use of written Germanic tongues. Such learning as remained to the world was of course only to be acquired through a knowledge of Latin and Greek.

All the influences which surrounded the conquering races tended, therefore, to eradicate or change their original German characteristics. After a few centuries their descendants, in almost every instance, lost sight of their origin, and even looked with contempt upon rival people of the same blood. The Franks and Burgundians of the present day speak of themselves as "Latin races"; the blond and the blue-eyed Lombards of northern Italy, not long

570 since, hated "the Germans," as the Christian of the Middle Ages hated the Jew; and the full-blooded English or American Saxon often considers the German as a foreigner with whom he has nothing in common.

By the year 570 almost all the races outside of Germany, except the Saxons and Angles, had accepted Christianity. Within Germany, although the Christian missionaries were at work among the Alemanni, the Bavarians, and along the Rhine, the great body of the people still held to their old pagan worship. The influence of the true faith was no doubt weakened by the bitter enmity which still existed between the Athanasian and Arian sects, although the latter ceased to be powerful after the downfall of the Ostrogoths. But the Christianity which prevailed among the Franks, Burgundians, and Longobards was not pure or intelligent enough to save them from the vices which the Roman Empire left behind it. Many of their kings and nobles were polygamists, and the early history of their dynasties is a chronicle of falsehood, cruelty, and murder.

In each of the races the primitive habit of electing chiefs by the people had long since given way to an hereditary monarchy, but in other respects their political organization remained much the same. The Franks introduced into Gaul the old German division of the land into provinces, hundreds, and communities, but the king now claimed the right of appointing a count for the first, a *centenarius,* or centurion, for the second, and an elder, or head-man, for the third. The people still held their public assemblies and settled their local matters; they were all equal before the law, and the freemen paid no taxes. The right of declaring war, making peace, and other questions of national importance were decided by a general assembly of the people, at which the king presided. The political system was therefore more republican than monarchical, but it gradually lost the former character as the power of the kings increased.

The nobles had no fixed place and no special rights during the migrations of the tribes. Among the Franks they were partly formed out of the civil officers, and soon included both Romans and Gauls among their number. In Germany their hereditary succession was already secured, and they maintained their ascendency over the common people by keeping pace with the knowledge of the arts of those times, while the latter remained, for the most part, in a state of ignorance.

The cities, inhabited by Romans and Romanized Gauls, retained their old system of government, but paid a tax or tribute. Those portions of other Germanic races which had become subject to the Franks were also allowed to keep their own peculiar laws and forms of local government, which were now, for the first time, recorded in the Latin language. They were obliged to furnish a certain number of men capable of bearing arms, but it does not appear that they paid any tribute to the Franks.

Slavery still existed in the two forms which we find among the ancient Germans—chattels who were bought and sold, and dependents who were bound to give labor or tribute in return for the protection of a freeman. The Romans in Gaul were placed upon the latter footing by the Franks. The children born of marriages between them and the free took the lower and not the higher position—that is, they were dependents.

The laws in regard to crime were very rigid and severe, but not bloody. The body of the freeman, like his life, was considered inviolate, so there was no corporal punishment, and death was only inflicted in a few extreme cases. The worst crimes could be atoned for by the sacrifice of money or property. For the murder of a freeman the penalty was 200 shillings (at that time the value of 100 oxen), two-thirds of which were given to the family of the murdered person, while one-third was divided between the judge and the state. This penalty was increased threefold for the murder of a count or a soldier in the field, and more than fourfold for that of a bishop. In some of the codes the payment was fixed even for the murder of a duke or king. The slaying of a dependent or a Roman only cost half as much as that of a free Frank, while a slave was only valued at 35 shillings, or seventeen and a half oxen; the theft of a falcon trained for hunting, or a stallion, cost 10 shillings more.

Slander, insult, and false-witness were punished in the same way. If anyone falsely accused another of murder he was condemned to pay the injured person the penalty fixed for the crime of murder, and the same rule was applied to all minor accusations. The charge of witchcraft, if not proved according to the superstitious ideas of the people, was followed by the penalty of 180 shillings. Whoever called another a hare, *i. e.*, a coward, was fined 6 shillings; but if he called him a fox, *i. e.*, a thief or liar, the fine was only 3 shillings.

As the Germanic races became Christian, the power and privileges of the priesthood were manifested in the changes made in these laws. Not only was it enacted that the theft of property belonging to the church must be paid back ninefold, but the slaves of the priests were valued at double the amount fixed for the slaves of laymen. The churches became sacred, and no criminal could be seized at the foot of the altar. Those who neglected to attend worship on Sunday, three times in succession, were punished by the loss of one-third of their property. If this neglect was repeated a second time, they were made slaves, and could be sold as such by the church.

The laws of the still pagan Thuringians and Saxons, in Germany, did not differ materially from those of the Christian Franks. Justice was administered in assemblies of the people, and, in order to secure the largest expression of the public will, a heavy fine was imposed for the failure to attend. The latter feature is still retained in some of the old cantons of Switzerland.

The transition was now complete. Although the art, taste, and refinement of the Roman Empire were lost, its civilizing influence in law and civil organization survived, and slowly subdued the Germanic races which inherited its territory. But many characteristics of their early barbarism still clung to the latter, and a long period elapsed before we can properly call them a civilized people.

Chapter IX

THE KINGDOM OF THE FRANKS. 486-638 A.D.

OF all the German tribes, the most important in history are the Franks, who first become prominent in history under their great leader Clovis. In fact, the history of Germany, from the middle of the sixth to the middle of the ninth century, is that of France also. Clovis was the grandson of a petty king, whose name was Meroveus, whence he and his successors are called, in history, the Merovingian dynasty. He appears to have been a born conqueror, neither very just nor very wise in his actions, but brave, determined, and ready to use any means, good or bad, in order to attain his end.

Clovis extinguished the last remnant of Roman rule in Gaul, in the year 486, by the defeat of Syagrius and the Romans in the battle of Soissons. He was then only twenty years old, having succeeded to the throne at the age of fifteen. Shortly afterward he married the daughter of one of the Burgundian kings. She was a Christian, and endeavored, but for many years without effect, to induce him to give up his pagan faith. Finally, in a war with the Alemanni, in 496, he promised to become a Christian provided the God of the Christians would give him victory. The decisive battle was long and bloody, but it ended in the complete rout of the Alemanni, and afterward all of them who were living to the west of the Rhine became tributary to the Franks.

Clovis and 3000 of his followers were soon afterward baptized in the cathedral at Rheims, by the Bishop Remigius. When the king advanced to the baptismal font the bishop said to him: "Bow thy head, Sicambrian! worship what thou hast persecuted, persecute what thou hast worshiped!" Although nearly all the German Christians at this time were Arians, Clovis selected the Athanasian faith of Rome, and thereby secured the support of the Roman priesthood in France, which was of great service to him in his ambitious designs. This difference of faith also gave him a pretext to march against the Burgundians, in 500, and the Visigoths, in 507; both wars were considered holy by the church.

His conquest of the Visigoths was prevented, as we have seen, by the interposition of Theodoric. He was so successful that when he died, in 511, all the race to the west of the Rhine was united under his single sway. He was succeeded by four sons, of whom the eldest, Theuderic, reigned in Paris; the others chose Metz, Orleans, and Soissons for their capitals. Theuderic was a man of so much energy and prudence that he was able to control his brothers, and unite the four governments in such a way that the kingdom was saved from dismemberment.

The mother of Clovis was a runaway queen of Thuringia, whose son, Hermanfried, now ruled over that kingdom, after having deposed his two brothers. The relationship gave Theuderic a ground for interfering, and the result was a war between the Franks and the Thuringians. Theuderic collected a large army, marched into Germany in 530, procured the services of 9000 Saxons as allies, and met the Thuringians on the River Unstrut, not far from where the city of Halle now stands. Hermanfried was taken prisoner, carried to France, and treacherously thrown from a tower, after receiving great professions of friendship from his nephew, Theuderic. His family fled to Italy, and the kingdom of Thuringia, embracing nearly all central Germany, was added to that of the Franks. The northern part, however, was given to the Saxons as a reward for their assistance.

Four years afterward the brothers of Theuderic conquered the kingdom of Burgundy and annexed it to their territory. About the same time the Franks living eastward of the Rhine entered into a union with their more powerful brethren. Since both the Alemanni and the Bavarians were already tributary to the latter, the dominion of the united Franks now extended from the Atlantic nearly to the River Elbe, and from the mouth of the Rhine to the Mediterranean, with Friesland and the kingdom of the Saxons between it and the North Sea.

While Theuderic lived his brothers observed a tolerably peaceful conduct toward one another, but his death was followed by a season of war and murder. History gives us no record of another dynasty so steeped in crime as that of the Merovingians; within the compass of a few years we find a father murdering his son, a brother his brother, and a wife her husband. We can only account for the fact that the whole land was not constantly convulsed by civil war by supposing that the people retained enough of power in their national assemblies to refuse taking part in the fratricidal quarrels. It is not necessary, therefore, to recount all the details of the bloody family history. Their effect upon the people must have been in the highest degree demoralizing, yet the latter possessed enough of prudence—or perhaps of a clannish spirit, in the midst of a much larger Roman and Gallic population—to hold the Frankish kingdom together, while its rulers were doing their best to split it to pieces.

The result of all the quarreling and murdering was that in 558 Clotar, the youngest son of Clovis, became the sole monarch. After forty-seven years of divided rule the kingly power was again in a single hand, and there seemed to be a chance for peace and progress. But Clotar died within three years, and, like his father, left four sons to divide his power. The first thing they did was to fight; then, being perhaps rather equally matched, they agreed to portion the kingdom. Charibert reigned in Paris, Guntram in Orleans, Chilperic in Soissons, and Sigbert in Metz, but the exact boundaries between their territories are uncertain.

About this time the Avars, coming from Hungary, had invaded Thuringia, and were inciting the people to rebellion against the Franks. Sigbert immediately marched against them, drove them back, and established his authority over the Thuringians. On returning home he found that his brother Chilperic had taken possession of his capital and many smaller towns. Chilperic was forced to retreat, lost his own kingdom in turn, and only received it again through the generosity of Sigbert—the first and only instance of such a virtue in the Merovingian line of kings. Sigbert seems to have inherited the abilities, without the vices, of his grandfather Clovis. When the Avars made a second invasion into Germany he was not only defeated, but taken prisoner by them. Nevertheless, he immediately acquired such influence over their khan, or chieftain, that he persuaded the latter to set him free, to make a treaty of peace and friendship, and to return with his Avars to Hungary.

In the year 568 Charibert died in Paris, leaving no heirs. A new strife instantly broke out among the three remaining brothers; but it was for a time suspended, owing to the approach of a common danger. The Longobards, now masters of northern Italy, crossed the Alps and began to overrun Switzerland, which the Franks possessed, through their victories over the Burgundians and the Alemanni. Sigbert and Guntram united their forces, and repelled the invasion with much slaughter.

Then broke out in France a series of family wars, darker and bloodier than any which had gone before. The strife between the sons of Clotar and their children and grandchildren desolated France for forty years, and became all the more terrible because the women of the family entered into it with the men. All these Christian kings, like their father, were polygamists, with the exception of Sigbert; he had but one wife, Brunhilde, the daughter of a king of the Visigoths, a stately, handsome, intelligent woman, but proud and ambitious.

Either the power and popularity or the rich marriage-portion which Sigbert acquired with Brunhilde induced his brother, Chilperic, to ask the hand of her sister, the Princess Galsunta of Spain. It was granted to him on condition that he would put away all his wives and live with her alone. He accepted the condition, and was married to Galsunta. One of the women sent away was Fredegunde, who soon found means to recover her former influence over Chilperic's mind. It was not long before Galsunta was found dead in her bed, and within a week Fredegunde, the murderess, became queen in her stead. Brunhilde called upon Sigbert to revenge her sister's death, and then began that terrible history of crime and hatred which was celebrated, centuries afterward, in the famous "*Nibelungenlied,*" or "Lay of the Nibelungs."

In the year 575 Sigbert gained a complete victory over Chilperic, and was lifted upon a shield by the warriors of the latter, who hailed him as their king. In that instant he was stabbed in the back, and died upon the field of his triumph. Chilperic resumed his sway, and soon took Brunhilde prisoner, while her young son, Childebert, escaped to Germany. But his own son, Merwig, espoused Brunhilde's cause, secretly released her from prison, and then married her. A war next arose between father and son, in which the former was successful. He cut off Merwig's long hair and shut him up in a monastery; but for some unexplained reason he allowed Brunhilde to go free. In the meantime Fredegunde had borne three sons, who all died soon after their birth. She accused her own stepson of having caused their deaths by witchcraft, and he and his mother, one of Chilperic's former wives, were put to death.

Both Chilperic and his brother Guntram, who reigned at

Orleans, were without male heirs. At this juncture the German chiefs and nobles demanded to have Childebert, the young son of Sigbert and Brunhilde, who had taken refuge among them, recognized as the heir to the Frankish throne. Chilperic consented, on condition that Childebert, with such forces as he could command, would march with him against Guntram, who had despoiled him of a great deal of his territory. The treaty was made, in spite of the opposition of Brunhilde, whose sister's murder was not yet avenged, and the civil wars were renewed. Both sides gained or lost alternately, without any decided result, until the assassination of Chilperic, by an unknown hand, in 584. A few months before his death Fredegunde had borne him another son, Clotar, who lived, and was at once presented by his mother as Childebert's rival to the throne.

The struggle between the two widowed queens, Brunhilde and Fredegunde, was for a while delayed by the appearance of a new claimant, Gundobald, who had been a fugitive in Constantinople for many years, and declared that he was Chilperic's brother. He obtained the support of many Austrasian (German) princes, and was for a time so successful that Fredegunde was forced to take refuge with Guntram at Orleans. The latter also summoned Childebert to his capital, and persuaded him to make a truce with Fredegunde and her adherents, in order that both might act against their common rival. Gundobald and his followers were soon destroyed; Guntram died in 593, and Childebert was at once accepted as his successor. His kingdom included that of Charibert, whose capital was Paris, and that of his father, Sigbert, embracing all Frankish Germany. But the nobles and people, accustomed to conspiracy, treachery, and crime, could no longer be depended upon, as formerly. They were beginning to return to their former system of living upon war and pillage, instead of the honest arts of peace.

Fredegunde still held the kingdom of Chilperic for her son Clotar. After strengthening herself by secret intrigues with the Frankish nobles, she raised an army, put herself at its head, and marched against Childebert, who was defeated and soon afterward poisoned, after having reigned only three years. His realm was divided between his two young sons, one receiving Burgundy and the other Germany, under the guardianship of their grandmother Brunhilde. Fredegunde followed up her success, took Paris and Orleans from the heirs of Childebert, and died in 597, leaving her son Clotar, then in his fourteenth year, as king of more than half of France. He was crowned as Clotar II.

Death placed Brunhilde's rival out of the reach of her revenge, but she herself might have secured the whole kingdom of the Franks for her two grandsons had she not quarreled with one and stirred up war between them. Finding that her cause was desperate, Brunhilde procured the assistance of Clotar II. for herself and her favorite grandson, Theuderic. The fortune of war now turned, and before long the other grandson, Theudebert, was taken prisoner. By his brother's order he was formally deposed from his kingly authority, and then executed; the brains of his infant son were dashed out against a stone.

It was not long before this crime was avenged. A quarrel in regard to the division of the spoils arose between Theuderic and Clotar II. The former died in the beginning of the war which followed, leaving four young sons to the care of their great-grandmother, the queen Brunhilde. Clotar II. immediately marched against her, but, knowing her ability and energy, he obtained a promise from the nobles of Burgundy and Germany who were unfriendly to Brunhilde that they would come over to his side at the critical moment. The aged queen had called her people to arms, and, like her rival, Fredegunde, put herself at their head; but when the armies met, on the River Aisne in Champagne, the traitors in her own camp joined Clotar II. and the struggle was ended without a battle. Brunhilde, then eighty years old, was taken prisoner, cruelly tortured for three days, and then tied by her gray hair to the tail of a wild horse and dragged to death. The four sons of Theuderic were put to death at the same time, and thus, in the year 613, Clotar II. became king of all the Franks. A priest named Fredegar, who wrote his biography, says of him: " He was a most patient man, learned and pious, and kind and sympathizing toward everyone!"

Clotar II. possessed, at least, energy enough to preserve a sway which was based on a long succession of the worst crimes that disgrace humanity. In 622, six years before his death, he made his oldest son, Dagobert, a boy of sixteen, king of the German half of his realm, but was obliged, immediately afterward, to assist him against the Saxons. He entered their territory, seized the people, massacred all who proved to be taller than his own two-handed sword, and then returned to France without having subdued the spirit or received the allegiance of the bold race. Nothing of importance occurred during the remainder of his reign; he died in 628, leaving his kingdom to his two sons, Dagobert and Charibert. The former easily possessed himself of the lion's share, giving his younger brother only a small strip of territory along the River Loire. Charibert, however, drove the last remnant of the Visigoths into Spain, and added the country between the Garonne and the Pyrenees to his little kingdom. The name of Aquitaine was given to this region, and Charibert's descendants became its dukes, subject to the kings of the Franks.

Dagobert had been carefully educated by Pippin of Landen, the royal steward of Clotar II., and by Arnulf, the Bishop of Metz. He had no quality of greatness, but he promised to be, at least, a good and just sovereign. He became at once popular with the masses, who began to long for peace, and for the restoration of rights which had been partly lost during the civil wars. The nobles, however, who had drawn the greatest advantage from those wars, during which their support was purchased by one side or the other, grew dissatisfied. They cunningly aroused in Dagobert the love of luxury and the sensual vices which had ruined his ancestors, and thus postponed the reign of law and justice to which the people were looking forward.

In fact, that system of freedom and equality which the Germanic races had so long possessed was already shaken to its very base. During the long and bloody feuds of the Merovingian kings many changes had been made in the details of government, all tending to increase the power of the nobles, the civil officers, and the dignitaries of the church. Wealth—the bribes paid for their support—had accumulated in the hands of these classes, while the farmers, mechanics, and tradesmen, plundered in turn by both parties, had constantly grown poorer. Although the external signs of civilization had increased, the race had already lost much of its moral character and some of the best features of its political system.

There are few chronicles which inform us of the affairs of Germany during this period. The Avars, after their treaty of peace with Sigbert, directed their incursions against the Bavarians, but without gaining any permanent advantage. On the other hand, the Slavonic tribes, especially the Bohemians, united under the rule of a renegade Frank, whose name was Samo, and who acquired a part of Thuringia, after defeating the Frankish army which was sent against him. The Saxons and Thuringians then took the war into their own hands, and drove back Samo and his Slavonic hordes. By this victory the Saxons released themselves from the payment of an annual tribute to the Frankish kings, and the Thuringians became strong enough to organize themselves again as a people and elect their own duke. The Franks endeavored to suppress this new organization, but they were defeated by the duke, Radulf, nearly on the same spot where, just one hundred years before, Theuderic, the son of Clovis, had crushed the Thuringian kingdom. From that time Thuringia was placed on the same footing as Bavaria, tributary to the Franks, but locally independent.

King Dagobert, weak, swayed by whatever influence was nearest, and voluptuous rather than cruel, died in 638, before he had time to do much evil. He was the last of the Merovingian line who exercised any actual power. The dynasty existed for a century longer, but its monarchs were mere puppets in the hands of stronger men. Its history, from the beginning, is well illustrated by a tradition current among the people concerning the mother of Clovis. They relate that soon after her marriage she had a vision, in which she gave birth to a lion (Clovis), whose descendants were wolves and bears, and their descendants, in turn, frisky dogs.

Before the death of Dagobert—in fact, during the life of Clotar II.—a new power had grown up within the kingdom of the Franks which gradually pushed the Merovingian dynasty out of its place. The history of this power, after 638, becomes the history of the realm, and we now turn from the bloody kings to trace its origin, rise, and final triumph.

Chapter X

THE DYNASTY OF THE MAYORS OF THE PALACE
638-768 A. D.

WE have mentioned Pippin of Landen as the royal steward of Clotar II. His office gave birth to the new power which grew up beside the Merovingian rule and finally suppressed it. In the chronicles of the time the officer is called the Majordomus of the king,—a word which may be translated "Mayor of the Palace" or "Steward of the Royal Household"; but in reality it embraced much more extended and important powers than the title would imply. In their conquests the Franks—as we have already stated—usually claimed at least one-third of the territory which fell into their hands. A part of this was portioned out among the chief men and the soldiers; a part was set aside as the king's share, and still another part became the common property of the people. The latter, therefore, fell into the habit of electing a steward to guard and superintend this property in their interest, and as the kings became involved in their family feuds the charge of the royal estates was intrusted to the hands of the same steward.

The latter estates soon became, by conquest, so extensive and important that the king gave the use of many of them for a term of years, or for life, to private individuals, in return for military services. Such an estate came to be called a fief or feod, whence the term "feudal system," which, gradually modified by time, grew from this basis. The importance of the royal steward in the kingdom is thus explained. The office, at first, had probably a mere business character. After the time of Clovis the civil wars by which the estates of the king and the people became subject to constant change gave the steward a political power, which increased with each generation. He stood between the monarch and his subjects, with the best opportunity for acquiring an ascendency over the minds of both. At first he was only elected for a year, and his reëlection depended on the honesty and ability with which he had discharged his duties. During the convulsions of the dynasty he, in common with king and nobles, gained what rights the people lost; he began to retain his office for a longer time, then for life, and finally demanded that it should be hereditary in his family.

The royal stewards of Burgundy and Germany played an important part in the last struggle between Clotar II. and Brunhilde. When the successful king, in 622, found that the increasing difference of language and habits between the eastern and western portions of his realm required a separation of the government, and made his young son, Dagobert, ruler over the German half, he was compelled to recognize Pippin of Landen as his mayor of the palace, and to trust Dagobert entirely to his hands. The dividing line between "Austrasia" and "Neustria," as the eastern and western parts of the Frankish kingdom were called, was drawn along the chain of the Vosges through the forest of Ardennes, and terminated near the mouth of the Schelde—almost the same line which divides the German and French languages at this day.

Pippin was a Frank, born in the Netherlands, a man of energy and intelligence, but of little principle. He had, nevertheless, shrewdness enough to see the necessity of maintaining the unity and peace of the kingdom, and he endeavored, in conjunction with Bishop Arnulf of Metz, to make a good king of Dagobert. They made him, indeed, amiable and well-meaning, but they could not overcome the instability of his character. After Clotar II.'s death, in 628, Dagobert passed the remaining ten years of his life in France, under the control of others, and the actual government of Germany was exercised by Pippin.

The period of transition between the power of the kings, gradually sinking, and the power of the mayors of the palace, steadily rising, lasted about fifty years. The latter power, however, was not allowed to increase without frequent struggles, partly from the jealousy of the nobility and priesthood, partly from the resistance of the people to the extinction of their remaining rights. But, after the devastation left behind by the fratricidal wars of the Merovingians, all parties felt the necessity of a strong and well-regulated government, and the long experience of the mayors gave them the advantage.

Grimoald, the son of Pippin, and his successor as mayor in Germany, made an attempt to usurp the royal power, but failed.

This event led the Franks, in 670—when the whole kingdom was again united under Childeric II.—to decree that the mayors of the palace should be elected annually by the people, as in the beginning. But when Childeric II., like most of his predecessors, was murdered, the deposed mayor regained his power, forced the people to accept him, and attempted to extend his government over Germany. In spite of a fierce resistance, headed by Pippin of Heristal, the grandson of Pippin of Landen, Grimoald partly maintained his authority until the year 681, when he was murdered in his turn.

Pippin of Heristal was also the grandson of Arnulf, Bishop of Metz, whose son, Anchises, had married Begga, the daughter of Pippin of Landen. He was of Roman blood by his father's. and Frankish by his mother's side. As soon as his authority was secured, as Majordomus of Germany, he invaded France, and a desperate struggle for the stewardship of the whole kingdom ensued. It was ended in 687 by the battle of Testri, in which Pippin was victorious. He used his success with a moderation very rare in those days; he did honor to the Frankish king, Theuderic III., who had fallen into his hands, spared the lives and possessions of all who had fought against him, on their promise not to take up arms against his authority, and even continued many of the chief officials of the Franks in their former places.

From this date the Merovingian monarch became a shadow. Pippin paid him all external signs of allegiance, kept up the ceremonies of his court, supplied him with ample revenues, and governed the kingdom in his name; but the actual power was concentrated in his own hands. France, Switzerland, and the greater part of Germany were subjected to his government, although there were still elements of discontent within the realm, and of trouble outside of its borders. The dependent dukedoms of Aquitaine, Burgundy, Alemannia, Bavaria, and Thuringia were restless under the yoke; the Saxons and Frisians on the north were hostile and defiant, and the Slavonic races all along the eastern frontier had not yet given up their invasions.

Pippin, like all the French rulers after him, until the Revolution of 1789, perceived the advantage of having the Church on his side. Moreover, he was the grandson of a bishop, which circumstance—although it did not prevent him from taking two wives—enabled him better to understand the power of the ecclesiastical system of Rome. In the early part of the seventh century several Christian missionaries, principally Irish, had begun their labors among the Alemanni and the Bavarians, but the greater part of these people, with all the Thuringians, Saxons, and Frisians, were still worshipers of the old pagan gods. Pippin saw that through the church these Germans might be civilized and become accustomed to authority and obedience. He therefore lent his aid to the monks, and all the southern part of Germany became Christian in a few years. Force was employed, as well as persuasion; but at that time the end was considered to sanction any means.

Pippin's rule (we cannot call it reign) was characterized by the greatest activity, patience, and prudence. From year to year the kingdom of the Franks became better organized and stronger in all its features of government. Brittany, Burgundy, and Aquitaine were kept quiet; the northern part of Holland was conquered and immediately given into the charge of a band of Anglo-Saxon monks; and Germany, although restless and dissatisfied, was held more firmly than ever. Pippin of Heristal, while he was simply called Majordomus, exercised a wider power than any monarch of his time.

When he died, in the year 714, the kingdom was for a while convulsed by feuds which threatened to repeat the bloody annals of the Merovingians. His heirs were Theudowald, his grandson by his wife Plektrude, and Karl and Hildebrand, his sons by his wife Alpheid. He chose the former as his successor, and Plektrude, in order to suppress any opposition to this arrangement, imprisoned her stepson Karl. But the Burgundians immediately revolted, elected one of their chiefs, Raginfried, to the office of royal steward, and defeated the Franks in a battle in which Theudowald was slain. Karl, having escaped from prison, put himself at the head of affairs, supported by a majority of the German Franks. He was a man of strong personal influence, and inspired his followers with enthusiasm and faith; but his chances seemed very desperate. His stepmother, Plektrude, opposed him; the Burgundians and French Franks, led by Raginfried, were marching against him, and Radbod, Duke of Friesland, invaded the territory which he was bound by his office to defend.

Karl had the choice of three enemies, and he took the one which seemed most dangerous. He attacked Radbod, but was forced to fall back, and this repulse emboldened the Saxons to make a foray into the land of the Hessians, as the old Germanic tribe of the Chatti were now called. Radbod advanced to Cologne, which was held by Plektrude and her followers; at the same time Raginfried approached from the west, and the city was thus besieged by two separate armies, hostile to each other, yet both having the same end in view. Between the two, Karl managed to escape, and retreated to the forest of Ardennes, where he set about reconstructing his shattered army.

Cologne was too strong to be assailed, and Plektrude, who possessed large treasures, soon succeeded in buying off Radbod and Raginfried. The latter, on his return to France, came into collision with Karl, who, though repelled at first, finally drove him in confusion to the walls of Paris. Karl then suddenly wheeled about and marched against Cologne, which fell into his hands: Plektrude, leaving her wealth as his booty, fled to Bavaria. This victory secured to Karl the stewardship over Germany, but a king was wanting to make the forms of royalty complete. The direct Merovingian line had run out, and Raginfried had been obliged to take a monk, an offshoot of the family, and place him on the throne, under the name of Chilperic II. Karl, after a little search, discovered another Merovingian, whom he installed in the German half of the kingdom, as Clotar III. That done, he attacked the invading Saxons, defeated and drove them beyond the Weser River.

He was now free to meet the rebellious Franks of France, who in the meantime had strengthened themselves by offering to Duke Eudo of Aquitaine the acknowledgment of his independent sovereignty in return for his support. A decisive battle was fought in the year 719, and Karl was again victorious. The nominal king, Chilperic II., Raginfried, and Duke Eudo fled into the south of France. Karl began negotiations with the latter for the delivery of the fugitive king; but just at this time his own puppet, Clotar III., happened to die, and, as there was no other Merovingian left, the pretense upon which his stewardship was based obliged him to recognize Chilperic II. Raginfried resigned his office, and Karl was at last nominal steward, and actual monarch, of the kingdom of the Franks.

His first movement was to deliver Germany from its invaders, and reëstablished the dependency of its native dukes. The death of the fierce Radbod enabled him to reconquer western Friesland; the Saxons were then driven back and firmly held within their original boundaries, and finally the Alemanni and Bavarians were compelled to make a formal acknowledgment of the Frankish rule. As regards Thuringia, which seems to have remained a dukedom, the chronicles of the time give us little information. It is probable, however, that the invasions of the Saxons on the north and the Slavonic tribes on the east gave the people of central Germany no opportunity to resist the authority of the Franks. The work of conversion, encouraged by Pippin of Heristal as a political measure, was still continued by the zeal of the Irish and Anglo-Saxon missionaries, and in the beginning of the eighth century it received a powerful impulse from a new apostle, a man of singular ability and courage.

He was a Saxon of England, born in Devonshire in the year 680, and Winifred by name. Educated in a monastery at a time when the struggle between Christianity and the old Germanic faith was at its height, he resolved to devote his life to missionary labors. He first went to Friesland, during the reign of Radbod, and spent three years in a vain attempt to convert the people. Then he visited Rome, offered his services to the Pope, and was commissioned to undertake the work of Christianizing central Germany. On reaching the field of his labors he manifested such zeal and intelligence that he soon became the leader and director of the missionary enterprise. It is related that at Geismar, in the land of the Hessians, he cut down with his own hands an aged oak tree sacred to the god Thor. This and other similar acts inspired the people with such awe that they began to believe that their old gods were either dead or helpless, and they submissively accepted the new faith without understanding its character, or following it otherwise than in observing the external forms of worship.

On a second visit to Rome, Winifred was appointed by the Pope Archbishop of Mayence, and ordered to take, thenceforth, the name of Boniface (Benefactor), by which he is known in history. He was confirmed in this office by Karl, to whom he had rendered valuable political services by the conversion of the Thuringians, and who had a genuine respect for his lofty and unselfish character. The spot where he built the first Christian church in central Germany, about twelve miles from Gotha, at the foot of the Thuringian Mountains, is now marked by a colossal candlestick of granite, surmounted by a golden flame.

After Karl had been for several years actively employed in regulating the affairs of his great realm, and especially, with the aid of Bishop Boniface, in establishing an authority in Germany equal to that he possessed in France, he had every prospect of a powerful and peaceful rule. But suddenly a new danger threatened not only the Franks, but all Europe. The Saracens, crossing from Africa, defeated the Visigoths and slew Roderick, their king, in the year 711. Gradually possessing themselves of all Spain, they next collected a tremendous army, and in 731, under the command of Abderrahman, viceroy of the caliph of Damascus, set out for the conquest of France. Thus the new Christian faith of Europe, still engaged in quelling the strength of the ancient paganism in Germany, was suddenly called upon to meet, in the heart of France itself, the newer faith of Mohammed, which had determined to subdue the world.

Not only France, but the Eastern Empire, Italy, and England looked to Karl in this emergency. The Saracens crossed the Pyrenees with 350,000 warriors, accompanied by their wives and children, as if they were sure of victory and meant to possess the land. Karl called the military strength of the whole broad kingdom into the field, collected an army nearly equal in numbers, and, finally, in October, 732, the two hosts stood face to face, near the city of Poitiers. It was a struggle almost as grand, and fraught with as important consequences to the world, as that of Aëtius and Attila, nearly three hundred years before. Six days were spent in preparations, and on the seventh the battle began. The Saracens attacked with that daring and impetuosity which had gained them so many victories; but, as the old chronicle says, "the Franks, with their strong hearts and powerful bodies, stood like a wall, and hewed down the Arabs with iron hands." When night fell 200,000 dead and wounded lay upon the field. Karl made preparations for resuming the battle on the following morning, but he found no enemy. The Saracens had retired during the night, leaving their camps and stores behind them, and their leader, Abderrahman, among the slain. This was the first great check the cause of Islam received, after a series of victories more wonderful than those of Rome. From that day the people bestowed upon Karl the surname of Martel, the Hammer, and as Charles Martel he is best known in history.

He was not able to follow up his advantage immediately, for the possibility of his defeat by the Saracens had emboldened his enemies at home and abroad to rise against his authority. The

Frisians, under Poppo, their new duke, made another invasion; the Saxons followed their example; the Burgundians attempted a rebellion, and the sons of Duke Eudo of Aquitaine, imitating the example of their ancestors, the Merovingian kings, began to quarrel about the succession. While Karl Martel, as we must now call him, was engaged in suppressing all these troubles, the Saracens, with the aid of the malcontent Burgundians, occupied all the territory bordering the Mediterranean, on both sides of the Rhone. Karl was not free to march against them until 737, when he made his appearance with a large army, retook Avignon, Arles, and Nismes, and left the Saracens in possession only of Narbonne, which was too strongly fortified to be taken by assault.

Karl Martel was recalled to the opposite end of the kingdom by a fresh invasion of the Saxons. When this had been repelled and the northern frontier in Germany strengthened against the hostile race, the Burgundian nobles in Provence sought a fresh alliance with the Saracens, and compelled him to return instantly from the Weser to the shores of the Mediterranean. He suppressed the rebellion, but was obliged to leave the Saracens in possession of a part of the coast, between the Rhone and the Pyrenees. During his stay in the south of France the Pope, Gregory II., entreated him to come to Italy and relieve Rome from the oppression of Luitprand, king of the Longobards. He did not accept the invitation, however, but it appears that, as mediator, he assisted in concluding a treaty between the Pope and king, which arranged their differences for a time.

Worn out by his life of marches and battles, Karl Martel became prematurely old, and died in 741, at the age of fifty, after a reign of twenty-seven years. He inherited the activity, the ability, and also the easy principles of his father, Pippin of Heristal. But his authority was greatly increased, and he used it to lessen the remnant of their original freedom which the people still retained. The free Germanic Franks were accustomed to meet every year, in the month of March (as on the *Champ de Mars*, or March-field, at Paris), and discuss all national matters. In the time of Clovis the royal dependents were added to the free citizens and allowed an equal voice, which threw an additional power into the hands of the monarch. Karl Martel convoked the national assembly, declared war or made peace, without asking the people's consent; while, by adding the priesthood and the nobles, with their dependents, to the number of those entitled to vote, he broke down the ancient power of the state and laid the foundation of a more absolute system.

Shortly before his death Karl Martel summoned a council of the princes and nobles of his realm and obtained their consent that his eldest son, Karloman, should succeed him as Majordomus in Germany, and his second son, Pippin, surnamed the Short, as Majordomus in France and Burgundy. The Merovingian throne had already been vacant for four years, but the monarch had become so insignificant that this circumstance was scarcely noticed. On his death-bed, however, Karl Martel was persuaded by Swanhilde, one of his wives, to bequeath a part of his dominions to her son, Grifo. This gave rise to great discontent among the people, and furnished the subject dukes of Bavaria, Alemannia, and Aquitaine with another opportunity for endeavoring to regain their lost independence.

Karloman and Pippin, in order to strengthen their cause, sought for a descendant of the Merovingian line, and, having found him, they proclaimed him king, under the name of Childeric III. This step secured to them the allegiance of the Franks, but the conflict with the refractory dukedoms lasted several years. Battles were fought on the Loire, on the Lech, in Bavaria, and then again on the Saxon frontier; finally Aquitaine was subdued, Alemannia lost its duke and became a Frankish province, and Bavaria agreed to a truce. In this struggle Karloman and Pippin received important support from Boniface, a part of whose aim it was to bring all the Christian communities to acknowledge the Pope of Rome as the sole head of the church. They gave him their support in return, and thus the Franks were drawn into closer relations with the ecclesiastical power.

In the year 747 Karloman resigned his power, went to Rome, and was made a monk by Pope Zacharias. Soon afterward Grifo, the son of Karl Martel and Swanhilde, made a second attempt to conquer his rights, with the aid of the Saxons. Pippin the Short allied himself with the Wends, a Slavonic race settled in Prussia, and ravaged the Saxon land, forcing a part of the inhabitants, at the point of the sword, to be baptized as Christians. Grifo fled to Bavaria, where the duke, Tassilo, espoused his cause, but Pippin the Short followed close upon his heels with so strong a force that resistance was no longer possible. A treaty was made whereby Grifo was consigned to private life, the hereditary rights of the

Bavarian dukes recognized by the Franks, and the sovereignty of the Franks accepted by the Bavarians.

Pippin the Short had found, through his own experience as well as that of his ancestors, that the pretense of a Merovingian king only worked confusion in the realm of the Franks, since it furnished to the subordinate races and principalities a constant pretext for revolt. When, therefore, Pope Zacharias found himself threatened by Aistulf, the successor of Luitprand as king of the Longobards, and sent an embassy to Pippin the Short, appealing for his assistance, the latter returned to him this question: "Does the kingdom belong to him who exercises the power, without the name, or to him who bears the name, without possessing the power?" The answer was what he expected; a general assembly was called together in 752, Pippin was anointed king by the Archbishop Boniface, then lifted on a shield, according to the ancient custom, and accepted by the nobles and people. The shadowy Merovingian king, Childeric III., was shorn of his long hair, the sign of royalty, and sent into a monastery, where he disappeared from the world. Pippin now possessed sole and unlimited sway over the kingdom of the Franks, and named himself "king by the Grace of God,"—an example which has been followed by most monarchs down to our day. On the other hand, the decision of Zacharias was a great step gained by the Papal power, which thenceforth began to exalt its prerogatives over those of the rulers of nations.

Pippin's first duty, as king, was to repel a new invasion of the Saxons. His power was so much increased by his title that he was able, at once, to lead against them such a force that they were compelled to pay a tribute of three hundred horses annually, and to allow Christian missionaries to reside among them. The latter condition was undoubtedly the suggestion of Boniface, who determined to carry the cross to the North Sea, and complete the conversion of Germany. He himself undertook a mission to Friesland, where he had failed as a young monk, and there, in 755, at the age of seventy-five, he was slain by the fierce pagans. He died like a martyr, refusing to defend himself, and was enrolled among the number of saints.

In the year 754 Pope Stephen II., the successor of Zacharias, appeared in France as a personal supplicant for the aid of King Pippin. Aistulf, the Longobard king, who had driven the Byzantines out of the Exarchy of Ravenna, was marching against Rome, which still nominally belonged to the Eastern Empire. To make his entreaty more acceptable, the Pope bestowed on Pippin the title of "Patrician of Rome," and solemnly crowned him and his young sons, Karl and Karloman, in the chapel of St. Denis, near Paris. At the same time he issued a ban of excommunication against all persons who should support a monarch belonging to any other than the reigning dynasty.

Pippin first endeavored to negotiate with Aistulf, but failing therein, he marched into Italy, defeated the Longobards in several battles, and besieged the king in Pavia, his capital. Aistulf was compelled to promise that he would give up the Exarchy and leave the Pope in peace; but no sooner had Pippin returned to France than he violated all his promises. On the renewed appeals of the Pope, Pippin came to Italy a second time, again defeated the Longobards, and forced Aistulf not only to fulfill his former promises, but also to pay the expenses of the second war. He remained in Italy until the conditions were fulfilled, and his son Karl (Charlemagne), then fourteen years old, spent some time in Rome.

The Byzantine emperor demanded that the cities of the Exarchy should be given back to him, but Pippin transferred them to the Pope, who already exercised a temporal power in Rome. They were held by the latter, for some time afterward, in the name of the Eastern Empire. The worldly sovereignty of the Popes grew gradually from this basis, but was not yet recognized, or even claimed. Pippin, nevertheless, greatly strengthened the influence of the church by gifts of land, by increasing the privileges of the priesthood, and by allowing the ecclesiastical synods, in many cases, to interfere in matters of civil government.

The only other events of his reign were another expedition against the unsubdued Saxons and the expulsion of the Saracens from the territory they held between Narbonne and the Pyrenees. He died in 768, king instead of merely majordomus, leaving to his sons, Karl and Karloman, a greater, stronger, and better organized dominion than Europe had seen since the downfall of the Roman Empire.

Chapter XI

THE REIGN OF CHARLEMAGNE. 768-814 A. D.

WHEN King Pippin the Short felt that his end was near he called an assembly of dukes, nobles and priests, which was held at St. Denis, for the purpose of installing his sons, Karl and Karloman, as his successors. As he had observed how rapidly the French and German halves of his empire were separating themselves from each other, in language, habits, and national character, he determined to change the former boundary between "Austrasia" and "Neustria," which ran nearly north and south, and to substitute an arbitrary line running east and west. This division was accepted by the assembly, but its unpractical character was manifested as soon as Karl and Karloman began to reign. There was nothing but trouble for three years, at the end of which time the latter died, leaving Karl, in 771, sole monarch of the Frankish Empire.

This great man, who, looking backwards, saw not his equal in history until he beheld Julius Cæsar, now began his splendid single reign of forty-three years. We must henceforth call him Charlemagne, the French form of the Latin Carolus Magnus, Karl the Great, since by that name he is known in all English history. He was at this time twenty-nine years old, and in the pride of perfect strength and manly beauty. He was nearly seven feet high, admirably proportioned, and so developed by toil, the chase, and warlike exercises that few men of his time equaled him in muscular strength. His face was noble and commanding, his hair blond or light brown, and his eyes a clear, sparkling blue. He performed the severest duties of his office with a quiet dignity which heightened the impression of his intellectual power; he was terrible and inflexible in crushing all who attempted to interfere with his work; but at the chase, the banquet, or in the circle of his family and friends no one was more frank, joyous, and kindly than he.

His dynasty is called in history, after him, the Carolingian, although Pippin of Landen was its founder. The name of Charlemagne is extended backwards over the mayors of the palace, his ancestors, and after him over a century of successors who gradually faded out like the Merovingian line. He stands alone, midway between the Roman Empire and the Middle Ages, as the one supreme historical landmark. The task of his life was to extend, secure, regulate, and develop the power of a great empire, much of which was still in a state of semibarbarism. He was no imitator of the Roman emperors; his genius, as a statesman, lay in his ability to understand that new forms of government and a new development of civilization had become necessary. Like all strong and far-seeing rulers, he was despotic, and often fiercely cruel. Those who interfered with his plans—even the members of his own family—were relentlessly sacrificed. On the other hand, although he strengthened the power of the nobility, he never neglected the protection of the people; half his days were devoted to war, yet he encouraged learning, literature, and the arts, and while he crushed the independence of the races, he gave them a higher civilization in its stead.

Charlemagne first marched against the turbulent Saxons, but before they were reduced to order he was called to Italy by the appeal of Pope Adrian for help against the Longobards. The king of the latter, Desiderius, was the father of Hermingarde, Charlemagne's second wife, whom he had repudiated and sent home soon after his accession to the throne. Karloman's widow had also claimed the protection of Desiderius, and she, with her sons, was living at the latter's court. But these ties had no weight with Charlemagne; he collected a large army at Geneva, crossed the Alps by the pass of St. Bernard, conquered all northern Italy, and besieged Desiderius in Pavia. He then marched to Rome, where Pope Adrian received him as a liberator. A procession of the clergy and people went forth to welcome him, chanting: "Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord!" He took part in the ceremonies of Easter, 774, which were celebrated with great pomp in the Cathedral of St. Peter. Over the grave of the apostle the Pope and the Frankish king swore mutual devotion and fidelity. A few days later Charles solemnly ratified the donation of land that Pippin had made to the church, and caused a document to be drawn up in three copies to commemorate the occasion. The wording of this deed has come down to us—in a changed form, indeed, for a later clause was added by some churchly scribe to make Charles's gift seem to include most of northern Italy. The extravagance of the claim has led men to doubt the genuineness of the whole document, but recent investigation has pointed out where the interpolation begins, and how, originally written on the margin of the manuscript, it afterward crept into the text of the famous "Donation of Charlemagne."

In May Pavia fell into Charlemagne's hands. Desiderius was sent into a monastery, the widow and children of Karloman disappeared, and the kingdom of the Longobards, or Lombards, as they are called henceforth, was annexed to the empire of the Franks. The Lombard power was declared at an end, and Charlemagne took the title of "King of the Lombards and Patrician of the Romans," thus inaugurating a new era in the history of Italy. The people were allowed to retain both their laws and their dukes, or local rulers, but in spite of these privileges they soon rose in revolt against their conqueror. Charlemagne had returned to finish his work with the Saxons, when in 776 this revolt called him back to Italy. The movement was temporarily suppressed, and he hastened to Germany to resume his interrupted task.

The Saxons were the only remaining German people who resisted both the Frankish rule and the introduction of Christianity. They held all of what is now Westphalia, Hanover, and Brunswick, to the River Elbe, and were still strong, in spite of their constant and wasting wars. During his first campaign, in 772, Charlemagne had overrun Westphalia, taken possession of the fortified camp of the Saxons, and destroyed the "Irminpillar," which seems to have been a monument erected to commemorate the defeat of Varus by Hermann. The people submitted, and promised allegiance; but the following year, aroused by the appeals of their duke or chieftain, Wittekind, they rebelled in a body. The Frisians joined them, the priests and missionaries were slaughtered or expelled, and all the former Saxon territory, nearly to the Rhine, was retaken by Wittekind.

Charlemagne collected a large army and renewed the war in 775. He pressed forward as far as the River Weser, when, carelessly dividing his forces, one-half of them were cut to pieces, and he was obliged to retreat. His second expedition to Italy, at this time, was made with all possible haste, and a new army was ready on his return. Westphalia was now wasted with fire and sword, and the people generally submitted, although they were compelled to be baptized as Christians. In May, 777, Charlemagne held an assembly of the people at Paderborn; nearly all the Saxon nobles attended and swore fealty to him, while many of them submitted to the rite of baptism.

At this assembly suddenly appeared a deputation of Saracen princes from Spain, who sought Charlemagne's help against the tyranny of the caliph of Cordova. He was induced by religious or ambitious motives to consent, neglecting for the time the great work he had undertaken toward reducing the Saxons to submission. In the summer of 778 he crossed the Pyrenees, took the cities of Pampeluna and Saragossa, and delivered all Spain north of the Ebro River from the hands of the Saracen caliph. This territory was attached to the Frankish kingdom as the Spanish Mark, or "border district"; it was inhabited both by Saracens and Franks, who dwelt side by side and became more or less united in language, habits, and manners.

As he was returning to France Charlemagne was attacked by a large force of the native Basques, in the pass of Roncesvalles, in the Pyrenees. His warriors, taken by surprise in the narrow ravine and crushed by rocks rolled down upon them from above, could make little resistance, and the rear column, with all the plunder gathered in Spain, fell into the enemy's hands. Here was slain the famous paladin, Roland, the Count of Brittany, who became the theme of poets down to the time of Ariosto. Charlemagne was so infuriated by his defeat that he hanged the Duke of Aquitaine, on the charge of treachery, because his territory included a part of the lands of the Basques.

Upon the heels of this disaster came the news that the Saxons had again risen, under the lead of Wittekind, destroyed their churches, murdered the priests, and carried fire and sword to the very walls of Cologne and Coblentz. Charlemagne sent his best troops, by forced marches, in advance of his coming, but he was not able to take the field until the following spring. During 779 and a part of 780, after much labor and many battles, he seemed to have subdued the stubborn race, most of whom accepted Christian baptism for the third time. Charlemagne thereupon went to Italy once more, in order to restore order among the Lombards, whose local chiefs were becoming restless in his absence. His two young sons, Pippin and Ludwig, were crowned by Pope Adrian as kings of Lombardy (which then embraced the greater part of northern and central Italy) and Aquitaine.

After his return to Germany he convoked a parliament, or popular assembly, at Paderborn, in 782, partly in order to give the Saxons a stronger impression of the power of the empire. The people seemed quiet, and he was deceived by their bearing; for, after he had left them to return to the Rhine, they rose again, headed by Wittekind, who had been for some years a fugitive in Denmark. Three of Charlemagne's chief officials, who immediately hastened to the scene of trouble with such troops as they could collect, met Wittekind in the Teutoburger Forest, not far from the field where Varus and his legions were destroyed. A similar fate awaited them; the Frankish army was so completely cut to pieces that but few escaped to tell the tale.

Charlemagne marched immediately into the Saxon land. The rebels dispersed at his approach and Wittekind again became a fugitive. The Saxon nobles humbly renewed their submission and tried to throw the whole responsibility of the rebellion upon Wittekind. Charlemange was not satisfied; he had been mortified in his pride as a monarch, and for once he cast aside his usual moderation and prudence. He demanded that 4500 Saxons, no doubt the most prominent among the people, should be given up to him as hostages. When he once had them in his power he had them all massacred at Verden as a punishment to the Saxons for their past faithlessness and as a lesson to them for the future. This deed of blood, instead of intimidating the Saxons, provoked them to fury. They arose as one man, and in 783 defeated Charlemagne near Detmold. He retreated to Paderborn, received reinforcements, and was enabled to venture a second battle, in which he was victorious. He remained for two years longer in Thuringia and Saxony, during which time he undertook a winter campaign, for which the people were not prepared. By the summer of 785 the Saxons, finding their homes destroyed and themselves rapidly diminishing in numbers, yielded to the mercy of the conqueror. Wittekind, who, the legend says, had stolen in disguise into Charlemagne's camp, was so impressed by the bearing of the king and the pomp of the religious services that he also submitted and received baptism.

Charlemagne was now free to make another journey to Italy, where he suppressed some fresh troubles among the Lombards, and forced Aragis, the Duke of Benevento, to render his submission. Then, for the first time, he turned his attention to the Bavarians, whose duke, Tassilo, had preserved an armed neutrality during the previous wars, but was suspected of secretly conspiring with the Lombards, Byzantines, and even the Avars, for help to enable him to throw off the Frankish yoke. At a general diet of the whole empire, held in Worms in 787, Tassilo did not appear, and Charlemagne made this a pretext for invading Bavaria.

Three armies, in Italy, Suabia, and Thuringia, were set in motion at the same time, and resistance appeared so hopeless that Tassilo surrendered at once. Charlemagne pardoned him at first, under stipulations of stricter dependence, but he was convicted of conspiracy at a diet held the following year, when he and his sons were found guilty and sent into a monastery. His dynasty came to an end, and Bavaria was portioned out among a number of Frankish counts, the people, nevertheless, being allowed to retain their own political institutions.

The incorporation of Bavaria with the Frankish Empire brought a new task to Charlemagne. The Avars, who had gradually extended their rule westward nearly to the Adriatic, were strong and dangerous neighbors. In 791 he entered their territory and laid it waste, as far as the River Raab; then, having lost all his horses on the march, he was obliged to return. At home a new trouble awaited him. His son, Pippin, whom he had installed as king of Lombardy, was discovered to be at the head of a conspiracy to usurp his own throne. Pippin was terribly flogged, and then sent into a monastery for the rest of his days; his fellow-conspirators were executed.

When Charlemagne applied his system of military conscription to the Saxons, to recruit his army before renewing the war with the Avars, they rose once more in rebellion, slew his agents, burned the churches, and drove out the priests. Charlemagne was thus obliged to subdue them and to fight the Avars at the same time. The double war lasted until 796, when the residence of the Avar khan, with the intrenched "ring" or fort, containing all the treasures amassed by the tribe during the raids of two hundred years, was captured. All the country as far eastward as the rivers Theiss and Raab was wasted and almost depopulated. The remnant of the Avars acknowledged themselves Frankish subjects, but for greater security Charlemagne established Bavarian colonies in the fertile land along the Danube. The latter formed a province, called the East Mark, which became famous later as the duchy of Austria.

The Saxons were subjected—or seemed to be—about the same time. Many of the people retreated into Holstein, which was then called North Albingia; but Charlemagne allied himself with a branch of the Slavonic Wends, defeated them there, and took possession of their territory. He built fortresses at Halle, Magdeburg, and Büchen, near Hamburg, colonized ten thousand Saxons among the Franks, and replaced them by an equal number of the latter. Then he established Christianity for the fifth time, by ordering that all who failed to present themselves for baptism should be put to death. The indomitable spirit of the people still led to occasional outbreaks, but these became weaker and weaker, and finally ceased as the new faith struck deeper root.

In the year 799 Pope Leo III. suddenly appeared in Charlemagne's camp at Paderborn, a fugitive from a conspiracy of the Roman nobles, by which his life was threatened. He was received with all possible honors, and after some time spent in secret councils was sent back to Rome with a strong escort. In the autumn of the following year Charlemagne followed him. A civil and ecclesiastical assembly was held at Rome, which investigated the awful charges against the Pope and pronounced him innocent. Meanwhile Christmas Day had come, and Charlemagne attended the service in St. Peter's. After the mass he knelt to pray at the tomb of the apostle. As he arose from his knees the Pope stepped forward and placed a crown upon his head, while the great throng assembled there burst forth into a cry: "Life and victory to Carolo Augusto, crowned by God, the great, the peace-bringing Emperor of the Romans!"

By this step the Pope rendered himself forever independent of his nominal subjection to the Byzantine emperors. For Charlemagne, the new dignity, gave his rule its full and final authority. The people, in whose traditions the grandeur of the old Roman Empire was still kept alive, now beheld it renewed in their ruler and themselves. Charlemagne stood at the head of an empire which was to include all Christendom, and to imitate, in its civil organization, the spiritual rule of the church. On the one side were kingdoms, duchies, countships, and the communities of the people, all subject to him; on the other side, bishoprics, monasteries and their dependencies, churches and individual souls, subject to the Pope. The latter acknowledged the emperor as his temporal sovereign; the emperor acknowledged the Pope as his spiritual sovereign. The idea was grand, and at that time did not seem impossible to fulfill; but the further course of history shows how hostile the two principles may become when they both want the same power.

The Greek emperors at Constantinople were not strong enough to protest against this bestowal of a dignity which they claimed for themselves. A long series of negotiations followed, the result of which was that the Emperor Nicephorus acknowledged Charlemagne's title. The latter, immediately after his coronation in Rome, drew up a new oath of allegiance, which he required to be taken by the whole male population of the empire. About this time he entered into friendly relations with the famous caliph, Haroun Al Raschid of Bagdad (of the "Arabian Nights"). They sent embassies bearing magnificent presents to each other's courts, and at Charlemagne's request Haroun took the holy places in Palestine under his special protection, and allowed the Christians to visit them.

With the Saracens in Spain, however, the emperor had constant trouble. They made repeated incursions across the Ebro into the Spanish Mark, and ravaged the shores of Majorca, Minorca, and Corsica, which belonged to the Frankish Empire. Moreover, the extension of his frontier on the east brought Charlemagne into collision with the Slavonic tribes in the territory now belonging to Prussia beyond the Elbe, Saxony and Bohemia. He easily defeated them, but could not check their plundering and roving propensities. In the year 808 Holstein as far as the Elbe was invaded by the Danish king, Gottfried, who, after returning home with much booty, commenced the construction of that line of defense along the Eider River, called the Dannewerk, which exists to this day.

Charlemagne had before this conquered and annexed Friesland. His empire thus included all France, Switzerland, and Germany, stretching eastward along the Danube to Presburg, with Spain to the Ebro, and Italy to the Garigliano River, the later boundary between Rome and Naples. There were no wars serious enough to call him into the field during the latter years of his reign, and he devoted his time to the encouragement of learning and the arts. He established schools, fostered new branches of industry, and sought to build up the higher civilization which follows peace and order. He was very fond of the German language, and by his orders a complete collection was made of the songs and poetical legends of the people. Forsaking Paris, which had been the Frankish capital for nearly three centuries, he removed his court to Aix-la-Chapelle and Ingelheim, near the Rhine, founded the city of Frankfort-on-the-Main, and converted, before he died, all that war-wasted region into a peaceful and populous country.

No ruler before Charlemagne, and none for at least four centuries after him, did so much to increase and perpetuate the learning of his time. During his meals someone always read aloud to him out of old chronicles or theological works. He spoke Latin fluently and had a good knowledge of Greek. In order to become a good writer, he carried his tablets about with him, slept with them under his pillow, and even in the middle of the night would rise from his bed, take the wax tablets and practice forming his letters. But he never, says his friend and biographer, Einhard, really learned to write well. He began too late in life and was too occupied with wars. But his very effort shows the deep interest which this monarch took in learning. Under his influence writing was very much improved; the old Merovingian scrawls which are the despair of the historian gave way to the beautiful, clear Carolingian minuscule which was practiced in all the schools he founded. The men whom he assembled at his court were the most intelligent of that age. His chaplain and chief counselor was Alcuin, an English monk, and a man of great learning. His secretary, Einhard (or Eginhard), wrote a history of the emperor's life and times. Among his other friends were Paul the Deacon, a learned Lombard, and the chronicler, Bishop Turpin. These men formed, with Charlemagne, a literary society, which held regular meetings to discuss matters of science, politics, and literature.

Under Charlemagne the political institutions of the Merovingian kings, as well as those which existed among the German races, were materially changed. As far as possible he set aside the dukes, each of whom, up to that time, was the head of a tribe or division of the people, and broke up their half-independent states into districts, governed by counts. These districts were divided into "hundreds," as in the old Germanic times, each in charge of a noble, who every week acted as judge in smaller civil or criminal cases. The counts, in conjunction with from seven to twelve magistrates, held monthly courts wherein cases which concerned life, freedom, or landed property were decided. They were also obliged to furnish a certain number of soldiers when called upon. The same obligation rested upon the archbishops, bishops, and abbots of the monasteries, all of whom, together with the counts, were called vassals of the empire.

The freemen, in case of war, were compelled to serve as horsemen or foot soldiers, according to their wealth, either three or five of the very poorest furnishing one well-equipped man. The soldiers were not only not paid, but each was obliged to bear his own expenses; so the burden fell very heavily upon this class of the people. In order to escape it, large numbers of the poorer freemen voluntarily became dependents of the nobility or clergy, who in return equipped and supported them. The national assemblies were still annually held, but the people, in becoming dependents, gradually lost their ancient authority, and their votes ceased to control the course of events. The only part they played in the assemblies was to bring tribute to the emperor, to whom they paid no taxes, and whose court was kept up partly from their offerings and partly from the revenues of the "domains" or crown lands. Thus, while Charlemagne introduced throughout his whole empire a unity of government and an order unknown before, while he anticipated Prussia in making all his people liable, at any time, to military service, on the other hand he was slowly and unconsciously changing the free Germans into a race of lords and serfs.

It is not likely, either, that the people themselves saw the tendency of his government. Their respect and love for him increased as the comparative peace of the empire allowed him to turn to interests which more immediately concerned their lives. In his ordinary habits he was as simple as they. His daughters spun and wove the flax for his plain linen garments; personally he looked after his orchards and vegetable gardens, set the schools an example by his own diligence, and stimulated teachers and pupils by his personal visits to the school; he treated high and low with equal frankness and heartiness, and even in his old age surpassed all around him in feats of strength or endurance. There seemed to be no serfdom in bowing to a man so magnificently endowed by nature and so favored by fortune.

One event came to embitter his last days. The Scandinavian Goths, now known as Norsemen, were beginning to build their "sea-dragons" and sally forth on voyages of plunder and conquest. They laid waste the shores of Holland and northern France, and the legend says that Charlemagne burst into tears of rage and shame on perceiving his inability to subdue them or prevent their incursions. One of his last acts was to order the construction of a fleet at Boulogne, but when it was ready the Norse Vikings suddenly appeared in the Mediterranean and ravaged the southern coast of France. Charlemagne began too late to make the Germans either a naval or a commercial people; his attempt to unite the Main and Danube by a canal also failed, but the very design shows his wise foresight and his energy.

Toward the end of the year 813, feeling his death approaching, he called an imperial diet together at Aix-la-Chapelle, to recognize his son Ludwig (or Lewis) as his successor. After this was done he conducted Ludwig to the cathedral, made him vow to be just and God-fearing in his rule, and then bade him take the imperial crown from the altar and set it upon his head. On January 28, 814, Charlemagne died, and was buried in the cathedral at Aix. Over his grave was placed an arch with this inscription: "Under this monument rests the body of Charles, the great and orthodox emperor, who gloriously enlarged the Frankish kingdom and reigned happily for 47 years. He died at the age of 70 in the year of our Lord 814, in the Seventh Indiction, on the 28th of January." The grave has several times been opened since—the last time in 1906 in the presence of a distinguished gathering. His skeleton was found to be in a good state of preservation. and its length corresponded almost exactly with the description of the emperor's unusual size as given by Einhard.

Chapter XII

THE EMPERORS OF THE CAROLINGIAN LINE

814-911 A.D.

THE last act of Charlemagne's life in ordering the manner of his son's coronation—which was imitated, a thousand years afterward, by Napoleon, who, in the presence of the Pope, Pius VII., himself set the crown upon his own head—showed that he designed keeping the imperial power independent of that of the church. But his son, Ludwig (or Lewis), was already a submissive and willing dependent of Rome. During his reign as King of Aquitaine he had covered the land with monasteries, he was the pupil of monks, and his own inclination was for a monastic life. But at Charlemagne's death he was the only legitimate heir to the throne. Being therefore obliged to wear the imperial purple, he exercised his sovereignty chiefly in the interest of the church. His first act was to send to the Pope the treasures amassed by his father; his next, to surround himself with prelates and priests, who soon learned to control his policy. He was called "Lewis the Pious," but in those days, when so many worldly qualities were necessary to the ruler of the empire, the title was hardly one of praise. He appears to have been of a kindly nature, and many of his acts show that he meant to be just; the weakness of his character, however, too often made his good intentions of no avail.

It was a great misfortune for Germany that Lewis's piety took the form of hostility to all learning except of a theological nature. So far as he was able, he undid the great work of education commenced by Charlemagne. The schools were given entirely into the hands of the priests, and the character of the instruction was changed. He inflicted an irreparable loss on all after ages by destroying the collection of songs, ballads, and legends of the German people which Charlemagne had taken such pains to gather and preserve. It is not believed that a single copy escaped destruction, although some scholars suppose that a fragment of the "Song of Hildebrand," written in the eighth century, may have formed part of the collection. In the year 816 Lewis was visited in Rheims by the Pope, Stephen IV., who again crowned him emperor in the cathedral, and thus restored the spiritual authority which Charlemagne had tried to set aside. Lewis's attempts to release the estates belonging to the bishops, monasteries, and priesthood from the payment of taxes, and the obligation to furnish soldiers in case of war, created so much dissatisfaction among the nobles and people that, at a diet held the following year, he was summoned to divide the government of the empire among his three sons. He resisted at first, but was finally forced to consent: his eldest son, Lothar, was crowned co-Emperor of the Franks; his second son, usually known as Ludwig "the German" to distinguish him from his father, was crowned King of Bavaria; and his third son, Pippin, as King of Aquitaine.

In this division no notice was taken of Bernard, King of Lombardy, also a grandson of Charlemagne. The latter at once entered into a conspiracy with certain Frankish nobles, to have his rights recognized; but while preparing for war he was induced, under promises of his personal safety, to visit the emperor's court. There, after having revealed the names of his fellow-conspirators, he was treacherously arrested, and his eyes put out, in consequence of which treatment he died. The Empress Irmingarde died soon afterward, and Lewis was so overcome both by grief for her loss and remorse for having caused the death of his nephew that he was with great difficulty restrained from abdicating and retiring into a monastery. It was not in the interest of the priesthood to lose so powerful a friend, and they finally persuaded him to marry again.

His second wife was Judith, daughter of Welf, a Bavarian count, to whom he was united in 819. Although this gave him another son, Karl, afterward known as Karl (Charles) the Bald, he appears to have found very little peace of mind. At a diet held in 822, at Attigny, in France, he appeared publicly in the sackcloth and ashes of a repentant sinner, and made open confession of his misdeeds. This act showed his sincerity as a man, but in those days it must have greatly diminished the reverence which the people felt for him as their emperor. The next year his son Lothar, who, after Bernard's death, became also King of Lombardy, visited Rome and was recrowned by the Pope. Lothar made himself very popular by seeking out and correcting abuses in the administration of the laws.

During the first fifteen years of the reign of Lewis the Pious the boundaries of the empire were constantly disturbed by invasions of the Danes, the Slavonic tribes in Prussia, and the Saracens in Spain, while the Basques and Bretons became turbulent within the realm. All these revolts or invasions were suppressed; the eastern frontier was not only held, but extended, and the military power of the Frankish Empire was everywhere recognized and feared. The Saxons and Frisians, who had been treated with great mildness by Lewis, gave no further trouble; in fact, the whole population of the empire became peaceable and orderly in proportion as the higher civilization encouraged by Charlemagne was developed among them.

The remainder of Lewis's reign might have been untroubled but for a family difficulty. The Empress Judith demanded that her son, Charles, should also have a kingdom, like his three stepbrothers. An imperial diet was therefore called together at Worms, in 829, and in spite of fierce opposition a new kingdom was formed out of parts of Burgundy, Switzerland, and Suabia. The three sons, Lothar, Pippin, and Ludwig, acquiesced at first; but when a Spanish count, Bernard, was appointed regent during the minority of Charles, the two former began secretly to conspire against their father. They took him captive in France, and endeavored, but in vain, to force him to retire into a monastery. The sympathies of the people were with him, and by their help he was able, the following year, to regain his authority and force his sons to submit.

Lewis, however, manifested his preference for his youngest son, Charles, so openly that in 833 his three other sons united against him, and a war ensued which lasted nearly five years. Finally, when the two armies stood face to face, on a plain near Colmar, in Alsatia, and a bloody battle between father and sons seemed imminent, the Pope, Gregory IV., suddenly made his appearance. He offered his services as a mediator, went to and fro, and at last treacherously carried all the emperor's chief supporters over to the camp of the sons. Lewis, then sixty years old and broken in strength and spirit, was forced to surrender. The people gave the name of "The Field of Lies" to the scene of this event.

The old emperor was compelled by his sons to give up his sword, to appear as a penitent in church, and to undergo such other degradations that the sympathies of the people were again aroused in his favor. They rallied to his support from all sides;

his authority was restored, Lothar, the leader of the rebellion, fled to Italy,—Pippin had died shortly before,—and Ludwig proffered his submission. The old man now had a prospect of quiet; but the machinations of the Empress Judith on behalf of her son, Charles, disturbed his last years. He died, in 840, on an island in the Rhine, near Ingelheim.

The death of Lewis the Pious was the signal for a succession of fratricidal wars. His youngest son, Charles the Bald, first united his interests with those of his eldest stepbrother, Lothar, but he soon went over to the side of Ludwig the German, while Lothar allied himself with the sons of Pippin, in Aquitaine. A terrific battle was fought at Fontenay, in central France, in the summer of 841. Lothar was defeated, and Ludwig and Charles then determined to divide the empire between them. The following winter they came together, with their nobles and armies, near Strasburg, and vowed to keep faith with each other thenceforth. The language of France and Germany, even among the descendants of the original Franks, was no longer the same, and the oath which was drawn up for the occasion was pronounced by Charles in German to the army of Ludwig, and by Ludwig in French to the army of Charles. The text of it has been preserved, and it is a very interesting illustration of the two languages as they were spoken a thousand years ago. We will quote the opening phrases, for the interest of comparing them with modern French and German:

LUDWIG. (*French*).	Pro	Deo	amur	et	(pro)	Christian	poblo	et	nostro
CHARLES (*German*).	In	Godes	minna	ind	(in thes)	Christianes	folches	ind	unser
English.	In	God's	love	and	(that of the)	Christian	folk	and	our

LUDWIG.	comun	salvament,—	dist	di	in avant,—in	quant
CHARLES.	bedhero	gehaltnissi,—fon	thesemo	dage	framordes,—so	fram so
English.	mutual	preservation,—from	this	day	forth,— as	long as

LUDWIG.	Deus	savir	et	podir	me dunat, etc.
CHARLES.	mir God	gewiczi	ind	mahd	furgibit, etc.
English.	to me God	knowledge	and	might	gives, etc.

It is very easy to see, from this slight specimen, how much the language of the Franks had been modified by the Gallic-Latin, and how much of the original tongue (taking the Gothic Bible of Ulfilas as an evidence of its character) has been retained in German and English. About the same time there was written in the Low German, or Saxon dialect, a Gospel narrative in verse, called the

"Heliand" ("Saviour"), many lines of which are almost identical with early English; as the following:

Slogun cald isarn
they drove cold iron

hardo mit hamuron
hard with hammers

thuru is hendi enti thuru is fuoti,
through his hands and through his feet;

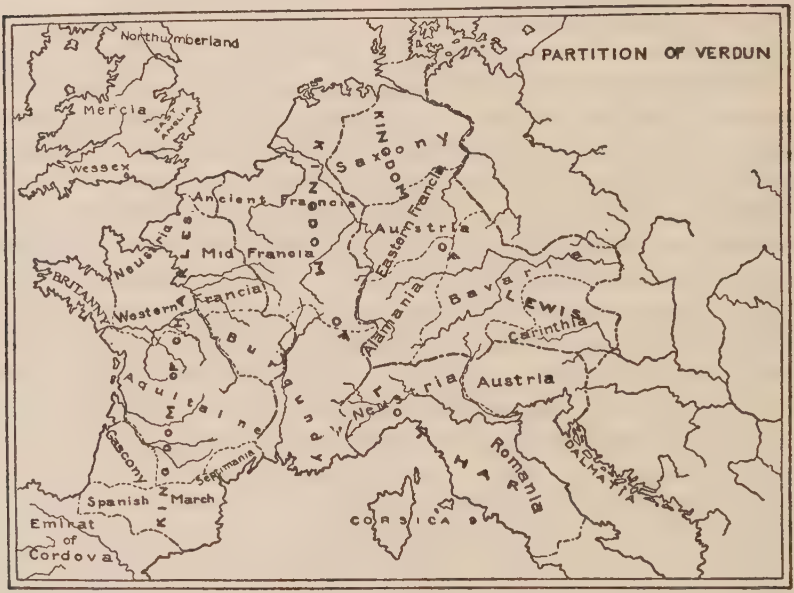
is bloud ran an ertha.
his blood ran on earth.

This separation of the languages is a sign of the difference in national character which now split asunder the great empire of Charlemagne. Lothar, after the solemn alliance between Charles the Bald and Ludwig the German, resorted to desperate measures. He offered to give the Saxons their old laws and even to allow them to return to their pagan faith if they would support his claims; he invited the Norsemen to Belgium and northern France; and, by retreating toward Italy when his brothers approached him in force, and then returning when an opportunity favored, he disturbed and wasted the best portions of the empire. Finally the bishops intervened, and after a long time spent in negotiations the three rival brothers met in 843, and agreed to the famous "Partition of Verdun" (so called from Verdun, near Metz, where it was signed), by which the realm of Charlemagne was divided among them.

Lothar, as the eldest, received Italy, together with a long, narrow strip of territory extending to the North Sea, including part of Burgundy, Switzerland, eastern Belgium, and Holland. All west of this, embracing the greater part of France, was given to Charles the Bald; all east, with a strip of territory west of the Rhine, from Basle to Mayence, "for the sake of its wine," as the document stated, became the kingdom of Ludwig the German, who now ruled over a real German population, speaking a language uninfluenced to any great extent by the Latin. He also received eastern Switzerland and Bavaria to the Alps. This division was almost as arbitrary and unnatural as that which Pippin the Short attempted to make. Neither Charles's nor Ludwig's shares included all the French or German territory; while Lothar's was a long, 843

narrow slice cut out of both, and attached to Italy, where a new race and language were already developed out of the mixture of Romans, Goths, and Lombards. In fact, it became necessary to invent a name for the northern part of Lothar's dominions, and that portion between Burgundy and Holland was called, after him, Lotharingia. As Lothringen in German, and Lorraine in French, the name still remains in existence.

Each of the three monarchs received unrestricted sway over his realm. They agreed, however, upon a common line of policy,



in the interest of the dynasty, and admitted the right of inheritance to each other's sovereignty, in the absence of direct heirs. The Treaty of Verdun, therefore, marks the beginning of Germany and France as distinct nationalities; and now, after following the Germanic races over the greater part of Europe for so many centuries, we come back to recommence their history on the soil where we first found them. In fact, the word Deutsch, "German," signifying "of the people," now first came into general use, to designate the language and the races—Franks, Alemanni, Bavarians, Thuringians, Saxons, etc.—under Ludwig's rule. There was, as yet, no political unity among these races; they were reciprocally jealous, and often hostile; but by contrast with the inhabitants of France and Italy they felt their blood-relationship as never before, and a national spirit grew up, of a narrower but more natural character than that which Charlemagne endeavored to establish.

Internal struggles awaited both the Roman emperor, Lothar, and the Frankish king, Charles the Bald. The former was obliged to suppress revolts in Provence and Italy; the latter, in Brittany and Aquitaine, while the Spanish Mark, beyond the Pyrenees, passed out of his hands. Ludwig the German inherited a long peace at home, but a succession of wars with the Wends and Bohemians along his eastern frontier. The Norsemen came down upon his coasts, destroyed Hamburg, and sailed up the Elbe with six hundred vessels, burning and plundering wherever they went. The necessity of keeping an army almost constantly in the field gave the clergy and nobility an opportunity of exacting better terms for their support; the independent dukedoms, suppressed by Charlemagne, were gradually reëstablished, and thus Ludwig diminished his own power while protecting his territory from invasion.

The Emperor Lothar soon discovered that he had made a bad bargain. His long and narrow empire was most difficult to govern, and in 855, weary with his annoyances and his endless marches to and fro, he abdicated and retired into a monastery, where he died within a week. His lands were divided among his three sons, and when the one to whom Lorraine had been given died, in 869, Ludwig the German and Charles the Bald, by the Treaty of Mersen, divided his territory, the line running between Verdun and Metz, then along the Vosges, and terminating at the Rhine near Basel —almost precisely the same boundary as that which France was forced to accept in 1871. It made the Rhine a German river.

But the conditions of the oath taken by the two kings in 842 were not observed by either. Charles the Bald was a tyrannical and unpopular sovereign, and when he failed to prevent the Norsemen from ravaging all western France the nobles determined to set him aside and invite Ludwig to take his place. The latter consented, marched into France with a large army, and was hailed as king; but when his army returned home, and he trusted to the promised support of the Frankish nobles, he found that Charles had repurchased their allegiance, and there was no course left to him but to retreat across the Rhine. The trouble was settled by a meeting of the two kings, which took place at Coblentz in 860.

Ludwig the German had also, like his father, serious trouble with his sons, Karlmann and Ludwig. He had made the former Duke of Carinthia, but ere long discovered that he had entered into a conspiracy with Rastitz, king of the Moravian Slavonians. Karlmann was summoned to Regensburg (Ratisbon), which was then Ludwig's capital, and was finally obliged to lead an army against his secret ally, Rastitz, who was conquered. A new war with Zwentebold, King of Bohemia, who was assisted by the Sorbs, Wends, and other Slavonic tribes along the Elbe, broke out soon afterward. Karlmann led his father's forces against the enemy, and after a struggle of four years forced Bohemia, in 873, to become tributary to Germany.

In 875 the Emperor Ludwig II. (Lothar's son), who ruled in Italy, died without heirs. Charles the Bald and Ludwig the German immediately called their troops into the field and commenced the march to Italy, in order to divide the inheritance or fight for its sole possession. Ludwig sent his sons, but their uncle, Charles the Bald, was before them. He was acknowledged by the Lombard nobles at Pavia, and crowned in Rome by the Pope, before it could be prevented. Ludwig determined upon an instant invasion of France, but in the midst of the preparations he died at Frankfort, in 876. He was seventy-one years old; as a child he had sat on the knees of Charlemagne; as an independent king of Germany he had reigned thirty-six years, and with him the intelligence, prudence, and power which had distinguished the Carolingian line came to an end.

Again the kingdom was divided among three sons, Karlmann, Ludwig the Younger, and Karl the Fat; and again there were civil wars. Charles the Bald made haste to invade Germany before the brothers were in a condition to oppose him; but he was met by Ludwig the Younger and terribly defeated near Andernach on the Rhine. The next year he died, leaving one son, Lewis the Stammerer, to succeed him.

The brothers, in accordance with a treaty made before their father's death, thus divided Germany: Karlmann took Bavaria, Carinthia, the provinces on the Danube, and the half-sovereignty over Bohemia and Moravia; Ludwig the Younger became king over all northern and central Germany, leaving Suabia (formerly Alemannia) for Karl the Fat. Karlmann's first act was to take possession of Italy, which acknowledged his rule. He was soon afterward struck with apoplexy, and died in 880. Karl the Fat had already crossed the Alps; he forced the Lombard nobles to accept him, and was crowned emperor at Rome, as Karl III., in 881. Meanwhile the Germans had recognized Ludwig the Younger as Karlmann's heir, and had given to Arnulf, the latter's illegitimate son, the duchy of Carinthia.

Ludwig the Younger died, childless, in 882, and thus Germany and Italy became one empire under Karl the Fat. He was a true descendant of Lewis the Pious; sickly by nature and sunk in the affairs of his own conscience, he had no time left for affairs of his country, nor for warding off from his lands the terrible and ever advancing Norsemen. By this time Friesland and Holland were suffering from the invasions of the Norsemen, who had built a strong camp on the bank of the Meuse, and were beginning to threaten Germany. Karl marched against them, but after a siege of some weeks he shamefully purchased a truce by giving them territory in Holland, and large sums in gold and silver, and by marrying a princess of the Carolingian blood to Gottfried, their chieftain. They then sailed down the Meuse with two hundred vessels laden with plunder.

All classes of the Germans were filled with rage and shame at this disgrace. The dukes and princes who were building up their local governments profited by the state of affairs to strengthen their power. Karl was called to Italy to defend the Pope against the Saracens, and when he returned to Germany in 884 he found a Count Hugo almost independent in Lorraine, the Norsemen in possession of the Rhine nearly as far as Cologne, and Arnulf of Carinthia engaged in a fierce war with Zwentebold, King of Bohemia. Karl turned his forces against the last of these, subdued him, and then, with the help of the Frisians, expelled the Norsemen. The two crowned grandsons of Charles the Bald, Ludwig and Karlmann, died about this time, and the only remaining son, Charles (afterward called the Simple), was still a young child. The Frankish nobles therefore offered the throne to Karl the Fat, who accepted it and thus united again under one crown, for a short time, all the lands over which Charlemagne had ruled. But his was the last case of a universal Christian empire.

Once more he proved himself shamefully unworthy of the power confided to his hands. He suffered Paris to sustain a nine months' siege by the Norsemen before he marched to its assistance, and then, instead of meeting the foemen in open field, he paid them a heavy ransom for the city and allowed them to spend the following winter in Burgundy, and plunder the land at their will. The result was a general conspiracy against his rule, in Germany as well as in France. At the head of it was Bishop Luitward, Karl's chancellor and confidential friend, who, being detected, fled to Arnulf in Carinthia, and instigated the latter to rise in rebellion. Arnulf was everywhere victorious: Karl the Fat, deserted by his army and the dependent German nobles, was forced, in 887, to resign the throne and retire to an estate in Suabia, where he died the following year.

Duke Arnulf, the grandson of Ludwig the German, though not born in wedlock, was now raised to the throne by the German nobles as their king. This election betokens, in the words of Ranke, " the first independent action of the German secular world." That is, it was primarily the nobles, anxious to have a warrior at their head, and not the bishops and clergy, who in this instance decided who should be ruler in Germany. Being accepted at Ratisbon and afterward at Frankfort by the representatives of the people, he was able to keep them united under his rule, while the rest of the former Frankish Empire began to fall to pieces. As early as 879 a new kingdom, called Burgundy, or Arelat, from its capital Arles, was formed between the Rhone and the Alps; Berengar, the Lombard Duke of Friuli, in Italy, usurped the inheritance of the Carolingian line there; Duke Conrad, a nephew of Lewis the Pious, established the kingdom of Upper Burgundy, embracing a part of eastern France, with western Switzerland; and Count Odo of Paris, who gallantly defended the city against the Norsemen, was chosen king of France by a large party of the nobles.

King Arnulf, who seems to have possessed as much wisdom as bravery, did not interfere with the pretensions of these new rulers, so long as they forbore to trespass on his German territory, and he thereby secured the friendship of all. He devoted himself to the liberation of Germany from the repeated invasions of the Danes and Norsemen on the north and the Bohemians on the east. The former had entrenched themselves strongly among the marshes near Louvain, where Arnulf's best troops, which were cavalry, could not reach them. He set an example to his army by dismounting and advancing on foot to the attack; the Germans followed with such impetuosity that the Norse camp was taken and nearly all its defenders slaughtered. From that day Germany was free from invasion by the Norsemen.

Arnulf next marched against his old enemy, Zwentebold (or Swatopluk) of Bohemia. This king and his people had recently been converted to Christianity by the missionary Methodius, but it had made no change in their predatory habits. They were the more easily conquered by Arnulf, because the Magyars, a branch of the Finnish race who had pressed into Hungary from the east, attacked them at the same time. The Magyars were called "Hungarians" by the Germans of that day—as they are at present—because they had taken possession of the territory which had been occupied by the Huns more than four centuries before; but they were a distinct race, resembling the Huns only in their fierceness and daring. They were believed to be cannibals, who drank the blood and devoured the hearts of their slain enemies; and the panic they created throughout Germany was as great as that which went before Attila and his barbarian hordes.

After the subjection of the Bohemians Arnulf was summoned to Italy, in the year 894, where he assisted Berengar, King of Lombardy, to maintain his power against a rival. He then marched against Rudolf, King of Upper Burgundy, who had been conspiring against him, and ravaged his land. By this time, it appears, his personal ambition was excited by his successes; he determined to become emperor, and desirous of securing the favor of the Pope he granted the most extraordinary privileges to the church in Germany. He ordered that all civil officers should execute the orders of the clerical tribunals; that excommunication should affect the civil rights of those on whom it fell; that matters of dispute between clergy and laymen should be decided by the bishops, without calling witnesses—with other decrees of the same character, which practically set the church above the civil authorities.

The Popes by this time had embraced the idea of becoming temporal sovereigns, and the dissensions among the rulers of the Carolingian line already enabled them to secure a power of which the former Bishops of Rome had never dreamed. In the early part of the ninth century the so-called "Isidorian Decretals" (because they bore the name of Bishop Isidor, of Seville) came to light. They were forged documents, purporting to be decrees of the ancient councils of the church, which claimed for the Bishop of Rome (the Pope) the office of Vicar of Christ and Vicegerent of

Wm. Carey Int'l University

God upon earth, with supreme power not only over all bishops, priests, and individual souls, but also over all civil authorities. The political policy of the Papal chair was influenced by these documents, and several centuries elapsed before their fictitious character was discovered.

Arnulf, after these concessions to the church, went to Italy in 895. He found the Pope, Formosus, in the power of a Lombard prince, whom the Pope had been compelled, against his will, to crown as emperor. Arnulf took Rome by force of arms, liberated the Pope, and in return was crowned Roman emperor. He fell dangerously ill immediately afterward, and it was believed that he had been poisoned.

Arnulf returned to Germany as emperor, but weak and broken in body and in mind. He never recovered from the effects of his illness, but lingered for three years longer, seeing his empire becoming more and more weak and disorderly. He died in 899, leaving one son, Ludwig, only seven years old. This son, known in history as "Ludwig the Child," was the last of the Carolingian line in Germany. In France the same line, now represented by Charles the Simple, was also approaching its end.

At a diet held at Forchheim (near Nuremberg) Ludwig the Child was accepted as king of Germany, and solemnly crowned. On account of his tender years he was placed in charge of Arch bishop Hatto of Mayence, who was appointed, with Duke Otto of Saxony, to govern temporarily in his stead. An insurrection in Lorraine was suppressed; but now a more formidable danger approached from the east. The Hungarians (as we will henceforth call the Magyars) invaded northern Italy in 899 and ravaged part of Bavaria on their return to the Danube. Like the Huns, they destroyed everything in their way, leaving a wilderness behind.

The Bavarians, with little assistance from the rest of Germany, fought the Hungarians until 907, when their duke, Luitpold, was slain in battle, and his son Arnulf purchased peace by a heavy tribute. Then the Hungarians invaded Thuringia, whose duke, Burkhard, also fell fighting against them, after which they plundered a part of Saxony. Finally, in 910. the whole strength of Germany was called into the field; Ludwig, eighteen years old, took command, met the Hungarians on the banks of the Inn, and was utterly defeated. He fled from the field, and was forced, thenceforth, to pay tribute to Hungary. He died in 911, and Germany was left without a hereditary ruler.

PART II

MEDIÆVAL HISTORY. 911-1493

Chapter XIII

CONRAD I. AND THE SAXON DYNASTY

911-973 A.D.

WHEN Ludwig the Child died the state of affairs in Germany had greatly changed. The direct dependence of the nobility and clergy upon the emperor, established by the political system of Charlemagne, was almost at an end; the country was covered with petty sovereignties, which stood between the chief ruler and the people. The feudal estates which were given to the bishops, abbots, nobles, and others who had rendered special service to the empire, were originally only granted for a term of years or for life, and afterward were to come back to the royal hands. In return for such grants the feudal lords were obliged to answer for the loyalty of their retainers, the people dwelling upon their lands, and in case of war to follow the emperor's banner with their proportion of fighting men.

So long as the wars were with external foes, with opportunities for both glory and plunder, the service was willingly performed; but when they came as a consequence of family quarrels, and every portion of the empire was liable to be wasted in its turn, the emperor's "vassals," both spiritual and temporal, began to grow restive. Their military service subjected them to the chance of losing their estate, and they therefore demanded to have absolute possession of the lands. The next and natural step was to have the possession, and the privileges connected with it, made hereditary in their families; and these claims were very generally secured, throughout Germany, during the reign of Karl the Fat. Only in Saxony and Friesland, and among the Alps, were the common people proprietors of the soil.

The nobles, or large landowners, for their common defense against the exercise of the imperial power, united under the rule of counts or dukes, by whom the former division of the population into separate tribes or nations was continued. The emperors, also, found this division convenient, but they always claimed the right to set aside the smaller rulers, or to change the boundaries of their states, for reasons of policy.

Charles the Simple, of the Carolingian line, reigned in France in 911, and was therefore, according to the family compact, the heir to Ludwig the Child. Moreover, the Pope, Stephen IV., had threatened with the ban of the church all those who should give allegiance to an emperor who was not of Carolingian blood. Nevertheless, the German princes and nobles were now independent enough to defy both tradition and Papal authority. They held a diet at Forchheim, and decided to elect their own king. They would have chosen Otto, duke of the Saxons,—a man of great valor, prudence, and nobility of character,—but he felt himself to be too old for the duties of the royal office, and he asked the diet to confer it on Conrad, the head of the greatest family in Franconia. Conrad was then almost unanimously chosen king of Germany, and was immediately crowned by Archbishop Hatto of Mayence.

Conrad was a brave, gay, generous monarch, who soon rose into high favor with the people. He allied himself firmly with the church, and in return received its steady support. A synod held in 916, at which a Papal legate was present, spoke a threefold curse against all who should break their oath of fealty to the king, and declared treasonable undertakings to be punishable with lifelong imprisonment in a monastery. But in spite of this ecclesiastical support all Conrad's efforts to establish a strong monarchy and check the dangerous power of the great feudal lords proved a failure. His difficulty lay in the jealousy of other princes, who tried to strengthen themselves by restricting his authority. He first lost the greater part of Lorraine, and then, on attempting to divide Thuringia and Saxony, which were united under Henry, the son of Duke Otto, his army was literally cut to pieces. A Saxon song of victory, written at the time, says: " The lower world was too small to receive the throngs of the enemies slain."

Arnulf of Bavaria and the Counts Berthold and Erchanger of Suabia defeated the Hungarians in a great battle near the River Inn, in 913, and felt themselves strong enough to defy Conrad. He succeeded in defeating and deposing them; but Arnulf fled to the Hungarians and incited them to a new invasion of Germany. They came in two bodies, one of which marched through Bavaria and Suabia to the Rhine, the other through Thuringia and Saxony to Bremen, plundering, burning, and slaying on their way. Then Conrad, wounded in repelling a new invasion of the Hungarians, looked forward to death as a release from his trouble. Feeling his end approaching, he summoned his brother Eberhard, gave him the royal crown and scepter, and bade him carry them to Duke Henry of Saxony, the most troublesome of all his enemies during life, declaring that the latter was the only man with power and intelligence enough to rule Germany. In the words of a contemporary annalist: "This king [Conrad] was so bent on the good of his fatherland that he sacrificed to it his personal enmity—truly a rare virtue."

Henry was already popular, as the son of Otto, and it was probably quite as much their respect for his character as for Conrad's last request which led many of the German nobles to accompany Eberhard and join him in offering the crown. They found Henry out hunting in a pleasant valley near the Harz, and he was thenceforth generally called "Henry the Fowler" by the people. He at once accepted the trust confided to his hands; a diet of the Franks and Saxons was held at Fritzlar the next year, 919, and he was there lifted upon the shield and hailed as king. But when Archbishop Hatto proposed to anoint him king with the usual religious ceremonies, he declined, asserting that he did not consider himself worthy to be more than a king of the people. Both he and his wife Mathilde were descendants of Wittekind, the foe and almost the conqueror of Charlemagne.

Neither Suabia nor Bavaria was represented at the diet of Fritzlar. This meant resistance to Henry's authority, and he accordingly marched at once into southern Germany. Burkhard, Duke of Suabia, gave in his submission without delay; but Arnulf of Bavaria made preparations for resistance. The two armies came together near Ratisbon; all was ready for battle, when King Henry summoned Arnulf to meet him alone, between their camps. At this interview he spoke with so much wisdom and persuasion that Arnulf finally yielded, and Henry's rights were established without the shedding of blood.

In the meantime Lorraine, under its duke, Giselbert, had revolted, and Charles the Simple, by unexpectedly crossing the frontier, gained possession of Alsatia as far as the Rhine. Henry marched against him, but, as in the case of Arnulf, asked for a personal interview before engaging in battle. The two kings met on an island in the Rhine, near Bonn: the French army was encamped on the western, and the German army on the eastern, bank of the river, awaiting the result. Charles the Simple was soon brought to terms by his shrewd, intelligent rival, and on November 7, 921, a treaty was signed by which the former boundary between France and Germany was reaffirmed. Soon afterward Giselbert of Lorraine was sent as a prisoner to Henry, but the latter, pleased with his character, set him free, gave him his daughter in marriage, and thus secured his allegiance to the German throne.

In this manner, within five or six years after he was chosen king, Henry had accomplished his difficult task. Chiefly by peaceful means, by a combination of energy, patience, and forbearance, he had subdued the elements of disorder in Germany, and united both princes and people under his rule. He was now called upon to encounter the Hungarians, who, in 924, again invaded both northern and southern Germany. The walled and fortified cities, such as Ratisbon, Augsburg, and Constance, were safe from their attacks, but in the open field they were so powerful that Henry found himself unable to cope with them. His troops only dared to engage in skirmishes with the smaller roving bands, in one of which, by great good fortune, they captured one of the Hungarian chiefs, or princes. A large amount of treasure was offered for this prince's ransom, but Henry shrewdly refused it, and asked for a truce of nine years instead. The Hungarians finally agreed to this, on condition that an annual tribute should be paid to them during the time.

This was the bravest and wisest act of King Henry's life. He took upon himself the disgrace of the tribute, and then at once set about organizing his people and developing their strength. The truce of nine years was not too long for the work upon which he entered. He began by forcing the people to observe a stricter military discipline, by teaching his Saxon foot soldiers to fight on horseback, and by strengthening the defenses along his eastern frontier. Hamburg, Magdeburg, and Halle were at this time the most eastern German towns, and beyond or between them, especially toward the south, there were no strong points which could resist invasion. Henry carefully surveyed the ground and began the erection of a series of fortified enclosures. Every ninth man of the district was called upon to serve as garrison soldier, while the remaining eight cultivated the land. One-third of the harvests was stored in these fortresses, wherein, also, the people were required to hold their markets and their festivals. Thus Quedlinburg, Merseburg, Meissen, and other towns soon arose within the fortified limits. From these achievements Henry is often called, in German history, "the Founder of Cities."

Having somewhat accustomed the people to this new form of military service, and constantly exercised the nobles and their men-at-arms in sham fights and tournaments (which he is said to have first instituted), Henry now tested them in actual war. The Slavonic tribes east of the Elbe had become the natural and hereditary enemies of the Germans, and an attack upon them hardly required a pretext. The present province of Brandenburg, the basis of the Prussian kingdom, was conquered by Henry in 928; and then, after a successful invasion of Bohemia, he gradually extended his annexation to the Oder. Most of the Slavonic population were slaughtered without mercy, and the Saxons and Thuringians, spreading eastward, took possession of their vacant lands. Finally, in 932, Henry conquered Lusatia (now eastern Saxony); Bohemia was already tributary, and his whole eastern frontier was thereby advanced from the Baltic at Stettin to the Danube at Vienna.

By this time the nine years' truce with the Hungarians was at an end, and when the ambassadors of the latter came to the German court to receive their tribute they were sent back with empty hands. A tradition states that Henry ordered an old, mangy dog to be given to them instead of the usual gold and silver. A declaration of war followed, as he had anticipated; but the Hungarians seem to have surprised him by the rapidity of their movements. Contrary to their previous custom, they undertook a winter campaign, overrunning Thuringia and Saxony in such immense numbers that the king did not immediately venture to oppose them. He waited until their forces were divided, in the search for plunder, then fell upon a part and defeated them. Shortly afterward he moved against their main army, and on March 15, 933, after a bloody battle (which is believed to have been fought in the vicinity of Merseburg), was again conqueror. The Hungarians fled, leaving their camp, treasures, and accumulated plunder in Henry's hands. They were never again dangerous to northern Germany.

After this came a war with the Danish king, Gorm, who had crossed the Eider and taken Holstein. Henry brought it to an end, and added Schleswig to his dominion rather by diplomacy than by arms. After his long and indefatigable exertions the empire enjoyed peace; its boundaries were extended and secured; all the minor rulers submitted to his sway, and his influence over the people was unbounded. But he was not destined to enjoy the fruits of his achievements. A stroke of apoplexy warned him to set his house in order; so, in the spring of 936, he called together a diet at Erfurt, which accepted his second son, Otto, as his successor. Although he left two other sons, no proposition was made to divide Germany among them. The civil wars of the Merovingian and Carolingian dynasties, during nearly four hundred years, compelled the adoption of a different system of succession; and the reigning dukes and counts were now so strong that they bowed reluctantly even to the authority of a single monarch.

Henry died on July 20, 936, not yet sixty years old. His son and successor, Otto, was twenty-four—a stern, proud man, but brave, firm, generous, and intelligent. He was married to Edith, the daughter of Athelstan, the Saxon king of England. A few weeks after his father's death he was crowned with great splendor in the cathedral of Charlemagne at Aix-la-Chapelle. All the dukes and bishops of the realm were present, and the new emperor was received with universal acclamation. At the banquet which followed the dukes of Lorraine, Franconia, Suabia and Bavaria served as chamberlain, steward, cup-bearer and marshal. It was the first national event, of a spontaneous character, which took place in Germany, and now, for the first time, a German kingdom seemed to be a reality.

The history of Otto's reign fulfilled, at least to the people of his day, the promise of his coronation. Like his father, his inheritance was to include wars with internal and external foes; he met and carried them to an end with an energy equal to that of Henry I., but without the same prudence and patience. He made Germany the first power of the civilized world, yet he failed to unite the discordant elements of which it was composed, and therefore was not able to lay the foundation of a distinct nation, such as was even then slowly growing up in France.

He was first called upon to repel invasions of the Bohemians and the Wends in Prussia. He intrusted the subjection of the latter to a Saxon count, Hermann Billung, and marched himself against the former. Both wars lasted for some time, but they were finally successful. The Hungarians, also, whose new inroad reached even to the banks of the Loire, were twice defeated and so discouraged that they never afterward attempted to invade either Thuringia or Saxony.

Worse troubles, however, were brewing within the realm. Eberhard, duke of the Franks (the same who had carried his brother Conrad's crown to Otto's father), had taken into his own hands the punishment of a Saxon noble, instead of referring the case to the king. The latter compelled Eberhard to pay a fine of a hundred pounds of silver, and ordered that the Frankish freemen who assisted him should carry dogs in their arms to the royal castle —a form of punishment which was then considered very disgraceful. After the order had been carried into effect Otto received the culprits kindly and gave them rich presents, but they went home brooding revenge.

Eberhard allied himself with Thankmar, Otto's own half-brother by a mother from whom Henry I. had been divorced before marrying Mathilde. Giselbert, Duke of Lorraine, Otto's brother-in-law, joined the conspiracy, and even many of the Saxon nobles, who were offended because the command of the army sent against the Wends had been given to Count Hermann, followed his example. Otto's position was very critical, and if there had been more harmony of action among the conspirators he might have lost his throne. In the struggle which ensued Thankmar was slain and Duke Eberhard forced to surrender. But the latter was not yet subdued. During the rebellion he had taken Otto's younger brother, Henry, prisoner; he secured the latter's confidence, tempted him with the prospect of being chosen king in case Otto was overthrown, and then sent him as his intercessor to the conqueror.

Thus, while Otto supposed the movement had been crushed, Eberhard, Giselbert of Lorraine, and Henry, who had meantime joined the latter, were secretly preparing a new rebellion. As soon as Otto discovered the fact he collected an army and hastened to the Rhine. He had crossed the river with only a small part of his troops, the remainder being still encamped upon the eastern bank, when Giselbert and Henry suddenly appeared with a great force. Otto at first gave himself up for lost, but, determined at least to fall gallantly, he and his followers fought with such desperation that they won a signal victory. Giselbert retreated to Lorraine, whither Otto was prevented from following him by new troubles among the Saxons and the subject Wends between the Elbe and Oder.

The rebellious princes now sought the help of the King of

France, Louis IV. (called "d'Outre-mer," or "from beyond sea," because he had been an exile in England). He marched into Alsatia with a French army, while Duke Eberhard and the Archbishop of Mayence added their forces to those of Giselbert and Henry. All the territory west of the Rhine fell into their hands, and the danger seemed so great that many of the smaller German princes began to waver in their fidelity to Otto. He, however, hastened to Alsatia, defeated the French, and laid siege to the fortress of Breisach (halfway between Strasburg and Basle), although Giselbert was then advancing into Westphalia. A small band who remained true to him met the latter and forced him back upon the Rhine; and there, in a battle fought near Andernach, Eberhard was slain and Giselbert drowned in attempting to flee.

This was the turning-point in Otto's fortunes. The French retreated, all the supports of the rebellion fell away from it, and in a short time the king's authority was restored throughout the whole of Germany. These events occurred during the year 939. The following year Otto marched to Paris, which, however, was too strongly fortified to be taken. An irregular war between the two kingdoms lasted for some time longer, and was finally terminated by a personal interview between Otto and Louis IV., at which the ancient boundaries were reaffirmed, Lorraine remaining German.

Henry, pardoned for the second time, was unable to maintain himself as Duke of Lorraine, to which position Otto had appointed him. Enraged at being set aside, he united with the Archbishop of Mayence in a conspiracy against his brother's life. It was arranged that the murder should be committed during the Easter services in Quedlinburg. The plot was discovered, the accomplices tried and executed, and Henry thrown into prison. During the celebration of the Christmas mass in the cathedral at Frankfort the same year he suddenly appeared before Otto, and, throwing himself upon his knees, prayed for pardon. Otto was magnanimous enough to grant it, and afterward to forget as well as forgive. He bestowed new favors on Henry, who never again became unfaithful.

During this time the Saxon counts Gero and Hermann had held the Wends and other Slavonic tribes at bay, and gradually filled the conquered territory beyond the Elbe with fortified posts, around which German colonists rapidly clustered. Following the example of Charlemagne, the people were forcibly converted to Christianity, and new churches and monasteries were founded. The

Bohemians were made tributary, the Hungarians repelled, and in driving back an invasion of the king of Denmark, Harold Bluetooth, Otto marched to the extremity of the peninsula of Jutland and there hurled his spear into the sea, as a sign that he had taken possession of the land.

He now ruled a wider and apparently a more united realm than his father. The power of the independent dukes was so weakened that they felt themselves subjected to his favor; he was everywhere respected and feared, although he never became popular with the masses of the people. He lacked the easy, familiar ways with them which distinguished his father and Charlemagne; his manner was cold and haughty, and he surrounded himself with pomp and ceremony. He married his eldest son, Ludolf, to the daughter of the Duke of Suabia, whom the former soon succeeded in his rule; he gave Lorraine to his son-in-law, Conrad, and Bavaria to his brother Henry, while he retained the Franks, Thuringians, and Saxons under his own personal rule. Germany might have grown into a united nation if the good qualities of his line could have been transmitted, without its inordinate ambition.

While thus laying, as he supposed, the permanent basis of his power, Otto was called upon by the King of France, who, having married the widow of Giselbert of Lorraine, was now his brother-in-law, for help against Duke Hugo, a powerful pretender to the French throne. In 946 he marched at the head of an army of 32,000 men to assist King Louis; but although he reached Normandy, he did not succeed in his object, and several years elapsed before Hugo was brought to submission.

In the year 951 Otto's attention was directed to Italy, which, since the fall of the Carolingian empire, had been ravaged in turn by Saracens, Greeks, Normans, and even Hungarians. The Papal power had become almost a shadow, and the title of Roman emperor was practically extinct. Berengar of Friuli, a rough, brutal prince, called himself King of Italy, and demanded the hand of Adelheid, the sister of Conrad, King of Burgundy, who had secured his throne with Otto's aid. On her refusal to accept Berengar, she was imprisoned and treated with great indignity, but finally succeeded in sending a messenger to Germany, imploring Otto's intervention. His wife, Edith of England, being dead, he saw, in Adelheid's appeal, an opportunity to acquire an ascendency in Italy, and resolved to claim her hand for himself.

Accompanied by his brother, Henry of Bavaria, his son, Ludolf of Suabia, and his son-in-law, Conrad of Lorraine, with their troops, Otto crossed the Alps, defeated Berengar, took possession of Verona, Pavia, Milan, and other cities of northern Italy, and assumed the title of King of Lombardy. He then applied for Adelheid's hand, which was not refused, and the two were married with great pomp at Pavia. Ludolf, incensed at his father for having taken a second wife, returned immediately to Germany, and there stirred up such disorder that Otto relinquished his intention of visiting Rome, and followed him. After much negotiation Berengar was allowed to remain king of Lombardy, on condition of giving up all the Adriatic shore, from near Venice to Istria, which was then annexed to Bavaria.

Duke Henry, therefore, profited most by the Italian campaign, and this excited the jealousy of Ludolf and Conrad, who began to conspire both against him and against Otto's authority. The trouble increased until it became an open rebellion, which convulsed Germany for nearly four years. If Otto had been personally popular, it might have been soon suppressed; but the petty princes and the people inclined to one side or the other, according to the prospects of success, and the kingdom, finally, seemed on the point of falling to pieces. In this crisis there came what appeared to be a new misfortune, but which, most unexpectedly, put an end to the wasting strife. The Hungarians again broke into Germany, and Ludolf and Conrad granted them permission to pass through their territory to reach and ravage their father's lands. This alliance with an hereditary and barbarous enemy turned the whole people to Otto's side; the long rebellion came rapidly to an end, and all troubles were settled by a diet held at the close of 954.

The next year the Hungarians came again in greater numbers than ever, and, crossing Bavaria, laid siege to Augsburg. But Otto now marched against them with all the military strength of Germany, and on August 10, 955, met them in a decisive battle. Conrad of Lorraine led the attack and decided the fate of the day; but in the moment of victory, having lifted his visor to breathe more freely, a Hungarian arrow pierced his neck and he fell dead. Nearly all the enemy were slaughtered or drowned in the River Lech. Only a few scattered fugitives returned to Hungary to tell the tale, and from that day no new invasion was ever undertaken against Germany. On the contrary, the Bavarians pressed eastward and spread themselves along the Danube and among the Styrian Alps, while the Bohemians took possession of Moravia, so that the boundary lines between the three races then became very nearly what they are at the present day.

Soon afterward Otto lost his brother, Henry of Bavaria, and, two years later his son Ludolf, who died in Italy while endeavoring to make himself King of the Lombards. A new disturbance in Saxony was suppressed, and with it there was an end of civil war in Germany during Otto's reign. We have already stated that he was proud and ambitious: the crown of a Roman Emperor, which still seemed the highest title on earth, had probably always hovered before his mind, and now the opportunity of attaining it came. The Pope, John XII., who found himself in danger of being driven from Rome by Berengar, the Lombard, sent a pressing call for help to Otto, who entered upon his second journey to Italy in 961.

He first called a diet together at Worms, and procured the acceptance of his son Otto, then only six years old, as his successor. The child was solemnly crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle; the Archbishop Bruno of Cologne was appointed his guardian and vicegerent of the realm during Otto's absence, and the latter was left free to carry out his designs beyond the Alps. He was received with rejoicing by the Lombards, and the Iron Crown of the kingdom was placed on his head by the Archbishop of Milan. He then advanced to Rome and was crowned emperor in St. Peter's by the Pope on February 2, 962. The "Holy Roman Empire of the German nation" which was thus founded by Otto I. was to continue for 844 years, until finally swept away by Napoleon. Within this period it was only for short intervals that the imperial throne was to be vacant, although in the sixteenth century the Pope's influence in the choice and coronation amounted to nothing. This close relation of Pope and emperor established by Otto I. and John XII., though it seemed splendid and harmonious at first, soon proved far otherwise. In fact, this renewal of the Empire was the source of centuries of loss and suffering to Germany. It was a sham and a delusion—a will-o'-the wisp which led rulers and people aside from the true path of civilization and left them floundering in quagmires of war.

Otto had hardly returned to Lombardy before the Pope, who began to see that he had crowned his own master, conspired against him. The Pope feared that Otto, in winning over Italian bishops by rich donations, was playing a far too important rôle in Italy and was in danger of eclipsing the Papal power. Therefore he treacherously called on the Byzantine emperor for aid, incited the Hungarians, and even entered into correspondence with the Saracens in Corsica. All Italy became so turbulent that three years elapsed before the Emperor Otto succeeded in restoring order. He took Rome by force of arms, deposed the Pope and set up another, of his own appointment, banished Berengar, and compelled the universal recognition of his own sovereignty. Then, with the remnants of an army which had almost been destroyed by war and pestilence, he returned to Germany in 965.

A grand festival was held at Cologne to celebrate his new honors and victories. His mother, the aged Queen Mathilde, Lothar, reigning King of France, and all the dukes and princes of Germany were present, and the people came in multitudes from far and wide. The internal peace of the empire had not been disturbed during Otto's absence, and his journey of inspection was a series of peaceful and splendid pageants. An insurrection having broken out among the Lombards the following year, he sent Duke Burkhard of Suabia to suppress it in his name; but it soon became evident that his own presence was necessary. He thereupon took a last farewell of his old mother, and returned to Italy in the autumn of 966.

Lombardy was soon brought to order, and the rebellious nobles banished to Germany. As Otto approached Rome the people restored the Pope he had appointed, whom they had in the meantime deposed; they were also compelled to give up the leaders of the revolt, who were tried and executed. Otto claimed the right of appointing the civil governor of Rome, who should rule in his name. He gave back to the Pope the territory which the latter had received from Pippin the Short two hundred years before, but nearly all of which had been taken from the church by the Lombards. In return the Pope agreed to govern this territory as a part, or province, of the empire, and to crown Otto's son as emperor, in advance of his accession to the throne.

These new successes seem to have quite turned Otto's mind from the duty he owed to the German people; henceforth he strove only to increase the power and splendor of his house. His next step was to demand the hand of the Princess Theophania, a daughter of one of the Byzantine emperors, for his son Otto. The Eastern court neither consented nor refused; ambassadors were sent back and forth until the emperor became weary of the delay. Following the suggestion of his offended pride, Otto undertook a campaign against southern Italy, parts of which still acknowledged the Byzantine rule. The war lasted for several years, without any positive result; but the hand of Theophania was finally promised to young Otto, and she reached Rome in the beginning of the year 972. Her beauty, grace, and intelligence at once won the hearts of Otto's followers, who had been up to that time opposed to the marriage. Although her betrothed husband was only seventeen, and she was a year younger, the nuptials were celebrated in April, and the emperor then immediately returned to Germany with his court and army.

All that Otto could show to balance his six years' neglect of his own land and people was the title of "the Great," which the Italians bestowed upon him, and a princess of Constantinople, who spoke Greek and looked upon the Germans as barbarians, for his daughter-in-law. His return was celebrated by a grand festival held at Quedlinburg at Easter, 973. All the dukes and reigning counts of the empire were present, the kings of Bohemia and Poland, ambassadors from Constantinople, Bulgaria, Russia, Denmark, and Hungary, and from the caliph of Cordova in Spain. Even Charlemagne never enjoyed such a triumph; but in the midst of the festivities Otto's first friend and supporter, Hermann Billung, whom he had made Duke of Saxony, suddenly died. The emperor became impressed with the idea that his own end was near: he retired to Memleben in Thuringia, where his father died, and on May 6, 973, was stricken with apoplexy, at the age of sixty-one. He died seated in his chair and surrounded by his princely guests, and was buried in Magdeburg, by the side of his first wife, Edith of England.

Otto completed the work which Henry commenced, and left Germany the first power in Europe. Had his mind been as clear and impartial, his plans as broad and intelligent, as Charlemagne's, he might have laid the basis of a permanent empire; but in an evil hour he called the phantom of the scepter of the world from the grave of Roman power, and, believing that he held it, turned the ages that were to follow him into the path of war, disunion, and misery.

Chapter XIV

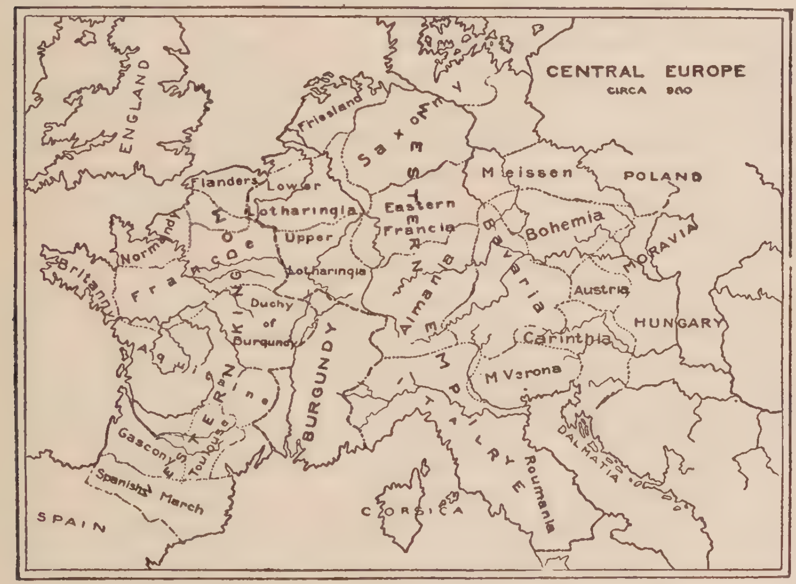
THE DECLINE OF THE SAXON DYNASTY. 973-1024

OTTO II., already crowned as king and emperor, began his reign as one authorized "by the grace of God." Although only eighteen years old, and both physically and intellectually immature, his succession was immediately acknowledged by the rulers of the smaller German states. He was short and stout, and of such a ruddy complexion that the people gave him the name of "Otto the Red." He had been carefully educated, and possessed excellent qualities of heart and mind, but he had not been tried by adversity, like his father and grandfather, and failed to inherit either the patience or the energy of either. At first his mother, the widowed Empress Adelheid, conducted the government of the empire, and with such prudence that all were satisfied. Soon, however, the Empress Theophania became jealous of her mother-in-law's influence, and the latter was compelled to retire to her former home in Burgundy.

The first internal trouble came from Henry II., Duke of Bavaria, the son of Otto the Great's rebellious brother, and cousin of Otto II. He was ambitious to convert Bavaria into an independent kingdom: in fact he had himself crowned king at Ratisbon, but in 976 he was defeated, taken prisoner, and banished to Holland by the emperor. Bavaria was united to Suabia, and the eastern provinces on the Danube were erected into a separate principality, which was the beginning of Austria as a new German power.

At the same time Otto II. was forced to carry on new wars with Bohemia and Denmark, in both of which he maintained the frontiers established by his father. But Lothar, King of France, used the opportunity to get possession of Lorraine and even to take Aix-la-Chapelle, Charlemagne's capital, in the summer of 978. The German people were so enraged at this treacherous invasion that Otto II. had no difficulty in raising an army of sixty thousand men, with which he marched to Paris in the autumn of the same year. The city was so well fortified and defended that he found it prudent to raise the siege as winter approached; but first, on the heights of Montmartre, his army chanted a Te Deum as a warning to the enemy within the walls. The strife was prolonged until 980, when it was settled by a personal interview of the emperor and the King of France, at which Lorraine was restored to Germany.

In 981 Otto II. went to Italy. His mother, Adelheid, came to Pavia to meet him, and a complete reconciliation took place between them. Then he advanced to Rome, quieted the dissensions in the government of the city, and received as his guests Conrad, King of Burgundy, and Hugh Capet, destined to be the ancestor of a long line of French kings. At this time both the Byzantine Greeks and the Saracens were ravaging southern Italy, and it was Otto II.'s duty, as Roman emperor, to drive them from the land. The two bitterly hostile races became allies in order to resist him, and the war was carried on fiercely until the summer of 982 without any result; then, on July 13, on the coast of Calabria, the imperial army was literally cut to pieces by the Saracens. The emperor escaped capture by riding into the Mediterranean and swimming to a ship which lay near. When he was taken on board



he found it to be a Greek vessel; but whether he was recognized or not (for the accounts vary), he prevailed upon the captain to set him ashore at Rossano, where the Empress Theophania was awaiting his return from battle.

This was a severe blow, but it aroused the national spirit of Germany. Otto II., having returned to northern Italy, summoned a general diet of the empire to meet at Verona in the summer of 983. All the subject dukes and princes attended, even the kings of Burgundy and Bohemia. Here for the first time the Lombard Italians appeared on equal footing with the Saxons, Franks, and Bavarians, acknowledged the authority of the empire, and elected Otto II.'s son, another Otto, only three years old, as his successor. Preparations were made for a grand war against the Saracens and the Eastern Empire, but before they were completed Otto II. died, at the age of twenty-eight, after a rule of ten years. His body was taken to Rome and buried in St. Peter's in an antique sarcophagus, over which was placed a vase of porphyry. That vase serves to-day as a christening font in St. Peter's. The sarcophagus is now a watering trough in the palace of the Quirinal.

The news of his death reached Aix-la-Chapelle at the very time when his infant son was crowned king as Otto III., in accordance with the decree of the Diet of Verona. A dispute now arose as to the guardianship of the child, between the widowed Empress Theophania and Henry II. of Bavaria, who at once returned from his exile in Holland. The latter aimed at usurping the imperial throne, but he was incautious enough to betray his design too soon, and met with such opposition that he was lucky in being allowed to retain his former place as Duke of Bavaria. The Empress Theophania reigned in Germany in her son's name, while Adelheid, widow of Otto the Great, reigned in Italy. The former, however, had the assistance of Willigis, Archbishop of Mayence, a man of great wisdom and integrity. He was the son of a poor Saxon wheelwright, and chose for his coat-of-arms as an archbishop a wheel, with the words: "Willigis, forget not thine origin." When Theophania died, in 991, her place was taken by Otto III.'s grandmother, Adelheid, who chose the dukes of Saxony, Suabia, Bavaria, and Tuscany as her councilors.

During this time the Wends in Prussia again arose, and after a long and wasting war, in which the German settlements beyond the Elbe received little help from the imperial government, the latter were either conquered or driven back. The relations between Germany and France were also actually those of war, although there were no open hostilities. The struggle for the throne of France between Duke Charles, the last of the Carolingian line, and Hugh Capet, which ended in the triumph of the latter, broke the last link of blood and tradition connecting the two countries. They had been jealous relatives hitherto; now they became strangers, and it is not long before history records them as enemies.

When Otto III. was sixteen years old, in 996, he took the imperial government in his own hands. His education had been more Greek than German; he was ashamed of his Saxon blood, and named himself, in his edicts, "a Greek by birth and a Roman by right of rule." He was a strange, unsteady, fantastic character, whose leading idea was to surround himself with the absurd ceremonies of the Byzantine court, and to make Rome the capital of his empire. His reign was a farce, compared with that of his grandfather, the great Otto, and yet it was the natural consequence of the latter's perverted ambition.

Otto III.'s first act was to march to Rome in order to be crowned as emperor by the Pope, John XV., in exchange for assisting him against Crescentius, a Roman noble who had usurped the civil government. But the Pope died before his arrival, and Otto thereupon appointed his own cousin, Bruno, a young man of twenty-four, who took the Papal chair as Gregory V. The new-made Pope, of course, crowned him as Roman emperor a few days afterward. The people in those days were accustomed to submit to any authority, spiritual or political, which was strong enough to support its own claims, but this bargain was a little too plain and bare-faced; and Otto had hardly returned to Germany before the Roman, Crescentius, drove away Gregory V. and set up a new Pope of his own appointment.

The Wends in Prussia were giving trouble and the Scandinavians and Danes ravaged all the northern coast of Germany; but the boy-emperor, without giving a thought to his immediate duty, hastened back to Italy in 997, took Crescentius prisoner and beheaded him, barbarously mutilated the rival Pope, and reinstated Gregory V. When the latter died, in 999, Otto made his own teacher, Gerbert of Rheims, Pope, under the name of Sylvester II. In spite of the reverence of the common people for the Papal office, they always believed Pope Sylvester to be a magician and in league with the devil. He was the most learned man of his day, and in his knowledge of natural science was far in advance of his time; but such accomplishments were then very rare in Italy, and unheard-of in a Pope. Otto III. remained three years longer in Italy, dividing his time between pompous festivals and visits to religious anchorites.

In the year 1000 he was recalled to Germany. His father's sister, Mathilde, who had governed the country as well as she was able during his absence, was dead, and there were difficulties, not of a political nature (for to such he paid no attention), but in the organization of the church, which he was anxious to settle. The Poles were converted to Christianity by this time, and their spiritual head was the Archbishop of Magdeburg; but now they demanded a separate and national diocese. This Otto granted to their duke, or king, Boleslav, with such other independent rights, that the authority of the German Empire soon ceased to be acknowledged by the Poles. Otto made a pilgrimage to the tomb of St. Adalbert of Prague, who was slain by the Prussian pagans, then visited Aix-la-Chapelle, where, following a half-delirious fancy, he descended into the vault where lay the body of Charlemagne, in the hope of hearing a voice or receiving a sign which might direct him how to restore the Roman Empire.[1]

The new Pope, Sylvester II., after Otto III.'s departure from Rome, found himself in as difficult a position as his predecessor, Gregory V. He was also obliged to call the emperor to his aid, and the latter returned to Italy in 1001. He established his court in a palace on the Aventine Hill, in Rome, and maintained his authority for a little while, in spite of a fierce popular revolt. Then, becoming restless, yet not knowing what to do, he wandered up and down Italy, paid a mysterious visit to Venice by night, and finally returned to Rome, to find the gates barred against him. He began a siege, but before anything was accomplished he died in 1002, as was generally believed, of poison. The nobles and the imperial guards who accompanied him took charge of his body, cut their way through a population in rebellion against his rule, and carried him over the Alps to Germany, where he was buried in Aix-la-Chapelle.

---

[1] This visit of Otto III. to the tomb of Charlemagne made a great impression on the writers of the time; they made up and circulated the wildest stories and details about the event, which have persisted even to our own day. But no historian believes any longer that Charles sat upright on a golden throne, that his finger-nails had burst through his gloves, or that Otto repaired his great predecessor's nose with a point of gold.

The next year Pope Sylvester II. died, and Rome fell into the hands of the counts of Tusculum, who tried to make the Papacy a hereditary dignity in their family. One of them, a boy of seventeen, became Pope as John XVI., and during the following thirty years four other boys held the office of head of the Christian Church, crowned emperors, and blessed or excommunicated at their will. This was the end of the grand political and spiritual empire which Charlemagne had planned, two centuries before—a fantastic, visionary youth as emperor, and a weak, ignorant boy as Pope!

At Otto III.'s death there were three claimants to the throne, belonging to the Saxon dynasty; but his nearest relative, Henry, third Duke of Bavaria, and great-grandson of King Henry I. the Fowler, was finally elected. Suabia, Saxony, and Lorraine did not immediately acquiesce in the choice, but they soon found it expedient to submit. Henry's authority was thus established within Germany; but on its frontiers and in Italy, which was now considered a genuine part of "the Roman Empire," the usual troubles awaited him. He was a man of weak constitution and only average intellect, but well-meaning, conscientious, and probably as just as it was possible for him to be, under the circumstances. His life as emperor, was "a battle and a march"; but its heaviest burdens were inherited from his predecessors. He was obliged to correct twenty years of misrule, or rather no rule, and he courageously gave the remainder of his life to the task.

The Polish duke, Boleslav, sought to unite Bohemia and all the Slavonic territory eastward of the Elbe under his own sway. This brought him into direct collision with the claims of Germany, and the question was not settled until after three long and bloody wars. Finally, in 1018, a treaty was made between Henry II. and Boleslav, by which Bohemia remained tributary to the German Empire, and the province of Meissen (in the present kingdom of Saxony) became an appanage of Poland. By this time the Wends had secured possession of northern Prussia, between the Elbe and the Oder, thrown off the German rule, and returned to their ancient pagan faith.

In Italy, Arduin of Ivrea succeeded in inciting the Lombards to revolt, and proclaimed himself king of an independent Italian nation. Henry II. crossed the Alps in 1006 and took Pavia, whose inhabitants rose against him. In the struggle which followed the city was burned to the ground. After Henry's return to Germany Arduin recovered his influence and power, became practically king, and pressed the Pope, Benedict VIII., so hard that the latter went personally to Henry II. (as Leo III. had gone to Charlemagne) and implored his assistance. In the autumn of 1013 Henry went with the Pope to Italy, entered Pavia without resistance, restored the Papal authority in Rome, and was crowned emperor in February, 1014. He returned immediately afterward to Germany; and Italy, after Arduin's death, the following year, remained comparatively quiet.

Even before the wars with Poland came to an end, in 1018, other troubles broke out in the west. There were disturbances along the frontier in Flanders, rebellions in Luxemburg and Lorraine, and finally a quarrel with Burgundy, the king of which, Rudolf III., was Henry II.'s uncle, and had chosen him as his heir. This inheritance gave Germany the eastern part of France nearly to the Mediterranean and the greater portion of Switzerland. But the Burgundian nobles refused to be thus transferred, and did not give their consent until after Henry's armies had twice invaded their country.

Finally, in 1020, when there was temporary peace throughout the empire, the cathedral at Bamberg, which the emperor had taken great pride in building, was consecrated with splendid ceremonies. The Pope came across the Alps to be present, and he employed the opportunity to persuade Henry to return to Italy and free the southern part of the peninsula from the Byzantine Greeks, who had advanced as far as Capua and threatened Rome. The emperor consented. In 1021 he marched into southern Italy with a large army, expelled the Greeks from the greater portion of their conquered territory, and then, having lost his best troops by pestilence, returned home. He there continued to travel to and fro, settling difficulties and observing the condition of the people. After long struggles the power of the empire seemed to be again secured; but when he began to strengthen it by the arts of peace his own strength was exhausted. He died near Göttingen, in the summer of 1024, and was buried in the cathedral of Bamberg. With him expired the dynasty of the Saxon emperors, less pitifully, however, than either the Merovingian or Carolingian line.

When Otto the Great, toward the close of his reign, neglected

Germany and occupied himself with establishing his dominion in Italy, he prepared the way for the rapid decline of the imperial power at home in the hands of his successors. The reigning dukes, counts, and even the petty feudal lords no longer watched and held subordinate, soon became practically independent. Except in Friesland, Saxony, and the Alps, the people had no voice in political matters, and thus the growth of a general national sentiment, such as had been fostered by Charlemagne and Henry I., was again destroyed. In proportion as the smaller states were governed as if they were separate lands, their populations became separated in feeling and interest. Henry II. tried to be an emperor of Germany: he visited Italy rather on account of what he believed to be the duties of his office than from natural inclination to reign there; but he was not able to restore the same authority at home as Otto the Great had exercised.

Henry II. was a pious man, and favored the Catholic Church in all practicable ways. He made numerous and rich grants of land to churches and monasteries, but always with the reservation of his own rights as sovereign. After his death he was made a saint by order of the Pope, but he failed to live, either as a saint or emperor, in the traditions of the people.

Chapter XV

THE FRANCONIAN EMPERORS. 1024-1106

ON September 4, 1024, the German nobles, clergy, and people came together on the banks of the Rhine, near Mayence, to elect a new emperor. There were fifty or sixty thousand persons in all, forming two great camps. There were two prominent candidates for the throne, but neither of them belonged to the established reigning houses, the members of which seemed to be so jealous of one another that they mutually destroyed their own chances. The two who were brought forward were cousins, both named Conrad, both from Franconia (the land of the Frankish Germans), and both great-grandsons of Duke Conrad, Otto the Great's son-in-law, who fell so gallantly in the great battle of the Lech against the Hungarians, in 955.

For five days the claims of the two were canvassed by the electors. The elder Conrad had married Gisela, the widow of Duke Ernest of Suabia, which gave him a somewhat higher place among the princes; and therefore after the cousins had agreed that either would accept the other's election as valid and final, the votes turned to his side. The people, who were present merely as spectators (for they had now no longer any part in the election), hailed the new monarch with shouts of joy, and he was immediately crowned king of Germany in the cathedral of Mayence.

Conrad—who was Conrad II. in the list of German emperors—rested his authority mainly upon his own experience, ability, and knowledge of statesmanship. But his queen, Gisela, was a woman of unusual intelligence and energy, and she faithfully assisted him in his duties. He was a man of stately and commanding appearance, and seemed so well fitted for his new dignity that when he made the usual journey through Germany neither dukes nor people hesitated to give him their allegiance. Even the nobles of Lorraine, who were dissatisfied with his election, found it prudent to yield without serious opposition.

The death of Henry II., nevertheless, was the signal for three threatening movements against the empire. In Italy the Lombards rose, and, in their hatred of what they now considered to be a foreign rule (quite forgetting their own German origin), they razed to the ground the imperial palace at Pavia: in Burgundy King Rudolf declared that he would resist Conrad's claim to the sovereignty of the country, which, being himself childless, he had promised to Henry II.; and in Poland, Boleslav, who now called himself king, declared that his former treaties with Germany were no longer binding upon him. But Conrad II. was favored by fortune. The Polish king died, and the power which he had built up—for his kingdom, like that of the Goths, reached from the Baltic to the Danube, from the Elbe to central Russia—was again shattered by the quarrels of his sons. In Burgundy, Duke Rudolf was without heirs, and finally found himself compelled to recognize the German sovereign as his successor. With Canute, who was then king of Denmark and England, Conrad II. made a treaty of peace and friendship, restoring Schleswig to the Danish crown and readopting the River Eider as the boundary.

In the spring of 1026 Conrad went to Italy. Pavia shut her gates against him, but those of Milan were opened, and the Lombard bishops and nobles came to offer him homage. He was crowned with the Iron Crown, and during the course of the year all the cities in northern Italy—even Pavia, which promised to rebuild the imperial palace—acknowledged his sway. In March, 1027, he went to Rome and was crowned emperor by the Pope, John XIX., one of the young counts of Tusculum, who had succeeded to the Papacy as a boy of twelve! King Canute and Rudolf of Burgundy were present at the ceremony, and Conrad betrothed his son Henry to the Danish princess Gunhilde, daughter of the former.

After the coronation the emperor paid a rapid visit to southern Italy, where the Normans had secured a foothold ten years before, and, by defending the country against the Greeks and Saracens, were rapidly making themselves its rulers. He found it easier to accept them as vassals than to drive them out, but in so doing he added a new and turbulent element to those which already distracted Italy. However, there was now external quiet, at least, and he went back to Germany.

Here his stepson, Ernest II. of Suabia, who claimed the crown of Burgundy, had already risen in rebellion against him.

He was not supported, even by his own people, and the emperor imprisoned him in a strong fortress until the Empress Gisela, by her prayers, procured his liberation. Conrad offered to give him back his dukedom provided he would capture and deliver up his intimate friend, Count Werner of Kyburg, who was supposed to exercise an evil influence over him. Ernest refused, sought his friend, and the two, after living for some time as outlaws in the Black Forest, at last fell in a conflict with the imperial troops. The sympathies of the people were turned to the young duke by his hard fate and tragic death, and during the Middle Ages the narrative poem of "Ernest of Suabia" was sung everywhere throughout Germany. Future generations forgot that he had been a rebel against the emperor, and only remembered his unswerving devotion to his friend.

Conrad II. next undertook a campaign against Poland, which was wholly unsuccessful: he was driven back to the Elbe with great losses. Before he could renew the war he was called upon to assist Count Albert of Austria (as the Bavarian East-Mark along the Danube must henceforth be called) in a war against Stephen, the first Christian king of Hungary. The result was a treaty of peace which left him free to march once more against Poland and reconquer the provinces which Henry II. had granted to Boleslav. The remaining task of his reign, the attachment of Burgundy to the German Empire, was also accomplished without any great difficulty. King Rudolf, before his death in 1032, sent his crown and scepter to Conrad II., in fulfillment of a promise made when they met at Rome six years before. Although Count Odo of Champagne, Rudolf's nearest relative, disputed the succession, and all southern Burgundy espoused his cause, he was unable to resist the emperor. Conrad was crowned king of Burgundy at Payerne, in Switzerland, and two years later received the homage of nearly all the clergy and nobles of the country in Lyons.

At that time Burgundy comprised the whole valley of the Rhone, from its cradle in the Alps to the Mediterranean, the half of Switzerland, the cities of Dijon and Besançon and the territory surrounding them. All this now became, and for some centuries remained, a part of the German Empire. Its relation to the latter, however, resembled that of the Lombard kingdom in Italy: its subjection was acknowledged, it was obliged to furnish troops in special emergencies, but it preserved its own institutions and laws, and repelled any closer political union. The continual intercourse of its people with those of France slowly obliterated the original differences between them and increased the hostility of the Burgundians to the German sway. But the rulers of that day were not wise enough to see very far in advance, and the sovereignty of Burgundy was temporarily a gain to the German power.

Early in 1037 Conrad was called again to Italy by complaints of the despotic rule of the local governors, especially of the Archbishop Heribert of Milan. It was he who first organized in Milan a city militia into which all classes of the population were enrolled. He, too, first gave the Milanese their *caroccio,* a chariot with a mast, to which were fixed a crucifix and a standard; this was to be a rallying-point in desperate battles, and to typify civic liberty. Heribert now organized a far-reaching conspiracy, the aim of which was to free Italy entirely from the German yoke. He incited the people of Milan to support his plans, and became in a short time the leader of a serious revolt. The emperor deposed him, prevailed upon the Pope, Benedict IX., to place him under the ban of the church, and besieged Milan with all his forces; but in vain. The bishop defied both emperor and Pope: the city was too strongly fortified to be taken, and out of this resistance grew the idea of independence which was afterward developed in the Italian republics, until the latter weakened, wasted, and finally destroyed the authority of the German (or "Roman") emperors in Italy. Conrad was obliged to return home without having conquered Archbishop Heribert and the Milanese.

In the spring of 1039 he died suddenly at Utrecht, aged sixty, and was buried in the cathedral at Speyer, which he had begun to build. He was a very shrewd and intelligent ruler, who planned better than he was able to perform. He certainly greatly increased the imperial power during his life by recognizing the hereditary rights of the smaller princes and replacing the chief reigning dukes, whenever circumstances rendered it possible, by members of his own family. As the selection of the bishops and archbishops remained in his hands, the clergy were of course his immediate dependents. It was their interest, as well as that of the common people, among whom knowledge and the arts were beginning to take root, that peace should be preserved among the different German states, and this could only be done by making the emperor's authority paramount. Nevertheless, Conrad II. was never popular. A historian of that time says: "No one sighed when his sudden death was announced."

His son, Henry III., already crowned King of Germany as a boy, now mounted the throne. He was twenty-three years old, distinguished for bodily as well as mental qualities, and was apparently far more competent to rule than many of his predecessors had been. Germany was quiet, and he encountered no opposition.

But although the condition of Germany and, indeed, of the greater part of Europe was now more settled and peaceful than it had been for a long time, the consequences of the previous wars and disturbances were very severely felt. The land had been visited both by pestilence and famine, and there was much suffering; there was also corruption in the church and in civil government. When things seemed to be at their worst a change for the better was instituted in a most unexpected quarter and in a very singular manner.

In the monastery of Cluny, in Burgundy, the monks, under the leadership of their abbot, Odilo, determined to introduce a sterner, a more pious, and Christian spirit into the life of the age. They began to preach what they called the *treuga Dei,* the "truce of God," according to which, from every Wednesday evening until the next Monday morning, all feuds or fights were forbidden throughout the land. Several hundred monasteries in France and Burgundy joined the "Congregation of Cluny"; the church accepted the idea of the "truce of God," and the worldly rulers were called upon to enforce it. Henry III. saw in this new movement an agent which might be used to his own advantage no less than for the general good, and he favored it as far as lay in his power. He summoned a diet of the German princes, urged the measure upon them in an eloquent speech, and set the example by proclaiming a full and free pardon to all who had been his enemies. The change was too sudden to be acceptable to many of the princes, but they obeyed as far as convenient, and the German people, almost for the first time in their history, enjoyed a general peace and security.

The "Congregation of Cluny" preached also against the universal simony, by which clerical dignities were bought and sold. Many of the priests, abbots, and bishops, and even some of the Popes, had bought their appointments, and the power of the church was thus often exercised by the most unworthy hands. Henry III., who saw the necessity of a reform, sought out the most pious, pure, and intelligent priests and made them abbots and bishops, refusing all payments or presents. He then undertook to raise the Papal power out of the deplorable condition into which it had fallen. There were then three rival Popes in Rome, each of whom officially excommunicated and cursed the others and their followers.

In the summer of 1046 Henry III. crossed the Alps with a magnificent retinue. The quarrels between the nobles and the people in the cities of Lombardy were compromised at his approach, and he found order and submission everywhere. He called a synod, which was held at Sutri, an old Etruscan town, thirty miles north of Rome, and there, with the consent of the bishops, deposed all three of the Popes, appointing the Bishop of Bamberg to the vacant office. The latter took the Papal chair under the name of Clement II., and the very same day crowned Henry III. as Roman Emperor To the Roman people this seemed no less a bargain than the case of Otto III., and they grew more than ever impatient of the rule of both emperor and Pope. Their republican instincts, although repressed by a fierce and powerful nobility, were kept alive by the examples of Venice and Milan, and they dreamed as ardently of a free Rome in the twelfth century as in the nineteenth.

Up to this time the Roman clergy and people had taken part, so far as the mere forms were concerned, in the election of the Popes. They were now compelled (of course very unwillingly) to give up this ancient right, and allow the emperor to choose the candidate, who was then sure to be elected by bishops of imperial appointment. In fact, during the nine remaining years of Henry III.'s reign he selected three other Popes, Clement II. and his first two successors having all died suddenly, probably from poison, after very short reigns. But this was the end of absolute German authority and Roman submission; within thirty years the Christian world beheld a spectacle of a totally opposite character.

Henry III. visited southern Italy, confirmed the Normans in their rule, as his father had done, and then returned to Germany. He had reached the climax of his power, and the very means he had taken to secure it now involved him in troubles which gradually weakened his influence in Germany. He was generous, but improvident and reckless; he bestowed principalities on personal friends, regardless of hereditary claims or the wishes of the people, and gave away large sums of money, which were raised by imposing hard terms upon the tenants of the crown lands. A new war with Hungary, and the combined revolt of Godfrey of Lorraine, Baldwin of Flanders, and Dietrich of Holland against him, diminished his military resources; and even his success, at the end of four weary years, did not add to his renown. Leo IX., the third Pope of his appointment, was called upon to assist him by hurling the ban of the church against the rebellious princes. He also called to his assistance Danish and English fleets, which assailed Holland and Flanders, while he subdued Godfrey of Lorraine. The latter soon afterward married the widowed Countess Beatrix of Tuscany, and thus became ruler of nearly all Italy between the Po and the Tiber.

By the year 1051 all the German states except Saxony were governed by relatives or personal friends of the emperor. In order to counteract the power of Bernhard, duke of the Saxons, of whom he was jealous, he made another friend, Adalbert, Archbishop of Bremen, with authority over priests and churches in northern Germany, Denmark, Scandinavia, and even Iceland. He also built a stately palace at Goslar, at the foot of the Harz Mountains, and made it as often as possible his residence, in order to watch the Saxons. Both these measures, however, increased his unpopularity with the German people.

Leo IX., in 1053, marched against the Normans who were threatening the southern border of the Roman territory, but was defeated and taken prisoner. The victors treated him with all possible reverence, and he soon saw the policy of making friends of such a bold and warlike people. A treaty of peace was concluded, wherein the Normans acknowledged themselves dependents of the Papal power: no notice was taken of the fact that they had already acknowledged that of the German-Roman emperors. This event, and the increasing authority of his old enemy, Godfrey, in Tuscany, led Henry III. to visit Italy again in 1054. Although he held the diet of Lombardy and a grand review on the Roncalian plains near Piacenza, he accomplished nothing by his journey: he did not even visit Rome. Leo IX. died the same year, and Henry appointed a new Pope, Victor II., who, like his predecessor, became an instrument in the hands of Hildebrand of Savona, a monk of Cluny, who was even then, although few suspected it, the real head and ruler of the Christian world.

The emperor discovered that a plot had been formed to assassinate him on his way to Germany. This danger over, he had an interview with King Henry of France, which became so violent that he challenged the latter to single combat. Henry avoided the issue by marching away during the following night. The emperor retired to his palace at Goslar, in October, 1056, where he received a visit from Pope Victor II. He was broken in health and hopes, and the news of a defeat of his army by the Slavonians in Prussia is supposed to have hastened his end. He died during the month, not yet forty years old, leaving a boy of six as his successor.

The child, Henry IV., had already been crowned King of Germany, and his mother, the Empress Agnes, was chosen regent during his minority. The Bishop of Augsburg was her adviser, and her first acts were those of prudence and reconciliation. Peace was concluded with Godfrey of Lorraine and Baldwin of Flanders, minor troubles in the states were quieted, and the empire enjoyed the promise of peace. But the empress, who was a woman of a weak, yielding nature, was soon led to make appointments which created fresh troubles. The reigning princes used the opportunity to make themselves more independent, and their mutual jealousy and hostility increased in proportion as they became stronger. The nobles and people of Rome renewed their attempt to have a share in the choice of a Pope; and, although the appointment was finally left to the empress, the Pope of her selection, Nicholas II., instead of being subservient to the interests of the German Empire, allied himself with the Normans and with the republican party in the cities of Lombardy.

At home the troubles of the Empress Agnes increased year by year. A conspiracy to murder young Henry IV. was fortunately discovered; then a second, at the head of which was Archbishop Hanno of Cologne, was formed, to take him from his mother's care and give him into stronger hands. In 1062, when Henry IV. was twelve years old, Hanno visited the empress at Kaiserswerth, on the Rhine. After a splendid banquet he invited the young king to look at his vessel, which lay near the palace; but no sooner had the latter stepped upon the deck than the conspirators seized their oars and pushed into the stream. Henry boldly sprang into the water; Count Ekbert of Brunswick sprang after him, and both, after nearly drowning in their struggle, were taken on board. The empress stood on the shore, crying for help, and her people sought to intercept the vessel, but in vain: the plot was successful. A meeting of reigning princes soon afterward appointed Archbishop Hanno guardian of the young king.

He was a hard, stern master, and Henry IV. became his enemy for life. Within a year Hanno was obliged to yield his place to Adalbert, Archbishop of Bremen, who was as much too indulgent as the former had been too rigid. The jealousy of the other priests and princes was now turned against Adalbert, and his position became so difficult that, in 1065, when Henry IV. was only fifteen years old, he presented him to an imperial diet, held at Worms, and there invested him with the sword, the token of manhood. Thenceforth Henry reigned in his own name, although Adalbert's guardianship was not given up until a year later. Then he was driven away by a union of the other bishops and the reigning princes, and his rival, Hanno, was forced, as chief counselor, upon the angry and unwilling king.

The next year Henry was married to the Italian princess, Bertha, to whom his father had betrothed him as a child. Before three years had elapsed he demanded to be divorced from her; but, although the Archbishop of Mayence and the imperial diet were persuaded to consent, the Pope, Alexander II., following the advice of his Chancellor, Hildebrand of Savona, refused his sanction. Henry finally decided to take back his wife, whose beauty, patience, and forgiving nature compelled him to love her at last. About the same time his father's enemy and his own, Godfrey of Lorraine and Tuscany, died; another enemy, Otto, Duke of Bavaria, fell into his hands, and was deposed; and there only remained Magnus, Duke of the Saxons, who seemed hostile to his authority. The events of Henry's youth and the character of his education made him impatient and distrustful: he inherited the pride and arbitrary will of his father and grandfather, without their prudence, and he surrounded himself with wild and reckless princes of his own age, whose counsels too often influenced his policy.

No Franconian emperor could be popular with the fierce, independent Saxons. When it was rumored that Henry IV. had sought an alliance with the Danish king, Swen, against them,—when he called upon them, at the same time, to march against Poland,—their suspicions were aroused, and the whole population rose in opposition. To the number of sixty thousand, headed by Otto, the deposed Duke of Bavaria (who was a Saxon noble), they marched to the Harzburg, the imperial castle near Goslar. Henry rejected

THE EXCOMMUNICATED GERMAN EMPEROR, HENRY IV, STANDS BAREFOOTED IN THE SNOW BEFORE THE CASTLE GATES AT CANOSSA, BEGGING ADMITTANCE FROM GREGORY VII

Painting by O. Friedrich —page 135

their conditions, his castle was besieged, and he escaped with difficulty, accompanied only by a few followers. He endeavored to persuade the other German princes to support him, but they refused. They even entered into a conspiracy to dethrone him; the bishops favored the plan, and his cause seemed nearly hopeless.

In this emergency the cities along the Rhine, which were very weary of priestly rule, and now saw a chance to strengthen themselves by assisting the emperor, openly befriended him. They were able, however, to give him but little military support, and in February, 1074, he was compelled to conclude a treaty with the Saxons, which granted them almost everything they demanded, even to the demolition of the fortresses he had built on their territory. But in the flush of victory they also tore down the imperial palace at Goslar, the church, and the sepulcher wherein Henry III. was buried. This placed them in the wrong, and Henry IV. marched into Saxony with an immense army which he had called together for the purpose of invading Hungary. The Saxons armed themselves to resist, but they were attacked when unprepared, defeated after a terrible battle, and their land laid waste with fire and sword. Thus were again verified, a thousand years later, the words of Tiberius—that it was not necessary to attempt the conquest of the Germans, for, if left alone, they would destroy themselves.

The power of Henry IV. seemed now to be assured; but the lowest humiliation which ever befell a monarch was in store for him. The monk of Cluny, Hildebrand of Savona, who had inspired the policy of four Popes during twenty-four years, became Pope himself in 1073, under the name of Gregory VII. He was a man of iron will and inexhaustible energy, wise and far-seeing beyond any of his contemporaries, and unquestionably sincere in his aims. He remodeled the Papal office, gave it a new character and importance, and left his own indelible mark on the Church of Rome from that day to this. For the first five hundred years after Christ the Pope had been merely the Bishop of Rome; for the second five hundred years he had been the nominal head of the church, but subordinate to the political rulers and dependent upon them. Gregory VII. determined to make the office a spiritual power, above all other powers, with sole and final authority over the bishops, priests, and other servants of the church. It was to be a religious empire, existing by divine right, independent of the fate of nations or the will of kings.

He relied mainly upon two measures to accomplish this change—the suppression of simony and the celibacy of the priesthood. He determined that the priests should belong wholly to the church; that the human ties of wife and children should be denied to them. This measure had been proposed before, but never carried into effect on account of the opposition of the married bishops and priests; but the increase of the monastic orders and their greater influence at this time favored Gregory's design. Even after celibacy was proclaimed as a law of the church, in 1074, it encountered the most violent opposition, and the law was not universally obeyed by the priests until two or three centuries later.

In 1075 Gregory promulgated a law against simony, in which he not only prohibited the sale of all offices of the church, but claimed that the bishops could only receive the ring and crozier, the symbols of their authority, from the hands of the Pope. The same year he sent messengers to Henry IV., calling upon him to enforce this law in Germany, under penalty of excommunication. The surprise and anger of the king may easily be imagined: it was a language which no Pope had ever before used toward the imperial power. Indeed, when we consider that Gregory at this time was quarreling with the Normans, the Lombard cities, and the King of France, and that a party in Rome was becoming hostile to his rule, the act seems almost that of a madman.

Henry IV. called a synod, which met at Worms. The bishops, at his request, unanimously declared that Gregory VII. was deposed from the Papacy, and a message was sent to the people of Rome ordering them to drive him from the city. But just at that time Gregory had put down a conspiracy of the nobles to assassinate him by calling the people to his aid, and he was temporarily popular with the latter. He answered Henry IV. with the ban of excommunication—which would have been harmless enough but for the deep-seated discontent of the Germans with the king's rule. The Saxons, whom he had treated with the greatest harshness and indignity since their subjection, immediately regarded the Papal ban as a justification for throwing off their allegiance to the emperor. The other German states showed a cold and distrustful temper, and their princes failed to come together when Henry called a national diet. In the meantime the ambassadors of Gregory were busy, and the petty courts were filled with secret intrigues for dethroning the king and electing a new one.

In October, 1076, finally, a convention of princes was held on the Rhine, near Mayence. Henry was not allowed to be present, but he sent messengers, offering to yield to their demands if they would only guard the dignity of the crown. The princes rejected all his offers, and finally adjourned to meet in Augsburg early in 1077, when the Pope was asked to be present. As soon as Henry IV. learned that Gregory had accepted the invitation he was seized with a panic as unkingly as his former violence. Accompanied only by a small retinue, he hastened to Burgundy, crossed Mont Cenis in the dead of winter, encountering many sufferings and dangers on the way, and entered Italy with the intention of meeting Pope Gregory and persuading him to remove the ban of the church. He believed that the Pope would not refuse, for the moral sentiment of Europe would have utterly condemned any Pope who should have steadily refused absolution to a sinner ready to make the fullest atonement for the wrongs he had committed. The whole teaching of the church was that grace was obtainable for him who sought it by the proper means. The high priest of all Christendom could not afford to be wanting in mercy. Henry also wished to prevent Gregory VII. from coming to Augsburg, where he would have extended his influence over the German clergy. And finally Henry clearly saw that he must have the ban removed in order to withdraw from his vassals in Germany their reason for breaking their allegiance. To chastise successfully his German rebel vassals he must first make peace with the Pope; hence his sudden and often misrepresented journey to Italy in the winter snows of 1076.

At the news of his arrival in Lombardy, the bishops and nobles from all the cities flocked to his support, and demanded only that he should lead them against the Pope. The movement was so threatening that Gregory himself, already on his way to Germany, halted, and retired for a time to the castle of Canossa (in the Apennines, not far from Parma), which belonged to his devoted friend, the Countess Matilda of Tuscany. Thither Henry humbly bent his steps, and, presenting himself before the gate barefoot and clad only in a shirt of sackcloth, asked to be admitted and pardoned as a repentant sinner. Gregory, so unexpectedly triumphant, prolonged the satisfaction which he enjoyed in the king's humiliation: for three days the latter waited at the gate in snow and rain before he was received. Then, after promising to obey the Pope, he received the kiss of peace, and the two took communion together in the castle chapel.

But the kiss of peace at Canossa did not for long preserve friendly relations between Pope and emperor. Henry gave protection to some of Gregory's Lombard enemies, and Gregory on his side continued to urge the Saxons to revolt against the emperor's authority. Finally the German princes, encouraged by the Pope, proclaimed Rudolf of Suabia king in Henry's place. The latter, supported by the Lombards, hastened back to Germany. A terrible war ensued, which lasted for more than two years, and was characterized by barbarities on both sides. Gregory a second time excommunicated the king, but without political effect. The war terminated in 1080 by the death of Rudolf in battle, and Henry's authority became gradually established throughout Germany.

His first movement now was against the Pope. He crossed the Alps with a large army, was crowned King of Lombardy, and then marched toward Rome. Gregory's only friend was the Countess Matilda of Tuscany, who resisted Henry's advances until the cities of Pisa and Lucca espoused his cause. Then he laid siege to Rome, and a long war began, during which the ancient city suffered more than it had endured for centuries. The end of the struggle was a devastation worse than that inflicted by Geiseric. When Henry finally gained possession of the city, and the Pope was besieged in the castle of St. Angelo, the latter released Robert Guiscard, chief of the Normans in southern Italy, from the ban of excommunication which he had pronounced against him, and called him to his aid. A Norman army, numbering thirty-six thousand men, mostly Saracens, approached Rome, and Henry was compelled to retreat. The Pope was released, but his allies burned all the city between the Lateran and the Coliseum, slaughtered thousands of the inhabitants, carried away thousands as slaves, and left a desert of blood and ruin behind them. Gregory VII. did not remain in Rome after their departure: he accompanied them to Salerno, and there died in 1085. His last words were: "I have loved justice and hated iniquity, therefore I die in exile."

Henry IV. immediately appointed a new Pope, Clement III., by whom he was crowned emperor in St. Peter's. After Gregory's death the Normans and the French selected another Pope, Urban II., and until both died, fifteen years afterward, they and their partisans never ceased fighting. The Emperor Henry, however, who returned to Germany immediately after his coronation, took little part in this quarrel. The last twenty years of his reign were full of trouble and misfortune. His eldest son, Conrad, who had lived mostly in Lombardy, was in 1092 persuaded to claim the crown of Italy, was acknowledged by the hostile Pope, and allied himself with his father's enemies. For a time he was very successful, but the movement gradually failed, and he ended his days in prison in 1101.

Henry's hopes were now turned to his younger son, Henry, who was of a cold, calculating, treacherous disposition. The political and religious foes of the emperor were still actively scheming for his overthrow, and they succeeded in making the young Henry their instrument, as they had made his brother Conrad. During the long struggles of his reign the emperor's strongest and most faithful supporter had been Frederick of Hohenstaufen, a Suabian count to whom he had given his daughter in marriage, and whom he finally made Duke of Suabia. The latter died in 1104, and most of the German princes, with the young Henry at their head, arose in rebellion. For nearly a year the country was again desolated by a furious civil war; but the cities along the Rhine, which were rapidly increasing in wealth and population, took the emperor's side, as before, and enabled him to keep the field against his son. At last, in December, 1105, their armies lay face to face near the River Moselle, and an interview took place between the two. Father and son embraced each other; tears were shed, repentance offered, and pardon given; then both set out together for Mayence, where it was agreed that a national diet should settle all difficulties.

On the way, however, the treacherous son persuaded his father to rest in the castle of Böckelheim, there instantly shut the gates upon him and held him prisoner until he compelled him to abdicate. But after this act the emperor succeeded in making his escape: the people rallied to his support, and he was still unconquered when death came to end his many troubles, in Liege, in August, 1106. He was perhaps the most signally unfortunate of all the German emperors. The errors of his education, the follies and passions of his youth, the one fatal weakness of his manhood, were gradually corrected by experience; but he could not undo their consequences. After he had become comparatively wise and energetic the internal dissensions of Germany and the conflict between the Catholic Church and the imperial power had grown too strong to be suppressed by his hand. When he might have done right, he lacked either the knowledge or the will; when he finally tried to do right, he had lost the power.

During the latter years of his reign occurred a great historical event, the consequences of which were most important to Europe, though not immediately so to Germany. Peter the Hermit preached a crusade to the Holy Land for the purpose of conquering Jerusalem from the Saracens. The "Congregation of Cluny" had prepared the way for this movement; one of the two Popes, Urban II., encouraged it, and finally Godfrey of Bouillon (of the ducal family of Lorraine) put himself at its head. The soldiers of this, the first crusade, came chiefly from France, Burgundy, and Italy. Although many of them passed through Germany on their way to the East, they made few recruits among the people; but the success of the undertaking, the capture of Jerusalem by Godfrey in 1099, and the religious enthusiasm which it created, tended greatly to strengthen the Papal power, and also that faction in the church which was hostile to Henry IV.

Chapter XVI

END OF THE FRANCONIAN DYNASTY, AND RISE OF THE HOHENSTAUFENS. 1106-1152

HENRY V. showed his true character immediately after his accession to the throne. Although he had been previously supported by the Papal party, he was no sooner acknowledged King of Germany than he imitated his father in opposing the claims of the church. The new Pope, Paschal II., had recognized the bishops whom Henry IV. had appointed, but at the same time he issued a manifesto declaring that all future appointments must come from him. Henry V. answered this with a letter of defiance, and continued to select his own bishops and abbots, which the Pope, not being able to resist, was obliged to suffer.

During the disturbed fifty years of Henry IV.'s reign Burgundy and Italy had become practically independent of Germany; Hungary and Poland had thrown off their dependent condition, and even the Wends beyond the Elbe were no longer loyal to the empire. Within the German states the imperial power was already so much weakened by the establishment of hereditary dukes and counts not related to the ruling family that the king (or emperor) exercised very little direct authority over the people. The crown lands had been mostly either given away in exchange for assistance, or lost during the civil wars: the feudal system was firmly fastened upon the country, and only a few free cities—like those in Italy—kept alive the ancient spirit of liberty and political equality. Under such a system a monarch could accomplish little, unless he was both wiser and stronger than the reigning princes under him; there was no general national sentiment to which he could appeal. Henry V. was cold, stern, heartless, and unprincipled; but he inspired a wholesome fear among his princely "vassals," and kept them in better order than his father had done.

After giving the first years of his reign to the settlement of troubles on the frontiers of the empire, Henry V. prepared, in 1110, for a journey to Italy. So many followers came to him that when he had crossed the Alps and mustered them on the plains of Piacenza there were thirty thousand knights present. With such a force no resistance was possible. The Lombard cities acknowledged him; Countess Matilda of Tuscany followed their example; and the Pope met him in a friendly spirit. The latter was willing to crown Henry as emperor, but still claimed the right of investing the bishops. This Henry positively refused to grant, and, after much deliberation, the Pope finally proposed an arrangement absolutely revolutionary in its character and amounting to a complete separation of church and state. The church was to surrender to the crown all the landed possessions and rights of the empire which had come into the hands of the clergy since the time of Charlemagne. Whole counties were thus to be surrendered, and priests were no longer to be princes, no longer to hold feudal estates, nor to exercise temporal powers of government. On the contrary, the clergy were to content themselves with tithes and pious offerings. The king, in return, was to relinquish the right of investiture; things temporal were to be wholly separated from things spiritual. Although the change would be attended with some difficulty in Germany, Henry consented, and the long quarrel between Pope and emperor was apparently settled.

On February 12, 1111, the king entered Rome at the head of a magnificent procession, and was met at the gate of St. Peter's by the Pope, who walked with him hand in hand to the platform before the high altar. But when the latter read aloud the agreement, the bishops and other clergy raised their voices in angry dissent. They had no mind to lose their great estates and were wild with excitement; they even declared Paschal guilty of heresy. The debate lasted so long that one of the German knights cried out: "Why so many words? Our king means to be crowned emperor, like Karl the Great!" The Pope refused the act of coronation, and was immediately made prisoner. The people of Rome rose in arms, and a terrible fight ensued. Henry narrowly escaped death in the streets, and was compelled to encamp outside the city. At the end of two months the resistance both of Pope and people was crushed; Henry was crowned emperor, and Paschal II. gave up his claim for the investiture of the bishops.

Henry V. returned immediately to Germany, defeated the rebellious Thuringians and Saxons in 1113, and the following year was married to Matilda, daughter of Henry I. of England. This was the climax of his power and splendor. It was soon followed by troubles with Friesland, Cologne, Thuringia, and Saxony, and in the course of two years his authority was set at naught over nearly all northern Germany. Only Suabia, under his nephew, Frederick of Hohenstaufen, and Duke Welf II. of Bavaria, remained faithful to him.

He was obliged to leave Germany in this state and hasten to Italy in 1116, on account of the death of the Countess Matilda, who had bequeathed Tuscany to the church, although she had previously acknowledged the imperial sovereignty. Henry claimed and secured possession of her territory; he then visited Rome, the Pope leaving the city to avoid meeting him. The latter died soon afterward, and for a time a new Pope, of the emperor's own appointment, was installed in the Vatican. The Papal party, which now included all the French bishops, immediately elected another, who excommunicated Henry V.; but the act was of no consequence, and was in fact overlooked by Calixtus II., who succeeded to the Papal chair in 1118.

The same year Henry returned to Germany and succeeded, chiefly through the aid of Frederick of Hohenstaufen, in establishing his authority. The quarrel with the Papal power concerning the investiture of the bishops was still unsettled; the new Pope, Calixtus II., who was a Burgundian and a relative of the emperor, remained in France, where his claims were supported. After long delays and many preliminary negotiations, a diet was held at Worms in September, 1122, when the question was finally settled. The election and appointment of the bishops and their investiture with the ring and crozier were given to the Pope, but the elections were required to be made in the emperor's presence; then the emperor was to confer upon them their temporal powers and their feudal estates by a special investiture with the scepter; this imperial ceremony was to precede the final consecration of the bishop by the Pope. This arrangement is known as the Concordat of Worms. Although in every sense a compromise, the advantage nevertheless lay with the Papacy; the spiritual principalities in Germany were greatly emancipated from the authority of the crown; the emperor's right of approving by his presence the nominee of the church was very different from having the nomination of the candidate in his own hand. The Concordat of Worms was hailed at the time as a fortunate settlement of a strife which had lasted for fifty years. In the Rhine meadows near Worms the document was finally signed. The Papal legate extended to the emperor the kiss of peace and administered to him the holy sacrament of communion. The ban was thereby loosed and Henry V. was received back into the arms of the church.

The troubles in northern Germany, however, were not subdued by this final peace with Rome. Henry V. died at Utrecht, in Holland, in May, 1125, leaving no children, which the people believed to be a punishment for his unnatural treatment of his father. He was buried in the magnificent newly constructed cathedral of Speyer, one of the first of the great triumphs of church architecture in Germany. There was no one to mourn his death, for even his efforts to increase the imperial authority, and thereby to create a national sentiment among the Germans, were neutralized by his coldness, haughtiness, and want of principle as a man. The people were forced by the necessities of their situation to support their own reigning princes, in the hope of regaining from the latter some of their lost political rights.

Another circumstance tended to prevent the German emperors from acquiring any fixed power. They had no capital city, such as France already possessed in Paris. After the coronation the monarch immediately commenced his "royal ride," visiting all portions of the country, and receiving, personally, the allegiance of the whole people. Then during his reign he was constantly migrating from one castle to another, either to settle local difficulties, to collect the income of his scattered estates, or for his own pleasure. There was thus no central point to which the Germans could look as the seat of the imperial rule. The emperor was a Frank, a Saxon, a Bavarian, or Suabian, by turns, but never permanently a German with a national capital grander than any of the petty courts.

Henry V. left all his estates and treasures to his nephew, Frederick of Hohenstaufen, but not the crown jewels and insignia, which were to be bestowed by the national diet upon his successor. Frederick and his brother Conrad, Duke of Franconia, were the natural heirs to the crown; but, as the Hohenstaufen family had stood faithfully by Henry IV. and V. in their conflicts with the Pope, it was unpopular with the priests and reigning princes. At the diet the Archbishop of Mayence nominated Lothar of Saxony, who was chosen after a very stormy session. His first acts were to beg the Pope to confirm his election, and then to give up his right to have the bishops and abbots elected in his presence. He next demanded of Frederick of Hohenstaufen the royal estates which the latter had inherited from Henry V. Being defeated in the war which followed, he strengthened his party by marrying his only daughter, Gertrude, to Henry the Proud, Duke of Bavaria (grandson of Duke Welf, Henry IV.'s friend, whence this family was called the Welfs or Guelphs). By this marriage Henry the Proud became also Duke of Saxony; but a part of the dukedom, called the North Mark, was separated and given to a Saxon noble, a friend of Lothar, named Albert the Bear.

Lothar was called to Italy in 1132 by Innocent II., one of two Popes who, in consequence of a division in the College of Cardinals, had been chosen at the same time. The emperor was crowned in the Lateran, in June, 1133, while the other Pope, Anaclete II., was reigning in the Vatican. He acquired the territory of the Countess Matilda of Tuscany, but only on condition of paying four hundred pounds of silver annually to the church. The former state of affairs was thus suddenly reversed: the emperor acknowledged himself a dependent of the temporal Papal power. When he returned to Germany the same year Lothar succeeded in subduing the resistance of the Hohenstaufens, and then bound the reigning princes of Germany, by solemn oath, to keep the peace for the term of twelve years.

This truce enabled him to return to Italy for the purpose of assisting Pope Innocent, who had been expelled from Rome. Innocent's rival, Anaclete II., was supported by the Norman king, Roger II. of Sicily, who, in the summer of 1137, was driven out of southern Italy by Lothar's army. But quarrels broke out with the Pisans, who were his allies, and with Pope Innocent, for whose cause he was fighting, and Lothar finally set out for Germany, without even visiting Rome. At Trient, in the Tyrol, he was seized with a mortal sickness, and died on the Brenner Pass of the Alps, in a shepherd's hut. His body was taken to Saxony and buried in the chapel of a monastery which he had founded there.

A national diet was called to meet in May, 1138, and elect a successor. Lothar's son-in-law, Henry the Proud, Duke of Bavaria, Saxony, and Tuscany (which the emperor had transferred to him), seemed to have the greatest right to the throne; but he was already so important that the jealousy of the other reigning princes was excited against him. Their policy was to choose a weak rather than a strong ruler—one who would not interfere with the authority in their own lands. Conrad of Hohenstaufen took advantage of this jealousy; he courted the favor of the princes and the bishops, and was chosen and crowned by the latter, three months before the time fixed for the meeting of the diet. The movement, though in violation of all law, succeeded perfectly: a new diet was called, for form's sake, and all the German princes, except Henry the Proud, acquiesced in Conrad's election as Conrad III.

In order to maintain his place the new king was compelled to break the power of his rival. He therefore declared that Henry the Proud should not be allowed to govern two lands at the same time, and gave all Saxony to Albert the Bear. When Henry rose in resistance Conrad proclaimed that he had forfeited Bavaria, which he gave to Leopold of Austria. In this emergency Henry the Proud called upon the Saxons to help him, and had raised a considerable force when he suddenly died, toward the end of the year 1139. His brother, Welf, continued the struggle in Bavaria, in the interest of his young son, Henry, afterward called "the Lion." He attempted to raise the siege of the town of Weinsberg, which was beleaguered by Conrad's army, but failed. The tradition relates that when the town was forced to surrender the women sent a deputation to Conrad, begging to be allowed to leave with such goods as they could carry on their backs. When this was granted and the gates were opened, they came out, carrying their husbands, sons, or brothers as their dearest possessions.

In this struggle, for the first time the names of Welf and Waiblinger (from the little town of Waiblingen, in Würtemberg, which belonged to the Hohenstaufens) were first used as party cries in battle. In the Italian language they became "Guelph" and "Ghibelline," and for hundreds of years they retained an intense and powerful significance. The term Welf (Guelph) very soon came to mean the party of the Pope, and Waiblinger (Ghibelline) that of the German emperor. The end of this first conflict was that, in 1142, young Henry the Lion (great-grandson of Duke Welf of Bavaria) was allowed to be Duke of Saxony. From him descended the later dukes of Brunswick and Hanover, who retained the family name of Welf, or Guelph, which, through George I., is also that of the royal family of England at this day. Albert the Bear was obliged to be satisfied with the North Mark, which was extended to the eastward of the Elbe and made an independent principality. He called himself Markgraf (border count) of Brandenburg, and thus laid the basis of a new state, which, in the course of centuries, developed into Prussia.

About this time the Christian monarchy in Jerusalem began to be threatened with overthrow by the Saracens, and the Pope, Eugene III., responded to the appeals for help from the Holy Land by calling for a second crusade. He not only promised forgiveness of all sins, but released the volunteers from payment of their debts and whatever obligations they might have contracted under oath. France was the first to answer the call; then Bernard of Clairvaux visited Germany and made passionate appeals to the people. The first effect of his speeches was the plunder and murder of the Jews in the cities along the Rhine; then the slow German blood was roused to enthusiasm for the rescue of the Holy Land, and the impulse became so great that King Conrad was compelled to join in the movement. His nephew, the red-bearded Frederick of Suabia, also put the cross on his mantle; nearly all the German princes and many of the common people, except the Saxons, followed the example.

In May, 1147, the crusaders assembled at Ratisbon. There were present seventy thousand horsemen in armor, without counting the foot soldiers and followers. All the robber bands and notorious criminals of Germany joined the army. Conrad led the march down the Danube, through Austria and Thrace, to Constantinople. Louis VII., King of France, followed him, with a nearly equal force, leaving the German states through which he passed in a famished condition. The two armies, united at Constantinople, advanced through Asia Minor, but were so reduced by battles, disease, and hardships on the way that the few who reached Palestine were too weak to reconquer the ground lost by the King of Jerusalem.

During the year 1149 the German princes returned from the East with their few surviving followers. The loss of so many robbers and robber knights was nevertheless a great gain to the country: the people enjoyed more peace and security than they had known for a long time. Duke Welf of Bavaria (brother of Henry the Proud) was the first to reach Germany. Conrad, fearing that he would make trouble, sent after him the young Duke of Suabia, Frederick Red-Beard (Barbarossa) of Hohenstaufen. It was not long, in fact, before the war-cries of "Guelph!" and "Ghibelline!" were again heard; but Welf, as well as his nephew, Henry the Lion of Saxony, was defeated. During the crusade the latter had carried on a war against the Wends and other Slavonic tribes in Prussia, the chief result of which was the foundation of the city of Lübeck.

Conrad III. now determined to pay his delayed visit to Rome, and be crowned emperor. Immediately after his return from the East he had received a pressing invitation from the Roman senate to come, to recognize the new order of things in the ancient city, and make it the permanent capital of the united German and Italian Empire. Arnold of Brescia, who for years had been advocating the separation of the Papacy from all temporal power, and the reëstablishment of the Catholic Church upon the democratic basis of the early Christian Church, had compelled the Pope, Eugene III., to accept his doctrine. Rome was practically a republic, and Arnold's reform, although fiercely opposed by the bishops, abbots, and all priests holding civil power, made more and more headway among the people. At a national diet, held at Würzburg in 1151, it was decided that Conrad should go to Rome, and the Pope was officially informed of his intention. But before the preparations for the journey were completed Conrad died, in February, 1152, at Bamberg. He was buried there in the cathedral built by Henry II.

Chapter XVII

THE REIGN OF FREDERICK BARBAROSSA. 1152-1197

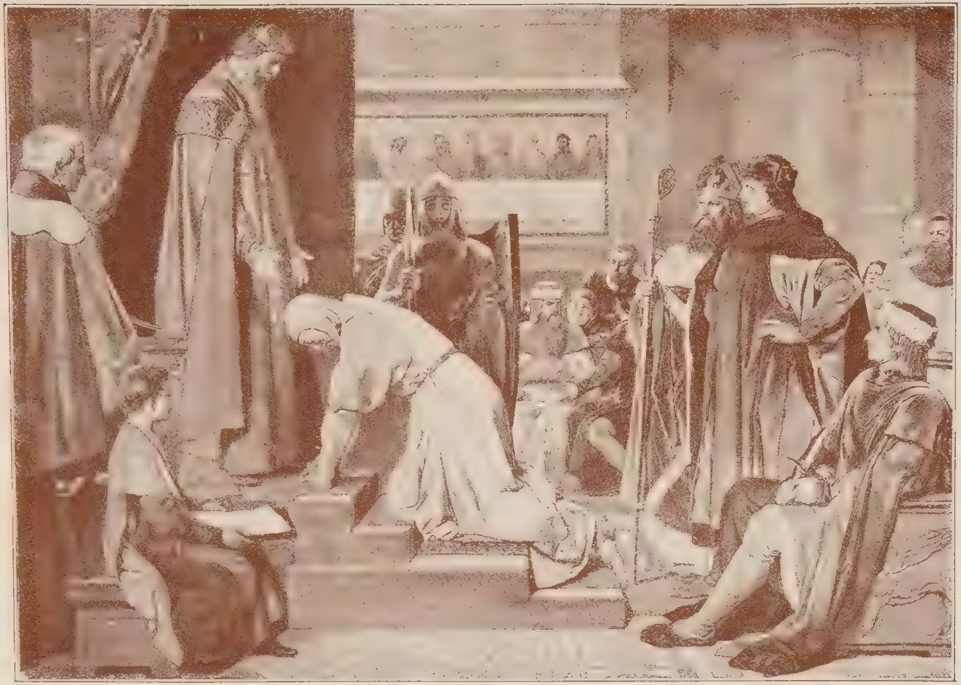
CONRAD left only an infant son at his death, and the German princes, who were learning a little wisdom by this time, determined not to renew the unfortunate experiences of Henry IV.'s minority. The next heir to the throne was Frederick of Suabia, who was now thirty-one years old, handsome, popular, and already renowned as a warrior. He was elected immediately, without opposition, and solemnly crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle. When he made his "royal ride" through Germany, according to custom, the people hailed him with acclamations, hoping for peace and a settled authority after so many civil wars. His mother was a Welf princess, whence there seemed a possibility of terminating the rivalry between Welf and Waiblinger in his election. The Italians always called him "Barbarossa," on account of his red beard, and by this name he is best known in history.

Since the accession of Otto the Great no German monarch had been crowned under such favorable auspices, and none had possessed so many of the qualities of a great ruler. He was shrewd, clear-sighted, intelligent, and of an iron will; he enjoyed the exercise of power, and the aim of his life was to extend and secure it. On the other hand, he was despotic, merciless in his revenge, and sometimes led by the violence of his passions to commit deeds which darkened his name and interfered with his plans of empire.

Frederick I. first assured to the German princes the rights which they already possessed as German princes, coupled with the declaration that he meant to exact the full and strict performance of their duties to him as king. On his first royal journey he arbitrated between Swen and Canute, rival claimants to the throne of Denmark, conferred on the Duke of Bohemia the title of king, and took measures to settle the quarrel between Henry the Lion of Saxony and Henry of Austria, for the possession of Bavaria. In all these matters he showed the will, the decision, and the imposing personal bearing of one who felt that he was born to rule; and had he remained in Germany he might have consolidated the states into one nation. But the phantom of a Roman Empire beckoned him to Italy. The invitation held out to Conrad was not renewed, for Pope Eugene III. was dead, and his successor, Adrian IV. (an Englishman, by the name of Breakspeare), rejected Arnold of Brescia's doctrines. It was in Frederick's power to secure the success of either side; but his first aim was the imperial crown, and he could only gain it without delay by assisting the Pope.

In 1154 Frederick, accompanied by Henry the Lion and many other princes, and a large army, crossed the Brenner Pass, in the Tyrol, and descended into Italy. According to old custom the first camp was pitched on the Roncalian Fields, near Piacenza, and the royal shield was set up as a sign that the chief ruler was present and ready to act as judge in all political troubles. Many complaints were brought to him against the city of Milan, which had become a haughty and despotic republic, and began to oppress Lodi, Como, and other neighboring cities. Frederick saw plainly the trouble which this independent movement in Lombardy would give to him or his successors; but after losing two months and many troops in besieging and destroying Tortona, one of the towns friendly to Milan, he was not strong enough to attack the latter city; so, having been crowned King of Lombardy at Pavia, he marched, in 1155, toward Rome.

At Viterbo he met Pope Adrian IV., and negotiations commenced in regard to his coronation as emperor, which, it seems, was not to be had for nothing. Adrian's first demand was the suppression of the Roman republic, which had driven him from the city. Frederick answered by capturing Arnold of Brescia, who was then in Tuscany, and delivering him into the Pope's hands. The Pope then demanded that Frederick should hold his stirrup when he mounted his mule. This humiliation, second only to that which Henry IV. endured at Canossa, was accepted by the proud Hohenstaufen, in his ambitious haste to be crowned; but even then Rome had to be first taken from the republicans. By some means an entrance was forced into the part of the city on the right bank of the Tiber; Frederick was crowned in all haste and immediately retreated, but not before he and his escort were furiously attacked in the streets by the Roman people. Henry the Lion, by his bravery and presence of mind, saved the new emperor from being slain.



HENRY THE LION BEFORE THE EMPEROR HENRY VI

Painting by P. Janssen

—page 156

Arnold of Brescia was afterward, without the knowledge either of the Pope or of the new emperor, taken from prison by a personal enemy and hanged. His body was burned and his ashes thrown into the Tiber.

Meanwhile the hostility of the Roman people and the heats of summer and the fevers they brought decided Frederick to leave Italy and return to Germany. The glory of his coming was already exhausted. He fought his way through Spoleto; Verona shut its gates upon him, and one robber castle in the Alps held the whole army at bay until it was taken by Otto of Wittelsbach. The unnatural composition of the later Roman Empire was again demonstrated. If during the four centuries which had elapsed since Charlemagne's succession to power the German rule was the curse of Italy, Italy (or the fancied necessity of ruling Italy) was no less a curse to Germany. The strength of the German people for hundreds of years was exhausted in endeavoring to keep up a high-sounding sovereignty, which they could not truly possess, and—in the best interests of the two countries—ought certainly not to have possessed.

On returning to Germany Frederick found enough to do. He restored the internal peace and security of the country with a strong hand, executing the robber knights, tearing down their castles, and even obliging fourteen reigning princes, among whom was the Archbishop of Mayence, to undergo what was considered the shameful punishment of carrying dogs in their arms before the imperial palace. By his second marriage with Beatrix, Princess of Burgundy, he established anew the German authority over that large and rich kingdom; while at a diet held in 1156 he gave Bavaria to Henry the Lion, and pacified Henry of Austria by making his territory an independent dukedom. This was the second phase in the growth of Austria.

Henry the Lion, however, was more a Saxon than a Bavarian. Although he first raised Munich from an insignificant cluster of peasants' huts to the dignity of a city, his energies were chiefly directed toward extending his sway from the Elbe eastward along the Baltic. He conquered Mecklenburg and colonized the country with Saxons, made Lübeck an important commercial center, and slowly Germanized the former territory of the Wends. Albert the Bear, Count of Brandenburg, followed a similar policy, and both were encouraged by the emperor, who was quite willing to see his own sway thus extended. A rhyme current among the common people at the time says:

> "Henry the Lion and Albert the Bear,
> Thereto Frederick with the red hair,
> Three lords are they,
> Who could change the world to their way."

The grand imperial character of Frederick, rather than what he had actually accomplished, had already given him a great reputation throughout Europe. Pope Adrian IV. endeavored to imitate Gregory VII.'s language to Henry IV., in treating with him, but soon found that he was deserted by the German bishops, and thought it prudent to apologize. His manner, nevertheless, and the increasing independence of Milan, called Frederick across the Alps with an army of one hundred thousand men in 1158. Milan then surrounded with strong walls, nine miles in circuit, was besieged and at the end of a month forced to surrender, to rebuild Lodi, and to pay a fine of nine thousand pounds of silver. Afterward the emperor pitched his camp on the Roncalian fields, with a splendor before unknown. Ambassadors from England, France, Hungary, and Constantinople were present, and the imperial power, almost for the first time, was thus recognized as the first in the civilized world.

Just at this time the old Roman law was being revived; eager students were poring over the Code of Justinian, which set forth in the strongest terms the absolute power of emperors. Frederick made use of this renaissance of law to find out exactly what were his imperial rights. Four doctors of the University of Bologna were selected, who discovered so many ancient imperial rights which had fallen into disuse that the emperor's treasury was enriched to the amount of thirty thousand pounds of silver annually by their enforcement. When this system came to be practically applied, Milan and other Lombard cities which claimed the right to elect their own magistrates, and would have lost it under the new order of things, determined to resist. A war ensued. The little city of Crema was the first to be besieged. One detail alone will suffice to show the horror of the siege and the spirit manifested on each side. Frederick I. caused one of his besieging towers, the advance of which had been checked by the defenders, to be literally covered with the persons of hostages and captives from Crema, who were thus exposed to the missiles of their own friends. But this cruel maneuver failed at first, for patriotism and civic pride proved superior to all tenderer feelings. Finally, after a gallant defense of seven months Crema had to yield to the emperor's overwhelming forces and was razed to the ground.

Next came the turn of Milan. In the meantime the Pope, Adrian IV., had died, after threatening the emperor with excommunication. The College of Cardinals was divided, each party electing its own Pope. Of these, Victor IV. was recognized by Frederick, who claimed the right to decide between them, while most of the Italian cities, with France and England, were in favor of Alexander III. The latter immediately excommunicated the emperor, who, without paying any regard to the act, prepared to take his revenge on Milan. In March, 1162, after a long siege, he forced the city to surrender. The magistrates appeared before him in sackcloth, barefoot, with ashes upon their heads and ropes around their necks, and begged him, with tears, to be merciful; but there was no mercy in his heart. He gave the inhabitants eight days to leave the city, then leveled it completely to the earth, and sowed salt upon the ruins as a token that it should never be rebuilt. The rival cities of Pavia, Lodi, and Como rejoiced over this barbarity, and all the towns of northern Italy hastened to submit to all the emperor's claims, even that they should be governed by magistrates of his appointment.

In spite of this apparent submission he had no sooner returned to Germany than the cities of Lombardy began to form a union against him. They were instigated and secretly assisted by Venice, which was already growing powerful through her independence. The Pope whom Frederick had supported was also dead, and he determined to set up a new one instead of recognizing Alexander III. He went to Italy with a small escort, in 1163, but was compelled to go back without accomplishing anything but a second destruction of Tortona, which had been rebuilt. In Germany new disturbances had broken out, but his personal influence was so great that he subdued them temporarily; he also prevailed upon the German bishops to recognize Paschal III., the Pope whom he had appointed. He then set about raising a new army, and finally, in 1166, made his fourth journey to Italy.

This was even more unfortunate than the third journey had been. The Lombard cities, feeling strong through their union, had not only rebuilt Milan and Tortona, but had constructed a new fortified town, which they named, after the Pope, Alessandria. Frederick did not dare to attack them, but marched on to Ancona, which he besieged for seven months, finally accepting a ransom instead of surrender. He then took the part of Rome west of the Tiber and installed his Pope in the Vatican. Soon afterward, in the summer of 1167, a terrible pestilence broke out, which carried off thousands of his best soldiers in a few weeks. His army was so reduced by death that he stole through Lombardy almost as a fugitive, remained hidden among the Alps for months, and finally crossed Mont Cenis with only thirty followers, himself disguised as a common soldier.

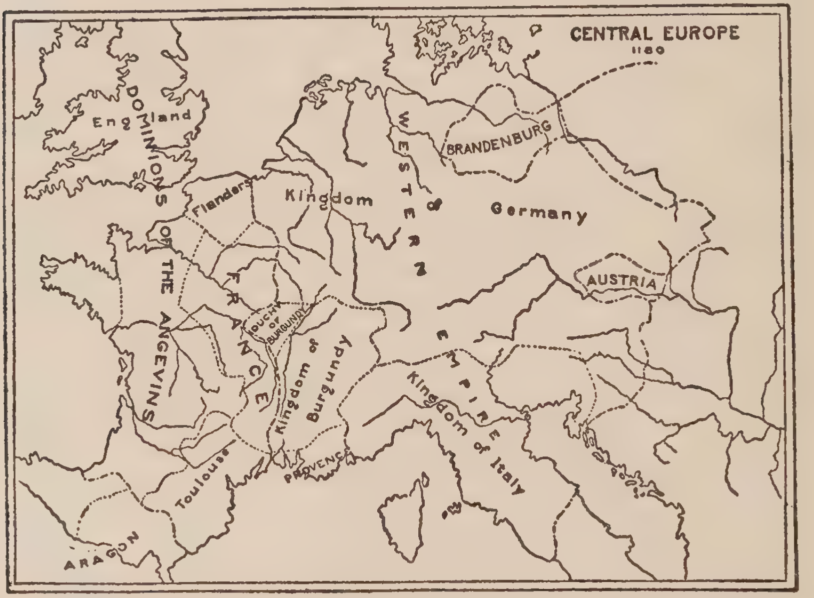
Having reached Germany in safety, Frederick's personal influence at once gave him the power and popularity which he had forever lost in Italy. He found Henry the Lion, who, in addition to Bavaria, now governed nearly all the territory from the Rhine to the Vistula north of the Harz Mountains, at enmity with Albert the Bear and a number of smaller reigning princes. As emperor he settled the questions in dispute, deciding in favor of Henry the Lion, although the increasing power of the latter excited his apprehensions. Henry was too cautious to make the emperor his enemy, but in order to avoid another march to Italy, he set out upon a pilgrimage to Jerusalem. Frederick, however, did not succeed in raising a fresh army to revenge his disgrace until 1174, when he made his fifth journey to Italy. He first besieged the new city of Alessandria, but in vain; then, driven to desperation by his failure, he called for help upon Henry the Lion, who had now returned from the Holy Land. The two met at Chiavenna, in the Italian Alps; but Henry steadfastly refused to aid the emperor, although the latter conquered his own pride so far as to kneel before him.

Bitterly disappointed and humiliated, Frederick appealed to all the German states for aid, but he did not receive fresh troops until the spring of 1176. He then marched upon Milan, but was met by the united forces of Lombardy at Legnano, near Como. The latter fought with such desperation that the imperial army was completely routed, and its camp equipage and stores taken, with many thousands of prisoners, who were treated with the same barbarity which the emperor himself had introduced anew into warfare. He fell from his horse during the fight, and had been for some days reported to be dead, when he suddenly appeared before the Empress Beatrix, at Pavia, having escaped in disguise.

His military strength was now so broken that he was compelled to seek a reconciliation with Pope Alexander III. Envoys went back and forth between the two, the Lombard cities, and the King of Sicily; conferences were held at various places, but months passed and no agreement was reached. Then the Pope, having received Frederick's submission to all his demands, proposed an armistice, which was solemnly concluded in Venice, in August, 1177. There the emperor was released from the Papal excommunication. In front of the portals of St. Mark's Cathedral, where three red slabs of marble now mark the spot, Frederick I. sank at Alexander's feet, but the latter caught and lifted him in his arms, and there was once more peace between the two rival powers. The other Pope, whose claims Frederick had supported up to that time, was left to shift for himself. Before the armistice ceased, in 1183, a treaty was concluded at Constance, by which the Italian cities recognized the emperor as chief ruler, but secured for themselves the right of independent government. Thus twenty years had been wasted, the best blood of Germany squandered, the worst barbarities of war renewed, and Frederick, after enduring shame and humiliation, had not attained one of his haughty personal aims. Yet he was as proud in his bearing as ever; his court lost none of its splendor, and his influence over the German princes and people was undiminished.

He reached Germany again in 1178, full of wrath against Henry the Lion. It was easy to find a pretext for proceeding against him, for the Archbishop of Cologne, the Bishop of Halberstadt, and many nobles had already made complaints. Henry, in fact, was much like Frederick in his nature, but his despotic sternness and pride were more directly exercised upon the people. He raised an army and boldly resisted the imperial power. Again Westphalia, Thuringia, and Saxony were wasted by civil war, and the struggle was prolonged until 1181, when Henry was forced to surrender unconditionally. He was banished to England for three years, his duchy of Bavaria was given to Otto of Wittelsbach, and the greater part of Saxony, from the Rhine to the Baltic, was cut up and divided among the reigning bishops and smaller princes. Only the province of Brunswick was left to Henry the Lion of all his possessions. This was Frederick's policy for diminishing the power of the separate states: the more they were increased in number the greater would be the dependence of each on the emperor.

The ruin of Henry the Lion fully restored Frederick's authority over all Germany. In May, 1184, he gave a grand tournament and festival at Mayence, which surpassed in pomp everything that had before been seen by the people. The flower of knighthood, foreign as well as German, was present: princes, bishops, and lords, scholars and minstrels, seventy thousand knights, and probably hundreds of thousands of the soldiers and common people were gathered together. The emperor, still handsome and towering in manly strength, in spite of his sixty-three years, rode in the lists with his five sons, the eldest of whom, Henry, had already been crowned King of Germany, as his successor. For many years afterward the wandering minstrels sang the glories of this festival, which they compared to those given by the half-fabulous King Arthur.



Immediately afterward, Frederick made his sixth journey to Italy, without an army, but accompanied by a magnificent retinue. The temporary union of the cities against him was at an end, and their former jealousies of each other had broken out more fiercely than ever; so that, instead of meeting him in a hostile spirit, each endeavored to gain his favor, to the damage of the others. It was easy for him to turn this state of affairs to his own personal advantage. The Pope, now Urban III., endeavored to make him give up Tuscany to the church, and opposed his design of marrying his son Henry to Constance, daughter of the King of Sicily, since all southern Italy would thus fall to the Hohenstaufen family. Another excommunication was threatened and would probably have been hurled upon the emperor's head if the Pope had not died before pronouncing it. The marriage of Henry and Constance took place in 1186.

The next year all Europe was shaken by the news that Jerusalem had been taken by Sultan Saladin. A call for a new crusade was made from Rome, and the Christian kings and peoples of Europe responded to it. Richard of the Lion-Heart of England; Philip Augustus of France; and first of all Frederick Barbarossa, Roman Emperor, put the cross on their mantles and prepared to march to the Holy Land. Frederick left his son Henry VI. behind him, as king, but he was still suspicious of Henry the Lion, and demanded that he should either join the crusade or retire again to England, for three years longer. Henry the Lion chose the latter alternative.

The German crusaders, numbering about thirty thousand, met at Ratisbon in May, 1189, and marched overland to Constantinople. Then they took the same route through Asia Minor which had been followed by the second crusade, defeating the sultan and taking the city of Iconium by the way, and after threading the wild passes of the Taurus, reached the borders of Syria. While on the march the emperor received the false message that his son Henry was dead. The tears ran down his beard, no longer red, but silver-white; then, turning to the army, he cried: "My son is dead, but Christ lives! Forward!" On June 10, 1190, either while attempting to ford or to bathe in the little River Calycadnus, not far from Tarsus, he was drowned. The stream, fed by the melted snows of the Taurus, was ice-cold, and one account states that he was not drowned, but died in consequence of the sudden chill. A few of his followers carried his body to Palestine, where it was placed in the Christian church at Tyre. Notwithstanding the heroism of the English Richard at Ascalon, the crusade failed, since the German army was broken up after Frederick's death, most of the knights returning directly home.

The most that can be said for Frederick Barbarossa as a ruler is that no other emperor before or after his time maintained so complete an authority over the German princes. The influence of his personal presence seems to have been very great. The imperial power became splendid and effective in his hands, and although he did nothing to improve the condition of the people beyond establishing order and security, they gradually came to consider him as the representative of a grand national idea. When he went away to the mysterious East, and never returned, the most of them refused to believe that he was dead. By degrees the legend took root among them that he slumbered in a vault underneath the Kyffhäuser—one of his castles on the summit of a mountain near the Harz—and would come forth at the appointed time to make Germany united and free. Nothing in his character, or in the proud and selfish aims of his life, justifies this sentiment which the people attached to his name; but the legend became a symbol of their hopes and prayers through centuries of oppression and desolating war, and the name of "Barbarossa" is sacred to every patriotic heart in Germany even at this day.

Henry the Lion hastened back to Germany at once, and attempted to regain possession of Saxony. Barbarossa's son, Henry VI., took the field against him, and the interminable strife between Welf and Waiblinger was renewed for a time. The king was twenty-five years old, tall and stately like his father, but even more stern and despotic than he. He was impatient to proceed to Italy, both to be crowned emperor and to secure the Norman kingdom of Sicily as his wife's inheritance; therefore, making a temporary truce with Henry the Lion, he hastened to Rome and was there crowned in 1191. His attempt to conquer Naples, which was held by the Norman prince, Tancred, completely failed, and a deadly pestilence in his army compelled him to return to Germany before the close of the same year.

The fight with Henry the Lion was immediately renewed, and during the whole of 1192 northern Germany was ravaged worse than before. In December of that year King Richard the Lion-hearted, returning home overland from Palestine, was taken prisoner by Duke Leopold of Austria, whom he had offended during the crusade, and was delivered to the emperor. As King Richard was the brother-in-law of Henry the Lion, he was held partly as a hostage and partly for the purpose of gaining an enormous ransom for his liberation. His mother came from England, and the sum of 150,000 silver marks which the emperor demanded was paid by her exertions. Still Richard was kept prisoner at

Trifels, a lonely castle among the Vosges Mountains. The legend relates that his minstrel, Blondel, discovered his place of imprisonment by singing the king's favorite song under the windows of all the castles near the Rhine until the song was answered by the well-known voice from within. The German princes, finally, felt that they were disgraced by the emperor's conduct, and they compelled him to liberate Richard, in February, 1194.

The same year a reconciliation was effected with Henry the Lion. The latter devoted himself to the improvement of the people of his little state of Brunswick. He instituted reforms in their laws, encouraged their education, collected books and works of art, and made himself so honored and beloved before his death, in August, 1195, that he was mourned as a benefactor by those who had once hated him as a tyrant. He was sixty-six years old, three years younger than his rival, Barbarossa, whom he fully equaled in energy and ability. Although defeated in his struggle, he laid the basis of a better civil order, a higher and firmer civilization, throughout the north of Germany.

Henry VI., enriched by King Richard's ransom, went to Italy, puchased the assistance of Genoa and Pisa, and easily conquered the Sicilian kingdom. He treated the family of Tancred (who was now dead) with shocking barbarity, tortured and executed his enemies with a cruelty worthy of Nero, and made himself heartily feared and hated. Then he hastened back to Germany, to have the imperial dignity made hereditary in his family. Even here he was on the point of succeeding, in spite of the strong opposition of the Saxon princes, when a Norman insurrection recalled him to Sicily. He demanded the provinces of Macedonia and Epirus from the Greek emperor, encouraged the project of a new crusade, with the design of conquering Constantinople, and evidently dreamed of making himself ruler of the whole Christian world, when death cut him off, in 1197, in his thirty-second year. His widow, Constance of Sicily, was left with a son, Frederick, then only three years old.

Chapter XVIII

THE REIGN OF FREDERICK II. AND THE END OF THE HOHENSTAUFEN LINE. 1197-1268

A STORY was long current among the German people that shortly before Henry VI.'s death the spirit of Theodoric the Great, in giant form, on a black war-steed, rode along the Rhine, presaging trouble to the empire. This legend no doubt originated after the trouble came, and was simply a poetical image of what had already happened. The German princes were determined to have no child again as their hereditary emperor; but only one son of Frederick Barbarossa still lived—Philip of Suabia. The bitter hostility between Welf (Guelph) and Waiblinger (Ghibelline) still existed, and although Philip was chosen by a diet held in Thuringia, the opposite party, secretly assisted by the Pope and by Richard the Lion-hearted of England (who had certainly no reason to be friendly to the Hohenstaufens) met at Aix-la-Chapelle and elected Otto, son of Henry the Lion.

Just at this crisis Innocent III. became Pope. He was as haughty, inflexible, and ambitious as Gregory VII., whom he took for his model. Under him the Inquisition was established. So completely had the relation of the two powers been changed by the humiliation of Henry IV. and Barbarossa that the Pope now claimed the right to decide between the rival monarchs. Of course he gave his voice for Otto, and excommunicated Philip. The effect of this policy, however, was to awaken the jealousy of the German bishops as well as the princes,—even the former found the Papal interference a little too arbitrary,—and Philip, instead of being injured, actually derived advantage from it. In the war which followed Otto lost so much ground that in 1207 he was obliged to flee to England, where he was assisted by King John; but he would probably have again failed, when an unexpected crime made him successful. Philip was murdered in 1208 by Otto of Wittelsbach, Duke of Bavaria, on account of some personal grievance.

As he left no children, and Frederick, the son of Henry VI., was still a boy of fourteen, Otto found no difficulty in persuading the German princes to accept him as king. His first act was to proceed against Philip's murderer and his accomplice, the Bishop of Bamberg. Both fled, but Otto of Wittelsbach was overtaken near Ratisbon and instantly slain. In 1209 King Otto collected a magnificent retinue at Augsburg and set out for Italy in order to be crowned emperor at Rome. As the enemy of the Hohenstaufens he felt sure of a welcome; but Innocent III., whom he met at Viterbo, required a great many special concessions to the Papal power before he would consent to bestow the crown. Even after the ceremony was over, he inhospitably hinted to the new emperor, Otto IV., that he should leave Rome as soon as possible. The gates of the city were shut upon the latter, and his army was left without supplies.

The jurists of Bologna soon convinced Otto that some of his concessions to the Pope were illegal and need not be observed. He therefore took possession of Tuscany, which he had agreed to surrender to the Pope, and afterward marched against southern Italy, where the young Frederick of Hohenstaufen was already acknowledged as King of Sicily. This grandson of Frederick Barbarossa had been carefully educated under the guardianship of Innocent III., after the death of Constance in 1198, and threatened to become a dangerous rival for the imperial crown. Otto's invasion so exasperated the Pope that he excommunicated him, and called upon the German princes to recognize Frederick in his stead. As Otto had never been personally popular in Germany, the Waiblinger, or Hohenstaufen, party, responded to Innocent's proclamation. Suabia and Bavaria and the Archbishop of Mayence pronounced for Frederick, while Saxony, Lorraine, and the northern bishops remained true to Otto. The latter hastened back to Germany in 1212, regained some of his lost ground, and attempted to strengthen his cause by marrying Beatrix, the daughter of Philip. But she died four days after the marriage, and in the meantime Frederick, supplied with money by the Pope, had crossed the Alps.

The young king, who had been educated wholly in Sicily, and who all his life was an Italian rather than a German, was now eighteen years old. He resembled his grandfather, Frederick Barbarossa, in person, was perhaps his equal in strength and decision of character, but far surpassed him or any of his imperial predecessors in knowledge and refinement. He spoke six languages with fluency; he was a poet and minstrel; he loved the arts of peace no less than those of war; yet he was a statesman and a leader of men. On his way to Germany he found the Lombard cities, except Pavia, so hostile to him that he was obliged to cross the Alps by secret and dangerous paths, and when he finally reached the city of Constance, with only sixty followers, Otto IV. was close at hand with a large army. But Constance opened its gates to the young Hohenstaufen; Suabia, the home of his fathers, rose in his support; and the emperor, without even venturing a battle, retreated to Saxony.

For nearly three years the two rivals watched each other without engaging in open hostilities. The stately bearing of Frederick, which he inherited from Barbarossa, the charm and refinement of his manners, and the generosity he exhibited toward all who were friendly to his claims gradually increased the number of his supporters. In 1215 Otto joined King John of England and the Count of Flanders in a war against Philip Augustus of France, and was so signally defeated that his influence in Germany speedily came to an end. Lorraine and Holland declared for Frederick, who was crowned in Aix-la-Chapelle with great pomp the same year. Otto died near Brunswick three years afterward, poor and unhonored.

Pope Innocent III. died in 1216, and Frederick appears to have considered that the assistance which he had received from him was personal and not Papal; for he not only laid claim to the Tuscan possessions, but neglected his promise to engage in a new crusade for the recovery of Jerusalem, and even attempted to control the choice of bishops. At the same time he took measures to secure the coronation of his infant son, Henry, as his successor. His journey to Rome was made in the year 1220. The new Pope, Honorius III., a man of a mild and yielding nature, nevertheless only crowned him on condition that he would observe the violated claims of the church, and especially that he would strictly suppress all heresy in the empire. When he had been crowned emperor as Frederick II., he fixed himself in southern Italy and Sicily for some years, quite neglecting his German rule, but wisely improving the condition of his favorite kingdom. He was signally successful in controlling the Saracens, whose language he spoke, whom he converted into subjects, and who afterward became his best soldiers.

The Pope, however, became very impatient at the non-fulfillment of Frederick's promises, and the latter was compelled, in

1226, to summon a diet of all the German and Italian princes to meet at Verona, in order to make preparations for a new crusade. But the cities of Lombardy, fearing that the army to be raised would be used against them, adopted all possible measures against the meeting of the diet, took possession of the passes of the Adige, and prevented the emperor's son, the young King Henry of Germany, and his followers, from entering Italy. Angry and humiliated, Frederick was compelled to return to Sicily. The next year, 1227, Honorius died, and the cardinals elected as his successor Gregory IX., a man more than eighty years old, but of a remarkable nature. He immediately threatened the emperor with excommunication in case the crusade for the recovery of Jerusalem was not at once undertaken, and the latter was compelled to obey. He hastily collected an army and fleet and departed from Naples, but returned at the end of three days, alleging a serious illness as the cause of his sudden change of plan.

He was instantly excommunicated by Gregory IX., and he replied by a proclamation addressed to all kings and princes—a document breathing defiance and hate against the Pope and his claims. Nevertheless, in order to keep his word in regard to the crusade, he went to the East with a large force in 1228, and obtained, by a treaty with the Sultan of Egypt, the possession of Jerusalem, Bethlehem, Nazareth, and Mount Carmel for ten years. His second wife, the Empress Iolanthe, was the daughter of Guy of Lusignan, the last King of Jerusalem; and therefore when Frederick visited the Holy City he claimed the right, as Guy's heir, of setting the crown of Jerusalem upon his own head. The entire crusade, which was not marked by any deeds of arms, occupied only eight months.

Although he had fulfilled his agreement with Rome, the Pope declared that a crusade undertaken by an excommunicated emperor was a sin, and did all he could to prevent Frederick's success in Palestine. But when the latter returned to Italy he found that the Roman people, a majority of whom were on his side, had driven Gregory IX. from the city. It was therefore comparatively easy for him to come to an agreement, whereby the Pope released him from the ban in return for being reinstated in Rome. This was only a truce, however, not a lasting peace; between two such imperious natures peace was impossible. The agreement, nevertheless, gave Frederick some years of quiet, which he employed in regulating the affairs of his southern Italian kingdom. He abolished, as far as possible, the feudal system introduced by the Normans, and laid the foundation of a representative form of government. His court at Palermo became the resort of learned men and poets, where Arabic, Provençal, Italian, and German poetry was recited, where songs were sung, where the fine arts were encouraged, and the rude and warlike pastimes of former rulers gave way to the spirit of a purer civilization. Although, as we have said, his nature was almost wholly Italian, no emperor after Charlemagne so fostered the growth of a German literature as Frederick II.

But this constitutes his only real service to Germany. While he was enjoying the peaceful and prosperous development of Naples and Sicily, his great empire in the north was practically taking care of itself, for the boy king, Henry, governed chiefly by allowing the reigning bishops, dukes, and princes to do very much as they pleased. There was a season of peace with France, Hungary, and Poland; and Denmark, which was then the only dangerous neighbor, was repelled without the imperial assistance. Frederick II., in his first rivalry with Otto, had shamefully purchased Denmark's favor by giving up all the territory between the Elbe and the Oder. But when Henry, Count of Schwerin, returned from a pilgrimage to the Holy Land, and found the Danish king, Waldemar, in possession of his territory, he organized a revolt in order to recover his rights, and succeeded in taking Waldemar and his son prisoners. Frederick II. now supported him, and the Pope, as a matter of course, supported Denmark. A great battle was fought in Holstein, and the Danes were so signally defeated that they were forced to give up all the German territory except the island of Rügen and a little strip of the Pomeranian coast, besides paying forty-five thousand silver marks for the ransom of Waldemar and his son.

About this time, in consequence of the demand of Pope Innocent III. that all heresy should be treated as a crime and suppressed by force, a new element of conflict with Rome was introduced into Germany. Among other acts of violence, the Stedinger, a tribe of free farmers of Saxon blood, who inhabited the low country near the mouth of the Weser, were literally exterminated by order of the Archbishop of Bremen, to whom they had refused the payment of tithes. In 1230 Gregory IX. wrote to King Henry, urging him to crush out heresy in Germany: "Where is the zeal of Moses, who destroyed 23,000 idolaters in one day? Where is the zeal of

Elijah, who slew 450 prophets with the sword, by the brook Kishon? Against this evil the strongest means must be used: there is need of steel and fire." Conrad of Marburg was appointed inquisitor for Germany by Gregory. The German princes resented this attempt to introduce the Inquisition into Germany. At a diet at Frankfort, in 1234, they decreed that heresy cases should be tried only in their own secular courts, and according to regular judicial procedure. The death of Conrad of Marburg by assassination in 1233 may be said to have marked the end of the Inquisition in Germany.

In 1232 Frederick II., in order that he might seem to fulfill his neglected duties as German emperor, summoned a general diet to meet at Ravenna, but it was prevented by the Lombard cities, as the Diet of Verona had been prevented six years before. Befriended by Venice, however, Frederick marched to Aquileia, and there met his son, King Henry, after a separation of twelve years. Their respective ages were thirty-seven and twenty-one. There was little personal sympathy or affection between them, and they only came together to quarrel. Frederick refused to sanction most of Henry's measures; he demanded, among other things, that the latter should rebuild the strongholds of the robber knights of Hohenlohe, which had been razed to the ground. This seemed to Henry an outrage as well as a humiliation, and he returned home with rebellion in his heart. After proclaiming himself independent king, he entered into an alliance with the cities of Lombardy and even sought the aid of the Pope.

Early in 1235, after an absence of fifteen years, Frederick II. returned to Germany. The revolt, which had seemed so threatening, fell to pieces at his approach. He was again master of the empire without striking a blow. Henry had no course but to surrender without conditions. He was deposed, imprisoned, and finally sent with his family to southern Italy, where he died seven years afterward. The same summer the emperor, whose wife, Iolanthe, had died some years before, was married at Worms to Isabella, sister of King Henry III. of England. The ceremony was attended with festivals of oriental splendor; the attendants of the new empress were Saracens, and she was obliged to live after the manner of Eastern women. Immense numbers of the nobles and people flocked to Worms, and soon afterward to Mayence, where a diet was held. Here, for the first time, the decrees of the diet were publicly read in the German language. Frederick also, as the head of the Waiblinger party, effected a reconciliation with Otto of Brunswick, the head of the Welfs, whereby the rivalry of a hundred years came to an end in Germany; but in Italy the struggle between the Ghibellines and the Guelphs was continued long after the Hohenstaufen line became extinct.

In the autumn of 1236 Frederick conquered and deposed Frederick the Quarrelsome, Duke of Austria, and made Vienna a free imperial city. A diet was held there, at which his second son, Conrad, then nine years old, was accepted as King of Germany. This choice was confirmed by another diet, held the following year at Speyer. The emperor now left Germany, never to return. This brief visit, of a little more than a year, was the only interruption in his thirty years of absence; but it revived his great personal influence over princes and people, it was marked by the full recognition of his authority, and it contributed, in combination with his struggle against the power of Rome which followed, to impress upon his reign a more splendid and successful character than his acts deserve. Although the remainder of his history belongs to Italy, it was not without importance for the later fortunes of Germany, and must therefore be briefly stated.

On returning to Italy, Frederick found himself involved in new difficulties with the independent cities. He was supported by his son-in-law, Ezzelin, and a large army from Naples and Sicily, composed chiefly of Saracens. With this force he won such a victory at Cortenuovo that even Milan offered to yield, under hard conditions. Then Frederick II. made the same mistake as his grandfather, Barbarossa, in similar circumstances. He demanded a complete and unconditional surrender, which so aroused the fear and excited the hate of the Lombards that they united in a new and desperate resistance, which he was unable to crush. Gregory IX., who claimed for the church the Island of Sardinia, which Frederick had given as a kingdom to his son Enzio, hurled a new excommunication against the emperor, and the fiercest of all the quarrels between the two powers now began to rage.

The Pope, in a proclamation, asserted of Frederick: "This pestilential king declares that the world has been deceived by three impostors, Moses, Mohammed, and Christ, the two former of whom died honorably, but the last shamefully, upon the cross. Furthermore, he has dared to assert, but falsely, that all those are fools who believe that Almighty God, the Creator of heaven and earth, was born of a virgin. This heresy he bases on the assertion that no one can be born without the previous union of man and woman, and that there is no need to believe anything at all that cannot be proved by reason and by natural means." He further styled the emperor "that beast of Revelations which came out of the sea; her feet are those of a bear, her teeth those of a lion, and in her members she resembles a leopard; she only opens her mouth to blaspheme the name of the Lord, to attack the Divine Tabernacle and the Saints who inhabit the heavens. Formerly she laid secret ambushes for the church, but now she destroys everything with her claws and iron teeth, and, assisted by the heretics, arises against Christ, in order to drive His name out of the world." Frederick, in an answer which was sent to all the kings and princes of Christendom, wrote: "The Apostolic and Athanasian creeds are mine; Moses I consider a friend of God, and Mohammed an arch-impostor." He enumerated the wrongs he had received at the hands of the Pope, and pointed out to all other rulers the dangers which will threaten them if he himself, the emperor, should fall a victim to the Papal tyranny: "Run for water for the protection of your own house when that of your neighbor burns; for certainly the Pope will think it easy to cast down other princes if he once crushes the head of the empire." And Frederick II. closed his letter, no less venomous than that of his Papal antagonist, by describing the Pope as "that horse in Revelations, from which, as it is written, issued another horse, and he that sat upon him took away the peace of the world, so that the living destroyed each other," and named him further "the second Balaam, the great dragon, yea, even the Antichrist."

Gregory IX. endeavored, but in vain, to set up a rival emperor, but the princes and even the archbishops were opposed to him. Frederick, who was not idle meanwhile, entered the States of the Church, took several cities, and advanced toward Rome. Then the Pope offered to call together a council in Rome to settle all matters in dispute. But those who were summoned to attend were Frederick's enemies, whereupon he issued a proclamation declaring the council void, and warning the bishops and priests against coming to it. Most of them, however, met at Nice in 1241, and embarked for Rome on a Genoese fleet of sixty vessels; but Frederick's son, Enzio, intercepted them with a Pisan and Sicilian fleet, captured 100 cardinals, bishops, and abbots, 100 civil deputies, and 4000 men, and carried them to Naples. The council, therefore, could not be held, and Pope Gregory died soon afterward, almost a hundred years old.

After quarreling for nearly two years the cardinals finally elected a new Pope, Innocent IV. He had been a friend of the emperor, but the latter exclaimed on hearing of his election: "I fear that I have lost a friend among the cardinals, and found an enemy in the chair of St. Peter; no Pope can be a Ghibelline!" His words were true. After fruitless negotiations Innocent IV. went to Lyons and there called together a council of the church which declared that Frederick had forfeited his crowns and dignities, that he was cast out by God, and should be thenceforth accursed. Frederick answered this declaration with a bold statement of the corruptions of the clergy, and the dangers arising from the temporal power of the Popes, which, he asserted, should be suppressed for the sake of Christianity, the early purity of which had been lost. King Louis IX. of France endeavored to bring about a suspension of the struggle, which was now beginning to disturb all Europe; but the Pope angrily refused.

In 1246 Innocent persuaded Henry Raspe, Landgrave of Thuringia, to claim the crown of Germany, and supported him with all the influence and wealth of the church. He was defeated and wounded in the first battle, and soon afterward died, leaving Frederick's son, Conrad, still King of Germany. In Italy the civil war raged with the greatest bitterness and with horrible barbarities on both sides. Frederick exhibited such extraordinary courage and determination that his enemies, encouraged by the church, finally resorted to the basest means of overcoming him. A plot formed for his assassination was discovered in time and the conspirators executed; then an attempt was made to poison him, in which his chancellor and intimate friend, Peter de Vinea—his companion for thirty years—seems to have been implicated. Peter had recommended a certain physician, who brought to the emperor a poisoned medicine. Something in the man's manner excited Frederick's mistrust, and he ordered him to swallow a part of the medicine. When the latter refused it was given to a condemned criminal, who immediately died. The physician was executed and Peter de Vinea sent to prison, where he committed suicide by dashing his head against the walls of his cell.

In the same year, 1249, Frederick's favorite son, Enzio, King of Sardinia, who even surpassed his father in personal beauty, in accomplishments, in poetic talent, and heroic courage, was taken prisoner by the Bolognese. All the father's offers of ransom were rejected, all his menaces defied: Enzio was condemned to perpetual imprisonment and languished twenty-two years in a dungeon, until liberated by death. Frederick was almost broken-hearted, but his courage never flagged. He was encompassed by enemies, he scarcely knew whom to trust, yet he did not yield the least of his claims. And fortune, at last, seemed inclined to turn to his side: a new rival king, William of Holland, whom the Pope had set up against him in Germany, failed to maintain himself; the city of Piacenza, in Lombardy, espoused his cause; the Romans, tired of Innocent IV.'s absence, began to talk of electing another Pope in his stead; and even Innocent himself was growing unpopular in France. Then, while he still defiantly faced the world, and had faith in his final triumph, his body refused to support his fiery spirt. He died in the arms of his youngest son, Manfred, on December 13, 1250, fifty-six years old. He was buried at Palermo; and when his tomb there was opened, in the year 1783, his corpse was found to have scarcely undergone any decay. His head, which lay on a leather cushion, bore a crown, and he wore his coronation robes. The imperial orb was there, but, contrary to usage, was surmounted by no cross. A cross sewn on to his cloak, however, served as a reminder that the mighty monarch had once been on a crusade.

Frederick II. was unquestionably one of the greatest men who ever bore the title of German (or Roman) emperor, yet all the benefits his reign conferred upon Germany were wholly of an indirect character, and were more than balanced by the positive injury occasioned by his neglect. There were strong contradictions in his nature which make it difficult to judge him fairly as a ruler. As a man of great learning and intelligence his ideas were liberal; as a monarch he was violent and despotic. He wore out his life trying to crush the republican cities of Italy; he was jealous of the growth of the free cities of Germany, yet granted them a representation in the diet; and in Sicily, where his sway was undisputed, he was wise, just, and tolerant. In his struggle with the Popes he was far in advance of his age, and herein, although unsuccessful, he was not subdued; in reality, he was one of the most powerful forerunners of the Reformation. There are few figures in European history so bright, so brave, so full of heroic and romantic interest.

Frederick's son and successor, Conrad IV., inherited the opposition to Pope Innocent IV. The latter threatened with excommunication all who should support Conrad, and forbade the priests to administer the sacraments of the church to his followers. The Papal proclamations were so fierce that they incited the Bishop of Ratisbon to plot the king's murder, in which he came very near being successful. William of Holland, whom the people called "the Priests' King," was not supported by any of the leading German princes, but the gold of Rome purchased him enough of troops to meet Conrad in the field, and he was temporarily successful. The hostility of the Pope seems scarcely to have affected Conrad's position in Germany; but both rulers and people were growing indifferent to the imperial power, the seat of which had been so long transferred to Italy. They therefore took little part in the struggle between William and Conrad, and the latter's defeat was by no means a gain to the former.

The two rivals, in fact, were near their end. Conrad IV. went to Italy and took possession of the kingdom of his father, which his stepbrother, Manfred, governed in his name. He made an earnest attempt to be reconciled with the Pope, but Innocent IV. was implacable. He then collected an army of twenty thousand men, and was about to lead it to Germany against William of Holland, when he suddenly died, in 1254, in the twenty-seventh year of his age. It was generally believed that he had been poisoned. William of Holland, since there was no one to dispute his claim, obtained a partial recognition of his sovereignty in Germany; but, having undertaken to subdue the free farmers in Friesland, he was defeated. While attempting to escape, his heavy war horse broke through the ice and the farmers surrounded and slew him. This was in 1256, two years after Conrad's death. Innocent IV. had expended no less than 400,000 silver marks—a very large sum in those days—in supporting him and Henry Raspe against the Hohenstaufens.

Conrad IV. left behind him, in Suabia, a son Conrad, who was only two years old at his father's death. In order to distinguish him from the latter, the Italians gave him the name of Conradino (Little Conrad), and as Conradin he is known in German history. He was educated under the charge of his mother, Queen Elizabeth, and his uncle, Lewis II., Duke of Bavaria. When he was ten years old the Archbishop of Mayence called a diet, at which it was agreed that he should be crowned King of Germany, but the ceremony was prevented by the furious opposition of the Pope. Conradin made such progress in his studies and exhibited so much fondness for literature and the arts that the followers of the Hohenstaufens saw in him another Frederick II. One of his poems is still in existence, and testifies to the grace and refinement of his youthful mind.

After Conrad IV.'s death the Pope claimed the kingdom of Naples and Sicily, as being forfeited to the church, but found it prudent to allow Manfred to govern in his name. The latter submitted at first, but only until his authority was firmly established; then he declared war, defeated the Papal troops, drove them back to Rome, and was crowned king in 1258. The news of his success so agitated the Pope that he died shortly afterward. His successor, Urban IV., a Frenchman, who imitated his policy, found Manfred too strongly established to be defeated without foreign aid. He therefore offered the crown of southern Italy to Charles of Anjou, the brother of King Louis IX. of France. Physically and intellectually there could be no greater contrast than between him and Manfred. Charles of Anjou was awkward and ugly, savage, ignorant, and bigoted; Manfred was a model of manly beauty, a scholar and poet, a patron of learning, a builder of roads, bridges, and harbors, a just and noble ruler.

Charles of Anjou, after being crowned King of Naples and Sicily by the Pope, and having secured secret advantages by bribery and intrigue, marched against Manfred in 1266. They met at Benevento, where, after a long and bloody battle, Manfred was slain, and the kingdom submitted to the usurper. By the Pope's order Manfred's body was taken from the chapel where it had been buried and thrown into a trench; his widow and children were imprisoned for life by Charles of Anjou.

The boy Conradin determined to avenge his uncle's death and recover his own Italian inheritance. His mother sought to dissuade him from the attempt, but Ludwig of Bavaria offered to support him, and his dearest friend, Frederick of Baden, a youth of nineteen, insisted on sharing his fortunes. Toward the end of 1267 he crossed the Alps and reached Verona with a force of 10,000 men. Here he was obliged to wait three months for further support, and during this time more than two-thirds of his German soldiers returned home. But a reaction against the Guelphs (the Papal party) had set in; several Lombard cities and the republic of Pisa declared in Conradin's favor, and finally the Romans, at his approach, expelled Pope Urban IV. A revolt against Charles of Anjou broke out in Naples and Sicily, and when Conradin entered Rome, in July, 1268, his success seemed almost assured. After a most enthusiastic reception by the Roman people he continued his march southward, with a considerable force.

On August 22 he met Charles of Anjou in battle at Tagliacozzo, and was at first victorious. But his troops, having halted to plunder the enemy's camp, were suddenly attacked and at last completely routed. Conradin and his friend, Frederick of Baden, fled to Rome, and thence to the little port of Astura, on the coast, in order to embark for Sicily; but here they were arrested by Frangipani, the governor of the place, who had been specially favored by the Emperor Frederick II., and now sold his grandson to Charles of Anjou for a large sum of money. Conradin having been carried to Naples, a court of distinguished jurists was called to try him for high treason. With one exception, they pronounced him guiltless of any crime; yet Charles, nevertheless, ordered him to be executed.

On October 29, 1268, the last Hohenstaufen, a youth of sixteen, and his friend Frederick, were led to the scaffold. Charles watched the scene from a window of his palace; the people, gloomy and mutinous, were overawed by his guards. Conradin advanced to the edge of the platform and threw his glove among the crowd, asking that it might be carried to someone who would avenge his death. A knight who was present took it afterward to Peter of Aragon, who had married King Manfred's eldest daughter. Then, with the exclamation: "Oh, mother, what sorrow I have prepared for thee!" Conradin knelt and received the fatal blow. After him Frederick of Baden and thirteen others were executed.

The tyranny and inhuman cruelty of Charles of Anjou provoked a conspiracy which, in the year 1282, gave rise to the massacre called "the Sicilian Vespers." In one night all the French officials and soldiers in Sicily were slaughtered, and Peter of Aragon, the heir of the Hohenstaufens, became king of the island. But in Germany the proud race existed no more, except in history, legend, and song.

Chapter XIX

THE INTERREGNUM. 1256-1273

THE end of the Hohenstaufen dynasty marks an important phase in the history of Germany. From this time the character of the empire is radically changed. Although still called "Roman" in official documents, the term is henceforth an empty form, and even the word "empire" loses much of its former significance. The Italian republics were now practically independent, and the various dukedoms, bishoprics, principalities, and countships into which Germany was divided were fast rendering it difficult to effect any unity of feeling or action among the people. The empire which Charlemagne designed, which Otto the Great nearly established, and which Barbarossa might have founded but for the fatal ambition of governing Italy, had become impossible. Germany was, in reality, a loose confederation of differently organized and governed states, which continued to make use of the form of an empire as a convenience rather than a political necessity.

The events which followed the death of Conrad IV. illustrate the corrupt condition of both church and state at that time. The money which Pope Innocent IV. so freely expended in favor of the anti-kings, Henry Raspe and William of Holland, had already taught the electors the advantage of selling their votes; so, when William was slain by the farmers of Friesland, and no German prince seemed to care much for the title of emperor (since each already had independent power over his own territory), the high dignity, so recently possessed by Frederick II., was put up at auction. Two bidders made their appearance, Richard of Cornwall, brother of Henry III. of England, and King Alphonso of Castile, surnamed "the Wise." The Archbishop of Cologne was the business agent of the former: he received 12,000 silver marks for himself, and eight or nine thousand apiece for the dukes of Bavaria, the Archbishop of Mayence, and several other electors. The Archbishop of Treves, in the name of King Alphonso, offered the King of Bohemia, the dukes of Saxony, and the Margrave of Brandenburg 20,000 marks each. Of course both purchasers were elected, and each was proclaimed King of Germany almost at the same time. Alphonso never even visited his realm; Richard of Cornwall came to Aix-la-Chapelle, was formally crowned, and returned now and then, whenever the produce of his tin mines in Cornwall enabled him to pay for an enthusiastic reception by the people. He never attempted, however, to govern Germany, for he probably had intelligence enough to see that any such attempt would be disregarded.

This period (1256-1273) was afterward called by the people "the evil time when there was no emperor"—and in spite of the two kings, who had fairly paid for their titles, it is known in German history as "the Interregnum." It was a period of change and confusion, when each prince endeavored to become an absolute ruler, and the knights, in imitating them, became robbers; when the free cities, encouraged by the example of Italy, united in self-defense, and the masses of the people, although ground to the dust, began to dream again of the rights which their ancestors had possessed a thousand years before.

First of all, the great change wrought in Europe by the crusades was beginning to be felt by all classes of society. The attempt to retain possession of Palestine, which lasted nearly two hundred years,—from the march of the first crusade in 1096 to the fall of Acre in 1291,—cost Europe, it is estimated, six millions of lives and an immense amount of treasure. The Catholic Church favored the undertaking in every possible way, since each crusade instantly and greatly strengthened its power; yet the result was the reverse of what the church hoped for, in the end. The bravery, intelligence, and refined manners of the Saracens made a great impression on the Christian knights, and they soon began to imitate those whom they had at first despised. New branches of learning, especially astronomy, mathematics, and medicine, were brought to Europe from the East; more luxurious habits of life, giving rise to finer arts of industry, followed; and commerce, compelled to supply the crusaders and Christian colonists at such a distance, was rapidly developed to an extent unknown since the fall of the Roman Empire.

As men gained new ideas from these changes they became more independent in thought and speech. The priests and monks ceased to monopolize all knowledge, and their despotism over the human mind met with resistance. Then, first, the charge of "heresy" began to be heard; and although during the thirteenth and a part of the fourteenth centuries the Pope of Rome was undoubtedly the highest power in Europe, the influences were already at work which afterward separated the strongest races of the world from the Catholic Church. On the one hand, new orders of monks were created, and monasteries increased everywhere; on the other hand, independent Christian sects began to spring up, like the Albigenses in France and the Waldenses in Savoy, and could not be wholly suppressed, even with fire and sword.

The orders of knighthood which possessed a religious character were also established during the crusades. First, the Knights of St. John, whose badge was a black mantle with a white cross, formed a society to guard pilgrims to the Holy Land and take care of the sick. Then followed the Knights Templars, distinguished by a red cross on a white mantle. Both these orders originated among the Italian chivalry, and they included few German members. During the third crusade, however (which was headed by Barbarossa), the German (or Teutonic) Order of Knights was formed, chiefly by the aid of the merchants of Bremen and Lübeck. They adopted the black cross on a white mantle as their badge, took the monkish vows of celibacy, poverty, and obedience, like the Templars and the Knights of St. John, and devoted their lives to war with the heathen. The second Grand Master of this order, Hermann of Salza, accompanied Frederick II. to Jerusalem, and his character was so highly estimated by the latter that he made him a prince of the German Empire.

Inasmuch as the German Order really owed its existence to the support of the merchants of the northern coast, Hermann of Salza sought for a field of labor wherein the knights might fulfill their vows and at the same time achieve some advantage for their benefactors. As early as 1199 the Bremen merchants had founded Riga, taken possession of the eastern shore of the Baltic, and established German colonies there. The native Finnish or Lithuanian inhabitants were either exterminated or forcibly converted to Christianity, and an order, called the "Brothers of the Sword," was established for the defense of the colonies. This new German territory was separated from the rest of the empire by the country between the mouths of the Vistula and the Memel, claimed by Poland, and inhabited by the Borussii, or Prussians, a tribe which seems to have been of mixed Slavonic and Lithuanian blood. Hermann of Salza obtained from Poland the permission to possess this country for the German Order, and he gradually conquered or converted the native Prussians. In the meantime the Brothers of the Sword were so hard pressed by a revolt of the Livonians that they united themselves with the German Order, and thenceforth formed a branch of it. The result of this union was that the whole coast of the Baltic, from Holstein to the Gulf of Finland, was secured to Germany, and became civilized and Christian.

During the thirty-five years of Frederick II.'s reign and the seventeen succeeding years of the Interregnum, Germany was in a condition which allowed the strong to make themselves stronger, yet left the weaker classes without any protection. The reigning dukes and archbishops were, of course, satisfied with this state of affairs; the independent counts and barons with large possessions maintained their power by temporary alliances; the inferior nobles, left to themselves, became robbers of land, and highwaymen. With the introduction of new arts and the wider extension of commerce the cities of Germany had risen in wealth and power and were beginning to develop an intelligent middle class, standing between the farmers, who had sunk almost into the condition of serfs, and the lesser nobles, most of whom were equally poor and proud. Upward of sixty cities were free municipalities, belonging to the empire on the same terms as the dukedoms; that is, they contributed a certain proportion of men and money, and were bound to obey the decrees of the imperial diets.

As soon, therefore, as there was no superior authority to maintain order and security in the land, a large number of the knights became freebooters, plundering and laying waste whenever opportunity offered, attacking the caravans of traveling merchants, and accumulating the ill-gotten wealth in their strong castles. Many an aristocratic family of the present day owes its inheritance to that age of robbery and murder. The people had few secured rights and no actual freedom in Germany, with the exception of Friesland, some parts of Saxony, and the Alpine districts.

In this condition of things the free cities soon found it advisable to assist each other. Bremen, Hamburg, and Lübeck first formed a union, chiefly for commercial purposes, in 1241, and this was the foundation of the famous Hanseatic League. Immediately after the death of Conrad IV., Mayence, Speyer, Worms, Strassburg and Basel formed the "Union of Rhenish Cities," for the preservation of peace and the mutual protection of their citizens. Many other cities, and even a number of reigning princes and bishops, soon became members of this league, which for a time exercised considerable power. These cities of the Rhine had agencies in England and other countries, carried on commerce on the high seas, and owned no less than six hundred armed vessels, with which they guarded the Rhine from the land pirates whose castles overlooked its course.

During this age of civil and religious despotism the German cities possessed and preserved the only free institutions to be found. They owed this privilege to the heroic resistance of the republican cities of Italy to the Hohenstaufens, which not only set them an example, but fought in their stead. Sure of the loyalty of the German cities, the emperors were not so jealous of their growth; but some of the rights which they conferred were reluctantly given, and probably in return for men or money during the wars in Italy. The decree which changed a vassal or dependent into a freeman, after a year's residence in a city, helped greatly to build up a strong and intelligent middle class. The merchants, professional men, and higher artisans gradually formed a patrician society, out of which the governing officers were selected, while the mechanics, for greater protection, organzied themselves into separate guilds, or orders. Each of the latter was very watchful of the character and reputation of its members, and thus exercised a strong moral influence. The farmers only had no such protection; very few of them were not dependent vassals of some nobleman or priest.

The cities in the thirteenth century began to exhibit a stately architectural character. The building of splendid cathedrals and monasteries, which began two centuries before, now gave employment to such a large number of architects and stone-cutters that they formed a free corporation, under the name of "Brother-builders," with especial rights and privileges, all over Germany. Their labors were supported by the power of the church, the wealth of the merchants, and the toil of the vassals, and masterpieces of Gothic architecture arose under their hands. The grand cathedrals of Strassburg, Freiburg, and Cologne, with many others, yet remain as monuments of their genius and skill. But the private dwellings also now began to display the wealth and taste of their owners. They were usually built very high, with pointed gables facing the street, and adorned with sculptured designs; frequently the upper stories projected over the lower, forming a shelter for the open shops in the first story. As the cities were walled for defense, the space within the walls was too valuable to be given to wide squares and streets: hence there was usually one open market-place, which also served for all public ceremonies; and the streets were dark and narrow.

The universities now began to exercise some influence. Those of Bologna and Padua were frequented by throngs of students, who attended the schools of law, while the University of Salerno, under the patronage of Manfred, became a distinguished school of medicine. The Arabic University of Cordova in Spain also attracted many students from all the Christian lands of Europe. Works on all branches of knowledge were greatly multiplied, so that the copying of them became a new profession. For the first time there were written forms of law for the instruction of the people. In the northern part of Germany appeared a work called "The Saxon's Looking-Glass" (Sachsenspiegel), which was soon accepted as a legal authority by the people. But it was too liberal for the priests, and under their influence another work, "The Suabian's Looking-Glass," was written and circulated in southern Germany. The former book declares that the emperor has his power from God; the latter that he has it from the Pope. The Saxon is told that no man can justly hold another man as property, and that the people were made vassals through force and wrong; the Suabian is taught that obedience to rulers is his chief duty.

From these two works, which are still in existence, we learn how complicated was the political organization of Germany. The whole free population was divided into seven classes, each having its own privileges and rules of government. First, there was the emperor; secondly, the spiritual princes, as they were called (archbishops, reigning bishops, etc.); thirdly, the temporal princes, some of whom were partly or wholly "vassals" of the spiritual authority; and fourthly, the counts and barons, who possessed territory, either independently, or as feudal holdings of the second and third classes. These four classes constituted the higher nobility. Seven princes, who had especially wide lands and exercised great power, had come to be known as "electors," because they alone had the right of electing the emperor. There were three spiritual—the archbishops of Mayence, Treves, and Cologne; and four temporal—the Count

Palatine of the Rhine, the Duke of Saxony, the Margrave of Brandenburg, and the King of Bohemia.

The fifth class embraced the free citizens from among whom magistrates were chosen, and who were allowed to possess certain privileges of the nobles. The sixth and seventh classes were formed out of the remaining freemen, according to their circumstances and occupations. The serfs and dependents had no place in this system of government, so that a large majority of the German people possessed no other recognized right than that of being ruled and punished. In fact, the whole political system was so complicated and unpractical that we can only wonder how Germany endured it for centuries afterward.

At the end of the Hohenstaufen dynasty there were 116 priestly rulers, 100 ruling dukes, princes, counts, and barons, and more than 60 independent cities in Germany. The larger dukedoms had been cut up into smaller states, many of which exist, either as states or provinces, to this day. Styria and Tyrol were separated from Bavaria; the principalities of Westphalia, Anhalt, Holstein, Jülich, Berg, Cleves, Pomerania, and Mecklenburg were formed out of Saxony; Suabia was divided into Würtemberg and Baden, the Palatinate of the Rhine detached from Franconia and Hesse from Thuringia. Each of the principal German races was distinguished by two colors—the Franks red and white, the Suabians red and yellow, the Bavarians blue and white, and the Saxons black and white. The Saxon black, the Frank red, and the Suabian gold were set together as the imperial colors.

The chief service of the Hohenstaufens to Germany lay in their direct and generous encouragement of art, learning, and literature. They took up the work commenced by Charlemagne, and so disastrously thwarted by his son Lewis the Pious, and in the course of a hundred years they developed what might be called a golden age of architecture and epic poetry, so strongly does it contrast with the four centuries before and the three succeeding it. The immediate connection between Germany and Italy, where most of Roman culture had survived and the higher forms of civilization were first restored, was in this single respect a great advantage to the former country. We cannot ascertain how many of the nobler characteristics of knighthood in that age sprang from the religious spirit which prompted the crusades, and how many originated from intercourse with the refined and high-spirited Saracens; both elements undoubtedly tended to revive the almost forgotten love of poetry in the German race.

When the knights of Provence and Italy became as proud of their songs as of their feats of arms; when minstrels accompanied the court of Frederick II. and the emperor himself wrote poems in rivalry with them; when the Duke of Austria and the Landgrave Hermann of Thuringia invited the best poets of the time to visit them and received them as distinguished guests, and when wandering minstrels and story-tellers repeated their works in a simpler form to the people everywhere, it was not long before a new literature was created. Walter von der Vogelweide, who accompanied Frederick II. to Jerusalem, wrote not only songs of love and poems in praise of nature, but satires against the Pope and the priesthood. Godfrey of Strasburg produced an epic poem describing the times of King Arthur of the Round Table, and Wolfram of Eschenbach, in his "Parsifal," celebrated the search for the Holy Grail; while inferior poets related the histories of Alexander the Great, the Siege of Troy, or Charlemagne's knight, Roland. Among the people arose the story of Reynard the Fox and a multitude of fables; and finally, during the thirteenth century, was produced the celebrated Nibelungenlied, or Song of the Nibelungen, wherein traditions of Siegfried of the Netherlands, Theodoric the Ostrogoth, and Attila with his Huns are mixed together in a powerful story of love, rivalry, and revenge. Most of these poems are written in a Suabian dialect, which is now called the "Middle or Medieval High-German."

Among the historical writers were Bishop Otto of Freising, whose chronicles of the time are very valuable, and Saxo Grammaticus, in whose history of Denmark Shakespeare found the material for his play of "Hamlet." Albertus Magnus, the Bishop of Ratisbon, was so distinguished as a mathematician and man of science that the people believed him to be a sorcerer. There was, in short, a general intellectual awakening throughout Germany, and, although afterward discouraged by many of the 276 smaller powers, it was favored by others and could not be suppressed. Besides, greater changes were approaching. A hundred years after Frederick II.'s death gunpowder was discovered, and the common soldier became the equal of the knight. In another hundred years Gutenberg invented printing, and then followed, rapidly, the discovery of America and the Reformation.

Chapter XX

FROM RUDOLF OF HAPSBURG TO LEWIS OF BAVARIA

1273-1347

RICHARD of Cornwall died in 1272, and the German princes seemed to be in no haste to elect a successor. The Pope, Gregory X., finally demanded an election, for the greater convenience of having to deal with one head instead of a multitude; and the Archbishop of Mayence called a diet together at Frankfort the following year. He proposed, as candidate, Count Rudolf of Hapsburg, a petty ruler in Switzerland, who had also possessions in Alsatia. Up to his time the family had been insignificant; but, as a zealous partisan of Frederick II., in whose excommunication he had shared, as a crusader against the heathen Prussians, and finally, in his maturer years, as a man of great prudence, moderation, and firmness, he had made the name of Hapsburg generally and quite favorably known. His brother-in-law, Count Frederick of Hohenzollern, the burgrave, or governor, of the city of Nuremberg (and the founder of the present House of the Hohenzollerns), advocated Rudolf's election among the members of the diet. The chief considerations in his favor were his personal character, his lack of power, and the circumstance of his possessing six marriageable daughters. There were also private stipulations which secured him the support of the priesthood, and so he was elected King of Germany.

Rudolf was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle. At the close of the ceremony it was discovered that the imperial scepter was missing, whereupon he took a crucifix from the altar and held it forth to the princes who came to swear allegiance to his rule. He was at this time fifty-five years of age, extremely tall and lank, with a haggard face and large aquiline nose. Although he was always called "emperor" by the people, he never received, or even desired, the imperial crown of Rome. He was in the habit of saying that Rome was the den of the lion, into which led the tracks of many other animals, but none was seen leading out of it again.

It was easy for him, therefore, to conclude a peace with the Pope. He met Gregory X. at Lausanne, and there formally renounced all claim to the rights held by the Hohenstaufens in Italy. He even recognized Charles of Anjou as king of Sicily and Naples, and betrothed one of his daughters to the latter's son. The Church of Rome received possession of all the territory it had claimed in central Italy, and the Lombard and Tuscan republics were left for a while undisturbed. He further promised to undertake a new crusade for the recovery of Jerusalem, and was then solemnly recognized by Gregory X. as rightful king of Germany.

But, although Rudolf had so readily given up all for which the Hohenstaufens had struggled in Italy, he at once claimed their estates in Germany as belonging to the crown. This brought him into conflict with Counts Ulric and Eberhard II. of Würtemberg, who were also allied with King Ottokar II. of Bohemia in opposition to his authority. The latter had obtained possession of Austria through marriage and of all Styria and Carinthia to the Adriatic by purchase. He was ambitious and defiant: some historians suppose that he hoped to make himself Emperor of Germany, others that his object was to establish a powerful Slavonic nation. Rudolf did not delay long in declaring him outlawed, and in calling upon the other princes for an army to lead against him. The call was received with indifference; no one feared the new emperor, and hence no one obeyed.

Gathering together such troops as his son-in-law, Lewis of the Bavarian Palatinate, could furnish, Rudolf marched into Austria, after he had restored order in Würtemberg. A revolt of the Austrian and Styrian nobles against Bohemian rule followed this movement: the country was gradually reconquered, and Vienna, after a siege of five weeks, fell into Rudolf's hands. Ottokar II. then found it advisable to make peace with the man whom he had styled "a poor count," by giving up his claim to Austria, Styria, and Carinthia, and paying homage to the Emperor of Germany. In October, 1276, the treaty was concluded. Ottokar appeared in all the splendor he could command, and was received by Rudolf in a costume not very different from that of a common soldier. "The Bohemian king has often laughed at my gray coat," he said; "but now my coat shall laugh at him." Ottokar was enraged at what he considered an insulting humiliation, and secretly plotted revenge. For nearly two years he intrigued with the states of northern

Germany and the Poles, collected a large army under the pretext of conquering Hungary, and suddenly declared war against Rudolf.

The emperor was supported only by the Count of Tyrol, by Frederick of Hohenzollern, and a few bishops, but he procured the alliance of the Hungarians, and then marched against Ottokar with a much inferior force. Nevertheless, he was completely victorious in the battle which took place, on the River March, in August, 1278. Ottokar was killed and his Saxon and Bavarian allies scattered. Rudolf used his victory with a moderation which secured him new advantages. He married one of his daughters to Wenzel, Ottokar's son, and allowed him the crown of Bohemia and Moravia; he gave Carinthia to the Count of Tyrol, and Austria and Styria to his own sons, Rudolf and Albert. Toward the other German princes he was so conciliatory and forbearing that they found no cause for further opposition. Thus the influence of the House of Hapsburg was permanently founded, and—curiously enough, when we consider the later history of Germany—chiefly by the help of the founder of the House of Hohenzollern.

After spending five years in Austria and securing the results of his victory, Rudolf returned to the interior of Germany. A diet held at Augsburg in 1282 confirmed his sons in their new sovereignties, and his authority as German emperor was henceforth never seriously opposed. He exerted all his influence over the princes in endeavoring to settle the numberless disputes which arose out of the law by which the territory and rule of the father were divided among many sons—or, in case there were no direct heirs, which gave more than one relative an equal claim. He proclaimed a national peace, or cessation of quarrels between the states, and thereby accomplished some good, although the order was only partially obeyed. At a diet which he held in Erfurt he urged the strongest measures for the suppression of knightly robbery. Sixty castles of the noble highwaymen were razed to the ground, and more than thirty of the titled vagabonds expiated their crimes on the scaffold. In all the measures which he undertook for the general welfare of the country he succeeded as far as was possible at such a time.

In his schemes of personal ambition, however, the emperor was not so successful. His attempt to make his eldest son Duke of Suabia failed completely. Then in order to establish a right to

Burgundy, he married, at the age of sixty-six, the sister of Count Robert, a girl of only fourteen. Although he gained some few advantages in western Switzerland, he was resisted by the city of Berne, and all he accomplished in the end was the stirring up of a new hostility to Germany, and a new friendship for France, throughout the whole of Burgundy. On the eastern frontier, however, the empire was enlarged by the voluntary annexation of Silesia to Bohemia, in exchange for protection against the claims of Poland.

In 1290 Rudolf's eldest son, of the same name, died, and at a diet held the following year the emperor endeavored to procure the election of his son Albert as his successor. A majority of the bishops and princes decided to postpone the question, and Rudolf left the city, deeply mortified. He soon afterward fell ill, and, being warned by the physician that his case was serious, he exclaimed: "Well, then, now for Speyer!"—the old burial-place of the German emperors. But before reaching there he died, in July, 1291, aged seventy-three years.

Rudolf of Hapsburg was very popular among the common people on account of his frank, straightforward manner and the simplicity of his habits. He was a complete master of his own passions, and in this respect contrasted remarkably with the rash and impetuous Hohenstaufens. He never showed impatience or irritation, but was always good-humored, full of jests and shrewd sayings, and accessible to all classes. When supplies were short he would pull up a turnip, peel and eat it in the presence of his soldiers, to show that he fared no better than they; he would refuse a drink of water unless there was enough for all; and it is related that once, on a cold day, he went into the shop of a baker in Mayence to warm himself, and was greatly amused when the good housewife insisted on turning him out as a suspicious character. Nevertheless, he could not overcome the fascination which the Hohenstaufen name still exercised over the people. The idea of Barbarossa's return had already taken root among them, and more than one impostor, who claimed to be the dead emperor, found enough of followers to disturb Rudolf's reign.

An imperial authority like that of Otto the Great or Barbarossa had not been restored; yet Rudolf's death left the empire in a more orderly condition, and the many small rulers were more willing to continue the forms of government. But the Archbishop

Gerard of Mayence, who had bargained secretly with Count Adolf of Nassau, easily persuaded the electors that it was impolitic to preserve the power in one family, and he thus secured their votes for Adolf, who was crowned shortly afterward. The latter was even poorer than Rudolf of Hapsburg had been, but without either his wisdom or honesty. He was forced to part with so many imperial privileges to secure his election that his first policy seems to have been to secure money and estates for himself. He sold to the Viscount of Milan the viceroyalty over Lombardy, which he claimed as still being a German right, and received from Edward I. of England one hundred thousand pounds sterling as the price of his alliance in a war against Philip IV. of France. Instead, however, of keeping his part of the bargain, he used some of the money to purchase Thuringia of the Landgrave Albert, who was carrying on an unnatural quarrel with his two sons, Frederick and Dietzmann, and thus disposed of their inheritance. Albert (surnamed the Degenerate) also disposed of the countship of Meissen in the same way, and when the people resisted the transfer their lands were terribly devastated by Adolf of Nassau. This course was a direct interference with the rights of reigning families, a violation of the law of inheritance, and it excited great hostility to Adolf's rule among the other princes.

The rapacity of the new emperor, in fact, was the cause of his speedy downfall. In order to secure the support of the bishops he had promised them the tolls on vessels sailing up and down the Rhine, while the abolition of the same tolls was promised to the free cities on that river. The Archbishop of Mayence sent word to him that he had other emperors in his pocket, but Adolf paid little heed to his remonstrances. Albert of Hapsburg, son of Rudolf, turned the general dissatisfaction to his own advantage. He won his brother-in-law, Wenzel II. of Bohemia, to his side, and purchased the alliance of Philip the Fair of France by yielding to him the possession of portions of Burgundy and Flanders. After private negotiations with the German princes, both spiritual and temporal, the Archbishop of Mayence called a diet together in that city, in June, 1298. Adolf was declared to have forfeited the crown, and Albert was elected in his stead by all the electors except those of Treves and the Palatinate.

Within ten days after the election the rivals met in battle: both had foreseen the struggle, and had made hasty preparations to meet it. Adolf fought with desperation, even after being wounded, and finally came face to face with Albert on the field. "Here you must yield the empire to me!" he cried, drawing his sword. "That rests with God," was Albert's answer, and he struck Adolf dead. After this victory the German princes nevertheless required that Albert should be again elected before being crowned, since they feared that this precedent of choosing a rival monarch might lead to trouble in the future.

Albert of Hapsburg was a hard, cold man, with all of his father's will and energy, yet without his moderation and shrewdness. He was haughty and repellent in his manner, and from first to last made no friends. He was one-eyed, on account of a singular cure which had been practiced upon him. Having become very ill, his physicians suspected that he was poisoned; they thereupon hung him up by the heels and took one eye out of its socket, so that the poison might thus escape from his head! The single aim of his life was to increase the imperial power and secure it to his own family. Whether his measures conduced to the welfare of Germany or not was a question which he did not consider, and therefore whatever good he accomplished was simply accidental, and not the result of any defined policy.

Albert's stubborn and selfish attempts to increase the power of his house all failed; their only result was a wider and keener spirit of hostility to his rule. He claimed Thuringia and Meissen, alleging that Adolf of Nassau had purchased those lands, not for himself, but for the empire; he endeavored to get possession of Holland, whose line of ruling counts had become extinct; and after the death of Wenzel II. of Bohemia, in 1307, he married his son, Rudolf, to the latter's widow. But Counts Frederick and Dietzmann of Thuringia defeated his army; the people of Holland elected a descendant of their counts on the female side, and the emperor's son, Rudolf, died in Bohemia, apparently poisoned, before two years were out. Then the Swiss cantons of Schwyz, Uri, and Unterwalden, which had been governed by civil officers appointed by the emperors, rose in revolt against him and drove his governors from their Alpine valleys. In November, 1307, that famous league was formed by which the three cantons maintained their independence and laid the first corner-stone of the republic of Switzerland.

The following May, 1308, Albert was in Baden raising troops for a new campaign in Thuringia. His nephew, John, a youth of nineteen, who had vainly endeavored to have his right to a part of the Hapsburg territory in Switzerland confirmed by the emperor, was with him, accompanied by four knights with whom he had conspired. While crossing a river they managed to get into the same boat with the emperor, leaving the rest of his retinue upon the other bank; then, when they had landed, they fell upon him, murdered him, and fled. A peasant woman who was near lifted Albert upon her lap and he died in her arms. His widow, the Empress Elizabeth, took a horrible revenge upon the families of the conspirators, whose relatives and even their servants, to the number of one thousand, were executed. One of the knights who was captured was broken upon the wheel. John, called in history "John Parricida," was never heard of afterward, although one tradition affirms that he fled to Rome, confessed his deed to the Pope, and passed the rest of his life, under another name, in a monastery.

The German electors were in no hurry to choose a new emperor. They were only agreed as to who should not be elected—that is, no member of a powerful family; but it was not so easy to pick out an acceptable candidate from among the many inferior princes. The church decided the question. Peter, Archbishop of Mayence, intrigued with Baldwin, Archbishop of Treves, in favor of the latter's brother, Count Henry of Luxemburg. A diet was held at the "King's Seat," on the hill of Rense, near Coblentz, where the blast of a hunting-horn could be heard in four electorates at the same time, and Henry was chosen king. He was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle on January 6, 1309, as Henry VII.

His first aim was to restore peace and order to Germany. He was obliged to reëstablish the Rhine dues in the interest of the archbishops who had supported him, but he endeavored to recompense the cities by granting them other privileges. At a diet held in Speyer he released the three Swiss cantons from their allegiance to the House of Hapsburg, gave Austria to the sons of the murdered Albert, and had the bodies of the latter and his rival, Adolf of Nassau, buried in the cathedral side by side. Soon afterward the Bohemians, dissatisfied with Henry of Carinthia (who had become their king after the death of Albert's son, Rudolf), offered the hand of Wenzel II.'s youngest daughter, Elizabeth, to Henry's son, John. Although the latter was only fourteen, and his bride twenty-two years of age, Henry gave his consent to the marriage, and John became king of Bohemia.

In 1310 the new emperor called a diet at Frankfort in order to enforce a universal truce among the German states. He outlawed Count Eberhard of Würtemberg, and took away his power to create disturbance; and then, Germany being quiet, he turned his attention to Italy, which was in a deplorable state of confusion from the continual wars of the Guelphs and the Ghibellines. In Lombardy noble families had usurped the control of the former republican cities, and governed with greater tyranny than even the Hohenstaufens. Henry's object was to put an end to their civil wars, institute a new order, and—be crowned Roman emperor.

Toward the close of 1310 Henry VII. crossed Mont Cenis with an army of several thousand men, and was welcomed with great pomp in Milan, where he was crowned with the Iron Crown of Lombardy. The poet Dante hailed him as a savior of Italy, and all parties formed the most extravagant expectations of the advantage they would derive from his coming. The emperor seems to have tried to act with entire impartiality, and consequently both parties were disappointed. The Guelphs first rose against him, and instead of peace a new war ensued. He was not able to march to Rome until 1312, and by that time the city was again divided into two hostile parties. With the help of the powerful Colonna family he gained possession of the southern bank of the Tiber, and was crowned emperor in the Lateran Church by a cardinal, since there was no Pope in Rome: the Orsini family, who were hostile to him, held possession of the other part of the city, including St. Peter's and the Vatican.

There were now indications that all Italy would be convulsed with a repetition of the old struggle. The Guelphs rallied around King Robert of Naples as their head, while King Frederick of Sicily and the republic of Pisa declared for the emperor. France and the Pope were about to add new elements to the quarrel, when in August, 1313, Henry VII. died of poison, believed to have been administered to him by a monk in the sacramental wine. He was a man of many noble personal qualities, and from whom much was hoped, both in Germany and Italy; but his reign was too short for the attainment of any lasting results.

When the electors came together at Frankfort, in 1314, it was found that their votes were divided between two candidates.

Henry VII.'s son, King John of Bohemia, was only seventeen years old, and the friends of his house, not believing that he could be elected, united on Duke Lewis of Bavaria, a descendant of Otto of Wittelsbach. On the other hand, the friends of the House of Hapsburg, with the combined influence of France and the Pope on their side, proposed Frederick of Austria, the son of the Emperor Albert. There was a division of the diet, and both candidates were elected; but Lewis had four of the seven chief electors on his side; he reached Aix-la-Chapelle first and was there crowned, and thus he was considered to have the best right to the imperial dignity.

Lewis of Bavaria and Frederick of Austria had been bosom-friends until a short time previous, but they were now rivals and deadly enemies. For eight long years a civil war devastated Germany. On Frederick's side were Austria, Hungary, the Palatinate of the Rhine, and the Archbishop of Cologne, with the German nobles as a class; on Lewis's side were Bavaria, Bohemia, Thuringia, the cities, and the middle class. Frederick's brother, Leopold, in attempting to subjugate the Swiss cantons, the freedom of which had been confirmed by Lewis, suffered a crushing defeat in the famous battle of Morgarten, fought in 1315. The Austrian force in this battle was 9000, the Swiss 1300; the latter lost 15 men, the former 1500 soldiers and 640 knights. From that day the freedom of the Swiss was secured.

The Pope, John XXII., declared that he only had the right of deciding between the two rival sovereigns, and used all the means in his power to assist Frederick. The war was prolonged until 1322, when, in a battle fought at Mühldorf, near Salzburg, the struggle was decided. After a combat of ten hours the Bavarians gave way, and Lewis narrowly escaped capture; then the Austrians, mistaking a part of the latter's army for the troops of Leopold, which were expected on the field, were themselves surrounded, and Frederick, with 1400 knights, taken prisoner. Lewis saluted Frederick with the words: "We are glad to see you, cousin!" and then imprisoned him in a strong castle.

There was now a truce in Germany, but no real peace. Lewis felt himself strong enough to send some troops to the relief of Lord Visconti of Milan, who was hard pressed by a Neapolitan army, in the interest of the Pope. For this act John XXII. not only excommunicated and cursed him officially, but extended the Papal interdict over Germany. The latter measure was one which had formerly occasioned the greatest dismay among the people, but it had now lost much of its power. The "Interdict" prohibited all priestly offices in the lands to which it was applied. The churches were closed, the bells were silent, no honors were paid to the dead, and it was even ordered that the marriage ceremony should be performed in the churchyards. But the German people refused to submit to the interdict; the few priests who attempted to obey the Pope were either driven away or compelled to perform their religious duties as usual.

The next event in the struggle was a conspiracy of Leopold of Austria with Charles IV. of France, favored by the Pope, to overthrow Lewis. But the other German princes who were concerned in it quietly withdrew when the time came for action, and the plot failed. Then Lewis, tired of his trials, sent his prisoner Frederick to Leopold as a mediator, the former promising to return and give himself up if he should not succeed. Leopold was implacable, and Frederick kept his word, although the Pope offered to relieve him of his promise, and threatened him with excommunication for not breaking it. Lewis was generous enough to receive him as a friend, to give him his full liberty and dignity, and even to divide his royal rule privately with him. The latter arrangement was so unpractical that it was not openly proclaimed, but the good understanding between the two contributed to the peace of Germany. Leopold died in 1326, and Lewis enjoyed an undisputed authority.

In 1327 the emperor felt himself strong enough to undertake an expedition to Italy, his object being to relieve Lombardy from the aggressions of Naples, and to be crowned emperor in Rome in spite of the Pope. In this he was tolerably successful. He defeated the Guelphs and was crowned in Milan the same year, then marched to Rome and was crowned emperor early in 1328, under the auspices of the Colonna family, by two excommunicated bishops. Lewis, however, soon became as unpopular as any of his predecessors, and from the same cause—the imposition of heavy taxes upon the people in order to keep up his imperial state. He remained two years longer in Italy, encountering as much hate as friendship, and was then recalled to Germany by the death of Frederick of Austria.

The Papal excommunication which the Hohenstaufen emperors had borne so easily seems to have weighed sorely upon Lewis's mind. His was a weak, vacillating nature, capable of only a limited amount of endurance. He began to fear that his soul was in peril, and made the most desperate efforts to be reconciled with the Pope. The latter, however, demanded his immediate abdication as a preliminary to any further negotiation, and was supported in this demand by the King of France, who was very ambitious of obtaining the crown of Germany with the help of the church. King John of Bohemia acted as a go-between, but he was also secretly pledged to France, and an agreement was nearly concluded, of a character so cowardly and disgraceful to Lewis that when some hint of it became known there arose such an angry excitement in Germany that the emperor did not dare to move further in the matter.

John XXII. died about this time (1334) and was succeeded by Benedict XII., a man of a milder and more conciliatory nature, with whom Lewis immediately commenced fresh negotiations. He offered to abdicate, to swear allegiance to the Pope, to undergo any humiliation which the latter might impose upon him. Benedict was quite willing to be reconciled to him on these conditions, but the arrangement was prevented by Philip VI. of France, who hoped, like his father, to acquire the crown of Germany. As soon as this became evident Lewis adopted a totally different course. In the summer of 1338 he called a diet at Frankfort (which was afterward adjourned to Rense, near Coblentz), and laid the matter before the bishops, princes, and free cities, which were now represented.

The diet unanimously declared that the emperor had exhausted all proper means of reconciliation, and the Pope alone was responsible for the continuance of the struggle. The excommunication and interdict were pronounced null and void, and severe punishments were decreed for the priests who should heed them in any way. As it was evident that France had created the difficulty, an alliance was concluded with England, whose king, Edward III., appeared before the diet at Coblentz and procured the acknowledgment of his claim to the crown of France. Lewis, as emperor, sat upon the royal seat at Rense, and all the German princes—with the exception of King John of Bohemia, who had gone over to France—made the solemn declaration that the king and emperor whom they had elected, or should henceforth elect, derived his dignity and power from God, and did not require the sanction of the Pope. They also bound themselves to defend the rights and liberties of the empire against any assailant whatever. These were brave words, but we shall presently see how much they were worth.

The alliance with England was made for seven years. Lewis was to furnish German troops for Edward III.'s army in return for English gold. For a year he was faithful to the contract; then the old superstitious fear came over him, and he listened to the secret counsels of Philip VI. of France, who offered to mediate with the Pope in his behalf. But after Lewis had been induced to break his word with England, Philip, having gained what he wanted, prevented his reconciliation with the Pope. This miserable weakness on the emperor's part quite destroyed his authority in Germany. At the same time he was imitating every one of his imperial predecessors in trying to strengthen the power of his family. He gave Brandenburg to his eldest son, Lewis, married his second son, Henry, to Margaret of Tyrol, whom he arbitrarily divorced from her first husband, a son of John of Bohemia, and claimed the sovereignty of Holland as his wife's inheritance.

Lewis of Bavaria had now become unpopular, and when another Pope, Clement VI., in April, 1346, hurled against him a new excommunication, expressed in the most horrible terms, the archbishops justified themselves for openly opposing the emperor's rule. They united with the Pope in selecting Karl, the son of John of Bohemia (who fell by the sword of the Black Prince the same summer, at the famous battle of Crecy), and proclaiming him emperor, instead of Lewis. All the cities and the temporal princes, except those of Bohemia and Saxony, stood faithfully by Lewis, and Karl could gain no advantage over him. He went to France, then to Italy, and finally betook himself to Bohemia, where he was a rival monarch only in name.

In October, 1347, Lewis, who was then residing in Munich, his favorite capital, was stricken with apoplexy while hunting and fell dead from his horse. He was sixty-three years old, and had reigned thirty-three years. In German history he is always called "Lewis of Bavaria." During the last ten years of his reign many parts of Germany suffered severely from famine, and a pestilence called "the black death" carried off thousands of persons in every city. These misfortunes probably confirmed him in his superstition, and partly account for his shameful and degrading policy. The only service which his long rule rendered to Germany sprang from the circumstance that, having been supported by the free cities in his war with Frederick of Austria, he was compelled to protect them against the aggressions of the princes afterward, and in various ways to increase their rights and privileges. There were now 150 such cities, and from this time forward they constituted a separate power in the empire. They encouraged learning and literature, favored peace and security of travel for the sake of their commerce, organized and protected the mechanic arts, and thus, during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, contributed more to the progress of Germany than all her spiritual and temporal rulers.

Chapter XXI

THE LUXEMBURG EMPERORS, CHARLES IV. AND WENZEL. 1347-1410

ALTHOUGH the German princes were nearly unanimous in the determination that no member of the House of Wittelsback (Bavaria) should again be emperor, they were by no means willing to accept Karl of Luxemburg. Some of them took up Gunther of Schwarzburg, a gallant and popular prince, who seemed to have a good prospect of success. In this emergency Karl supported the pretensions of an adventurer, known as "the False Waldemar," to Brandenburg, against Lewis of Bavaria, and thus compelled the latter to treat with him. Soon afterward Günther of Schwarzburg died, poisoned, it was generally believed, by a physician whom Karl had bribed, and by the end of 1348 the latter was emperor of Germany, as Karl or Charles IV.

At this time he was thirty-three years old. He had been educated in France and Italy, and was an accomplished scholar: he both spoke and wrote the Bohemian, German, French, Italian, and Latin languages. He was a thorough diplomatist, resembling in this respect Rudolf of Hapsburg, from whom he differed in his love of pomp and state, and in the care he took to keep himself always well supplied with money, which he well knew how and when to use. He had first secured the influence of the Pope by promising to disregard the declarations of the diet of 1338 at Rense, and by relinquishing all claims to Italy. Then he won the free cities to his side by offers of more extended privileges; and the German princes, for form's sake, elected him a second time, thus acknowledging the Papal authority which they had so boldly defied ten years before.

One of the first acts of Charles was to found, in Prague—which city he selected as his capital—the first German university, which he endowed so liberally and organized so thoroughly that in a few years it was attended by six or seven thousand students. For several years afterward he occupied himself in establishing order throughout Germany, and meanwhile negotiated with the Pope in regard to his coronation as Roman emperor. In spite of his complete submission to the latter, there were many difficulties to be overcome, arising out of the influence of France over the Papacy, which was still established at Avignon. Charles arrested Rienzi, " the last Tribune of Rome," and kept him for a time imprisoned in Prague; but when the latter was sent back to Rome as senator by Pope Innocent VI., in 1354, Charles was allowed to commence his Italian journey. He was crowned Roman emperor on April 5, 1355, by a cardinal sent from Avignon for that purpose. In compliance with his promise to Pope Innocent, he remained in Rome only a single day.

Instead of attempting to settle the disorders which convulsed Italy, Charles turned his journey to good account by selling all the remaining imperial rights and privileges to the republics and petty rulers for hard cash. The poet Petrarch had looked forward to his coming as Dante had to that of his grandfather, Henry VII., but satirized him bitterly when he returned to Bohemia with his money. He left Italy ridiculed and despised, but reached Germany with greatly increased power. His next measure was to call a diet for the purpose of permanently settling the relation of the German princes to the empire, and the forms to be observed in electing an emperor. All had learned, several centuries too late to be of much service, the necessity of some established order in these matters, and they came to a final agreement at Metz, on Christmas Day, 1356.

Then was promulgated the decree known as the " Golden Bull," which remained a law in Germany until the empire came to an end, just 450 years afterward. It commences with these words: " Every kingdom which is not united within itself will go to ruin: for its princes are the kindred of robbers, wherefore God removes the light of their minds from their office, they become blind leaders of the blind, and their darkened thoughts are the source of many misdeeds." The Golden Bull confirms the custom of having seven chief electors—the archbishops of Mayence, Treves, and Cologne, the first of whom is arch-chancellor; the king of Bohemia, arch-cupbearer; the count palatine of the Rhine, arch-steward; the duke of Saxony, arch-marshal, and the margrave of Brandenburg, arch-chamberlain. The last four princes receive full authority over their territories, and there is no appeal, even to the emperor, from their decisions. Their rule is transmitted to the eldest son; they have the right to coin money, to work mines, and to impose all taxes which formerly belonged to the empire.

These are its principal features. The claims of the Pope to authority over the emperor are not mentioned; the position of the other independent princes is left very much as it was, and the cities are prohibited from forming unions without the imperial consent. The only effect of this so-called "constitution" was to strengthen immensely the power of the four favored princes, and to encourage all the other rulers to imitate them. It introduced a certain order, and therefore was better than the previous absence of all law upon the subject.

The remaining events of Charles IV.'s life are of no great historical importance. In 1363 his son, Wenzel, only two years old, was crowned at Prague as king of Bohemia, and soon afterward the emperor was called upon by the Pope, Urban V., who found that his residence in Avignon was becoming more and more a state of captivity, to assist him in returning to Rome. In 1365, therefore, Charles set out, with a considerable force, entered southern France, crowned himself king of Burgundy at Arles—which was a hollow and ridiculous farce—and in 1368 reached Rome, whither Pope Urban had gone in advance. Here his wife was formally crowned as Roman empress, and he humiliated himself by walking from the Castle of St. Angelo to St. Peter's, leading the Pope's mule by the bridle—an act which drew upon him the contempt of the Roman people. He had few or no privileges to sell, so he met every evidence of hostility with a proclamation of amnesty, and returned to Germany with the intention of violating his own Golden Bull, by having his son Wenzel proclaimed his successor. His departure marks the end of German interference in Italy.

For ten years longer Charles IV. continued to strengthen his family by marriage, by granting to the cities the right of union in return for their support, and by purchasing the influence of such princes as were accessible to bribes. He was so cool and calculating, and pursued his policy with so much patience and skill, that the most of his plans succeeded. His son Wenzel was elected his successor by a diet held at Frankfort in January, 1376, each of the chief electors receiving one hundred thousand florins for his vote, and this choice was confirmed by the Pope. To his second son, Sigismund, he gave Brandenburg, which he had obtained partly by intrigue and partly by purchase, and to his third son, John, the province of Lusatia, adjoining Silesia. His health had been gradually failing, and in November, 1378, he died in Prague, sixty-three years old. His tastes were always Bohemian rather than German; he preferred Prague to any other residence, and whatever good he intentionally did was conferred on his own immediate subjects. More than a century afterward the Emperor Maximilian of Hapsburg very justly said of him: " Charles was a genuine father to Bohemia, but only a step-father to the rest of Germany."

During the latter years of his reign two very different movements, independent of the imperial will, or in spite of it, had been started in southern and northern Germany. In Würtemberg the cities united and carried on a fierce war with Count Eberhard, surnamed the Greiner (Whiner). The struggle lasted for more than ten years, and out of it grew various leagues of the knights for the protection of their rights against the more powerful princes. In the north of Germany the commercial cities, headed by Lübeck, Hamburg, and Bremen, formed a league which soon became celebrated under the name of " The Hansa," which gradually drew the cities of the Rhine to unite with it, and before the end of the century developed into a great commercial, naval, and military power.

The Hanseatic League had its agencies in every commercial city, from Novgorod in Russia to Lisbon; its vessels filled the Baltic and the North Sea, and almost the entire commerce of northern Europe was in its hands. When, in 1361, King Waldemar III. of Denmark took possession of the Island of Gothland, which the cities had colonized, they fitted out a great fleet, besieged Copenhagen, finally drove Waldemar from his kingdom, and forced the Danes to accept their conditions. Shortly afterward they defeated King Hakon of Norway. Their influence over Sweden was already secured, and thus they became an independent political power. Charles IV. visited Lübeck a few years before his death, in the hope of making himself head of the Hanseatic League; but the merchants were as good diplomatists as he, and he obtained no recognition whatever. Had not the cities been so widely scattered along the coast, and each more or less jealous of the others, they might have laid the foundation of a strong North German nation; but their bond of union was not firm enough for that.

The German Order, by this time, also possessed an independent realm, the capital of which was established at Marienburg, not far from Dantzic. The distance from the rest of the empire of the territory it had conquered in eastern Prussia, and the circumstance that it had also acknowledged itself a dependency of the Papal power, enabled its Grand Masters to say openly: "If the empire claims authority over us, we belong to the Pope; if the Pope claims any such authority, we belong to the emperor." In fact, although the Order had now been established for a hundred and fifty years, it had never been directly assisted by the imperial power; yet it had changed a great tract of wilderness inhabited by Slavonic barbarians into a rich and prosperous land, with fifty-five cities, thousands of villages, and an entire population of more than two millions, mostly German colonists. It adopted a fixed code of laws, maintained order and security throughout its territory, encouraged science and letters, and made the scholar and minstrel as welcome at its stately court in Marienburg, as they had been at that of Frederick II. in Palermo.

There could be no more remarkable contrast than between the weakness, selfishness, and despotic tendencies of the German emperors and electors during the fourteenth century, and the strong and orderly development of the Hanseatic League and the German Order in the north, or of the handful of free Swiss in the south.

King Wenzel was only seventeen years old when his father died, but he had been well educated and already possessed some experience in governing. In fact, Charles IV.'s anxiety to secure the succession to the throne in his own family led him to force Wenzel's mind to a premature activity, and thus ruined him for life. He had enjoyed no real childhood and youth, and he soon became hard, cynical, willful, without morality, and even without ambitions. In the beginning of his reign, nevertheless, he made an earnest attempt to heal the divisions of the Roman Church, and to establish peace between Count Eberhard the Whiner and the united cities of Suabia.

In the latter quarrel Leopold of Austria also took part. He had been appointed governor of several of the free cities by Wenzel, and he seized the occasion to attempt to restore the authority of the Hapsburg over the Swiss cantons. The latter now numbered eight, the three original cantons having been joined by Lucerne, Zurich, Glarus, Zug, and Berne. They had been invited to make common cause with the Suabian cities, more than fifty of which were united in the struggle to maintain their rights; but the Swiss, although in sympathy with the cities, declined to march beyond their own territory. Leopold decided to subjugate each separately. In 1386, with an army of 4000 Austrian and Suabian knights, he invaded the cantons. The Swiss collected 1300 farmers, fishers, and herdsmen, armed with halberds and battle-axes, and met Leopold at Sempach on July 9.

The 4000 knights dismounted and advanced in close ranks, presenting a wall of steel, defended by rows of leveled spears, to the Swiss in their leathern jackets. It seemed impossible to break their solid front, or even to reach them with the Swiss weapons. Then Arnold of Winkelried is said to have stepped forth and said to his countrymen: "Dear brothers, I will open a road for you: take care of my wife and children!" and gathering together as many spears as he could grasp, he thrust them into his own breast. The Swiss sprang into the gap, and the knights began to fall on all sides, from their tremendous blows. Many were smothered in the press, trampled under foot in their heavy armor. Duke Leopold and nearly seven hundred of his followers perished, and the rest were scattered in all directions. It was one of the most astonishing victories in history. Two years afterward the Swiss were again splendidly victorious at Näfels, and from that time they were an independent nation.

The Suabian cities were so encouraged by these defeats of the party of the nobles that in 1388 they united in a common war against the Duke of Bavaria, Count Eberhard of Würtemberg, and the Count Palatine Rupert. After a short but very fierce and wasting struggle, they were defeated at Döffingen and Worms, deprived of the privileges for which they had fought, and compelled to accept a truce of six years. In 1389 a diet was held, which prohibited them from forming any further union, and thus completely reëstablished the power of the reigning princes. Wenzel endeavored to enforce an internal peace throughout the whole empire, but could not succeed: what was law for the cities was not allowed to be equally law for the princes. It seems probable from many features of the struggle that the former designed imitating the Swiss cantons, and founding a Suabian republic if they had been successful; but the entire governing class of Germany, from the emperor down to the knightly highwayman, was against them, and they must have been crushed in any case, sooner or later.

For eight or nine years after these events Wenzel remained in Prague, where his reign was distinguished only by an almost insane barbarity. He always had an executioner at his right hand, and whoever refused to submit to his orders was instantly beheaded. He kept a pack of bloodhounds, which were sometimes let loose even upon his own guests: on one occasion his wife, the Empress Elizabeth, was nearly torn to pieces by them. He ordered the confessor of the latter, a priest named John of Nepomuck, to be thrown into the Moldau River for refusing to tell him what the empress had confessed. By this act he made John of Nepomuck the patron saint of Bohemia. Someone once wrote upon the door of his palace the words: "*Venceslaus, alter Nero*" (Wenzel, a second Nero); whereupon he wrote the line below: "*Si non fui adhuc, ero*" (If I have not been one hitherto, I will be now).

In short, Wenzel was so little of an emperor and so much of a brutal madman that a conspiracy, at the head of which were his cousin, Jodocus of Moravia, and Duke Albert of Austria, was formed against him. He was taken prisoner and conveyed to Austria, where he was held in close confinement until his brother Sigismund, aided by a diet of the other German princes, procured his release. In return for this service, and probably, also, to save himself the trouble of governing, he appointed Sigismund vicar of the empire. In 1398 he called a diet at Frankfort, and again endeavored, but without much success, to enforce a general peace. The schism in the Roman Church, which lasted for forty years, the rival Popes in Rome and Avignon excommunicating and making war upon each other, had at this time become a scandal to Christendom, and the Papal authority had sunk so low that the temporal rulers now ventured to interfere. Wenzel went to Rheims, where he had an interview with Charles VI. of France, in order to settle the quarrel. It was agreed that the former should compel Bonifacius IX. in Rome, and the latter Benedict XIII. in Avignon, to abdicate, so that the church might have an opportunity to unite on a single Pope; but neither monarch succeeded in carrying out the plan.

On the contrary, Bonifacius IX. went secretly to work to depose Wenzel. He gained the support of the four electors of the Rhine, who, headed by the Archbishop of Mayence, came together in 1400, proclaimed that Wenzel had forfeited his imperial dignity, and elected the Count Palatine Rupert, a member of the house of Wittelsbach (Bavaria), in his place. The city of Aix-la-Chapelle shut its gates upon the latter, and he was crowned in Cologne. A majority of the smaller German princes, as well as of the free cities, refused to acknowledge him; but, on the other hand, none of them made any movement in Wenzel's favor, and so there were, practically, two separate heads to the empire.

Rupert imagined that his coronation in Rome would secure his authority in Germany. He therefore collected an army, entered into an alliance with the republic of Florence against Milan, and marched to Italy in 1401. Near Brescia he met the army of the Lombards, commanded by the Milanese general, Barbiano, and was so signally defeated that he was compelled to return to Germany. In the meantime Wenzel had come to a temporary understanding with Jodocus of Moravia and the Hapsburg dukes of Austria, and his prospects improved as Rupert's diminished. It was not long, however, before he quarreled with his brother Sigismund, and was imprisoned by the latter. Then ensued a state of general confusion, the cause of which is easy to understand, but the features of which it is not easy to make clear.

A number of reigning princes and cities held a convention at Marbach in 1405, and formed a temporary union, the object of which was evidently to create a third power in the empire. Both Rupert and Wenzel at first endeavored to break up this new league, and then, failing in the attempt, both intrigued for its support. The Archbishop of Mayence and the Margrave of Baden, who stood at its head, were secretly allied with France; the smaller princes were ambitious to gain for themselves a power equal to that of the seven electors, and the cities hoped to recover some of their lost rights. The League of Marbach, as it is called in history, had as little unity or harmony as the empire itself. All Germany was given up to anarchy, and seemed on the point of falling to pieces. So much had the famous Golden Bull of Charles IV. accomplished in fifty years!

On the eastern shore of the Baltic, also, the march of German civilization received an almost fatal check. The two strongest neighbors of the German Order, the Poles and Lithuanians, were now united under one crown, and they defeated the army of the Order, 60,000 strong, under the walls of Wilna, in 1389. After an unsatisfactory peace of some years, hostilities were again resumed, and both sides prepared for a desperate and final struggle. Each raised an army of more than 100,000 men, among whom, on the Polish side, there were 40,000 Russians and Tartars. The decisive battle was fought at Tannenberg in July, 1410, and the

German Order, after losing 40,000 men, retreated from the field. It was compelled to give up a portion of its territory to Poland and pay a heavy tribute. From that day its power was broken, and the Slavonic races encroached more and more upon the Germans along the Baltic.

During this same period Holland was rapidly becoming estranged from the German Empire, and France had obtained possession of the greater part of Flanders. Luxemburg and part of Lorraine were incorporated with Burgundy, which was rising in power and importance, and had become practically independent of Germany. There was now no one to guard the ancient boundaries, and probably nothing but the war between England and France prevented the latter kingdom from greatly increasing her territory at the expense of the empire.

Although Rupert of the Palatine acquired but a limited authority in southern Germany, he is generally classed among the German emperors, perhaps because Wenzel's power, after the year 1400, was no greater than his own. The confusion and uncertainty in regard to the imperial dignity lasted until 1410, when Rupert determined to make war upon the Archbishop of Mayence—who had procured his election, and since the League of Marbach was his chief enemy—as the first step toward establishing his authority. In the midst of his preparations he died, on May 18, 1410.

Chapter XXII

THE REIGN OF SIGISMUND AND THE HUSSITE WAR

1410-1438

IN 1410, the year of Rupert's death, Europe was shocked by the spectacle of three emperors in Germany, and three Popes of the Church of Rome, all claiming to rule at the same time. The diet was divided between Sigismund and Jodocus of Moravia, both of whom were declared elected, while Wenzel insisted that he was still emperor. A council held at Pisa about the same time deposed Pope Gregory XII. in Rome and Pope Benedict XIII. in Avignon, and elected a third, who took the name of Alexander V. But neither of the former obeyed the decrees of the council. Gregory XII. betook himself to Rimini, Alexander, soon succeeded by John XXIII., reigned in Rome, and the three spiritual rivals began a renewed war of proclamations and interdictions.

The political rivalry in Germany did not last long. Jodocus of Moravia, of whom an old historian says: "He was considered a great man, but there was nothing great about him except his beard," died soon after his partial election, Wenzel was persuaded to give up his opposition, and Sigismund was generally recognized as the sole emperor. In addition to the Mark of Brandenburg, which he had received from his father, Charles IV., he had obtained the crown of Hungary through his wife, and claimed also the kingdoms of Bosnia and Dalmatia. He had fought the Turks on the lower Danube, had visited Constantinople, and was already distinguished for his courage and knightly bearing. Unlike his brother Wenzel, who had the black hair and high cheekbones of a Bohemian, he was blond-haired, blue-eyed, and strikingly handsome. He spoke several languages, was witty in speech, cheerful in demeanor, and popular with all classes, but, unfortunately, both fickle and profligate. Moreover, he was one of the vainest men that ever wore a crown.

Before Sigismund entered upon his reign the actions of the Roman clergy had given rise to a new and powerful religious movement in Bohemia. As early as 1360 independent preachers had arisen among the people there, advocating the pure truths of the Gospel, and exhorting their hearers to turn their backs on the pride and luxury which prevailed, to live simply and righteously, and do good to their fellow-men. Although persecuted by the priests, they found many followers, and their example soon began to be more widely felt, especially as Wickliffe, in England, was preaching a similar doctrine at the same time. The latter's translation of the Bible was finished in 1383, and portions of it, together with his other writings in favor of a reformation of the Christian Church, were carried to Prague soon afterward.

The great leader of the movement in Bohemia was John Huss, who was born in 1369, studied at the University of Prague, became a teacher there, and at the same time a defender of Wickliffe's doctrines, in 1398, and four years afterward, in spite of the fierce opposition of the clergy, was made rector of the university. With him was associated Jerome (Hieronymus), a young Bohemian nobleman, who had studied at Oxford, and was also inspired by Wickliffe's writings. The learning and lofty personal character of both gave them an influence in Prague, which gradually extended over all Bohemia. Huss preached with the greatest earnestness and eloquence against the doctrine of absolution, the revering of saints and images, the trade in offices and indulgences, and the idea of a purgatory from which souls could be freed by masses celebrated on their behalf. He advocated a return to the simplicity of the early Christian Church, especially in the use of the sacrament (communion). The form of administering the sacrament had been changed, the laymen receiving only bread, while the priests partook of both bread and wine. Huss, and the sect which took his name, demanded that it should be administered to all "in both forms."

The first consequence of the preaching of Huss was a division between the Bohemians and Germans, in the University of Prague. The Germans took the part of Rome, but the Bohemians secured the support of King Wenzel through his queen, who was a follower of Huss, and maintained their ascendency. Thereupon the German professors and students, numbering five thousand, left Prague in a body, in 1409, and migrated to Leipzig, where they founded a new university. These matters were reported to the Roman Pope, who immediately excommunicated Huss and his followers. Soon afterward the Pope (John XXIII.), desiring to subdue the king of Naples, offered pardons and indulgences to all who would take up arms on his side. Huss and Jerome preached against this proposition, and the latter publicly burned the Pope's bull in the streets of Prague. The conflict now became so fierce that Wenzel banished both from the city, many of Huss's friends among the clergy fell away from him, and he offered to submit his doctrines to a general council of the church.

Such a council, in fact, was then demanded by all Christendom. The intelligent classes in all countries felt that the demoralization caused by the mismanagement of the clergy and the scandalous quarrels of three rival Popes could no longer be endured. The council at Pisa, in 1409, had only made matters worse by adding another Pope to the two at Rome and Avignon; for, although it claimed the highest spiritual authority on earth, it was not obeyed. The Chancellor of the University of Paris called upon the Emperor Sigismund to move in favor of a new council; all the Christian powers of Europe promised their support, and finally one of the Popes, John XXIII., being driven from Rome, was persuaded to agree, so that a grand ecumenical council, with authority over the Papacy, was summoned to meet in the city of Constance in the autumn of the year 1414.

It was one of the most imposing assemblies ever held in Europe. Pope John XXIII. personally appeared, accompanied by 600 Italians; the other two Popes sent ambassadors to represent their interests. The patriarchs of Jerusalem, Constantinople, and Aquileia, the grand masters of the knightly orders, 33 cardinals, 20 archbishops, 200 bishops and many thousand priests and monks were present. Then came the Emperor Sigismund, the representatives of all Christian powers, including the Byzantine emperor, and even an envoy from the Turkish sultan, with 1600 princes and their followers. The entire concourse of strangers at Constance was computed at 150,000, and thirty different languages were heard at the same time. A writer of the day thus describes the characteristics of the four principal races: "The Germans are impetuous, but have much endurance; the French are boastful and arrogant; the English prompt and sagacious; and the Italians subtle and intriguing." Gamblers, mountebanks, and dramatic performers were also on hand; great tournaments, races, and banquets were constantly held; yet, although the council lasted four years, there was no disturbance of the public order, no increase in the cost of living, and no epidemic diseases in the crowded camps.

The professed objects of the council were a reformation of the church, its reorganization under a single head, and the suppression of heresy. The members were divided into four "nations"—the German, including the Bohemians, Hungarians, Poles, Russians, and Greeks; the French, including Normans, Spaniards, and Portuguese; the English, including Irish, Scotch, Danes, Norwegians, and Swedes; and the Italian, embracing all the different states from the Alps to Sicily. Each of these nations held its own separate convention, and cast a single vote, so that no measure could be carried unless three of the four nations were in favor of it. Germany and England advocated the reformation of the church as the first and most important question; France and Italy cared only to have the quarrel of the Popes settled, and finally persuaded England to join them. Thus the reformation was postponed, and that was practically the end of it.

As soon as it became evident that all three of the Popes would be deposed by the council, John XXIII. fled from Constance in disguise, with the assistance of the Hapsburg duke, Frederick of Austria. Both were captured; the Pope was imprisoned at Heidelberg, and Frederick was declared to have forfeited his lands. Although Austria was afterward restored to him, all the Hapsburg territory lying between Zurich, the Rhine, and the Lake of Constance was given to Switzerland, and has remained Swiss ever since. A second Pope, Gregory XII., now voluntarily abdicated, but the third, Benedict XIII., refused to follow the example, and maintained a sort of Papal authority in Spain until his death. The council elected a member of the family of Colonna, in Rome, who took the name of Martin V. The four nations took up the question of suppressing heresy.

Huss, to whom the emperor had sent a safe conduct for the journey to and from Constance, and who was escorted by three Bohemian knights, was favorably received by the people on the way. He reached Constance in November, 1414, and was soon afterward—before any examination—arrested and thrown into a dungeon so foul that he became seriously ill. Sigismund insisted that he should be released, but the cardinals and bishops were so embittered against him that they defied the emperor's authority. All that the latter could (or did) do for him was to procure for him a trial, which began on June 7, 1415.

On July 6 the council assembled in the cathedral of Constance. After mass had been celebrated, Huss, who had steadfastly refused to recant, was led before the congregation of priests and princes, and clothed as a priest, to make his condemnation more solemn. A bishop read the charges against him, and then each article of the priestly dress was stripped from him. The same day Huss was publicly burned to death. On arriving at the stake he knelt and prayed so fervently that the common people began to doubt whether he really was a heretic. Being again offered a chance to retract, he declared in a loud voice that he would seal by his death the truth of all he had taught. After the torch had been applied to the pile, he was heard to cry out, three times, from the midst of the flames: "Jesus Christ, son of the Living God, have mercy upon me!" Then his voice failed, and in a short time nothing was left of his body except a handful of ashes, which were thrown into the Rhine.

Huss's friend Jerome, who came to Constance on the express promise of the council that he should not be imprisoned before a fair hearing, was thrown into a dungeon as soon as he arrived, and so broken down by sickness and cruelty that in September, 1415, he promised to give up his doctrines. But he soon recovered from this weakness, declared anew the truth of all he had taught, and defended himself before the council in a speech of remarkable power and eloquence. He was condemned and burned at the stake on May 30, 1416.

The fate of Huss and Jerome created an instant and fierce excitement among the Bohemians. An address, defending them against the charge of heresy and protesting against the injustice and barbarity of the council, was signed by four or five hundred nobles and forwarded to Constance. The only result was that the council decreed that no safe conduct could be allowed to protect a heretic, that the University of Prague must be reorganized, and the strongest measures applied to suppress the Hussite doctrines in Bohemia. This was a defiance which the Bohemians courageously accepted. Men of all classed united in proclaiming that the doctrines of Huss should be freely taught and that no interdict of the church should be enforced. The university, and even Wenzel's queen, Sophia, favored this movement, which soon became so powerful that all priests who refused to administer the sacrament "in both forms" were driven from their churches.

The council sat at Constance until May, 1418, when it was dissolved by Pope Martin V. without having accomplished anything whatever tending to a permanent reformation of the church. The only political event of importance during this time was a business transaction of Sigismund's, the results of which, reaching to our day, have decided the fate of Germany. In 1411 the emperor was in great need of ready money, and borrowed one hundred thousand florins of Frederick of Hohenzollern, the Burgrave (*Burggraf,* "Count of the Castle") of Nuremberg, a direct descendant of the Hohenzollern who had helped Rudolf of Hapsburg to the imperial crown. Sigismund gave his creditor a mortgage on the territory of Brandenburg, which had fallen into a state of great disorder. Frederick at once removed thither, and in his own private interests undertook to govern the country. He showed so much ability, and was so successful in quelling the robber knights and establishing order, that in 1415 Sigismund offered to sell him the sovereignty of Brandenburg (which made him, at the same time, an elector of the empire) for the additional sum of 300,000 gold florins. Frederick accepted the terms, and settled permanently in the little state which afterward became the nucleus of the kingdom of Prussia, of which his own lineal descendants are now the rulers.

When the Council of Constance was dissolved Sigismund hastened to Hungary to carry on a new war with the Turks, who were already extending their conquests along the Danube. The Hussites in Bohemia employed this opportunity to organize themselves for resistance; 40,000 of them, in July, 1419, assembled on a mountain to which they gave the name of "Tabor," and chose as their leader a nobleman who was surnamed Ziska, "the one-eyed." The excitement soon rose to such a pitch that several monasteries were stormed and plundered. King Wenzel arrested some of the ringleaders, but this only inflamed the spirit of the people. They formed a procession in Prague, marched through the city, carrying the sacramental cup at their head, and took forcible possession of several churches. When they halted before the city hall to demand the release of their imprisoned brethren, stones were thrown at them from the windows, whereupon they broke into the building and hurled the burgomaster and six other officials upon the upheld spears of those below. The news of this event so excited Wenzel that he was stricken with apoplexy and died two weeks afterward.

The Hussites were already divided into two parties, one moderate in its demands, called the "Calixtines," from the Latin *calix,* a chalice, which was their symbol, because they believed that the cup of wine at communion should be given to the laity as well as the bread; it was the custom in the Catholic Church for the clergy, only, to take the communion in "two kinds." The other party, more radical and fanatic, called the "Taborites," proclaimed their separation from the Church of Rome and a new system of brotherly equality through which they expected to establish the millennium upon earth. The exigencies of their situation obliged these two parties to unite in common defense against the forces of the church and the empire during the sixteen years of war which followed; but they always remained separated in their religious views, and mutually intolerant. Ziska, who called himself "John Ziska of the Chalice, commander in the hope of God of the Taborites," had been a friend and was an ardent follower of Huss. He was an old man, bald-headed, short, broad-shouldered, with a deep furrow across his brow, an enormous aquiline nose, and a short red mustache. In his genius for military operations he ranks among the great commanders of the world. His quickness, energy, and inventive talent were marvelous, but at the same time he knew neither tolerance nor mercy.

Ziska's first policy was to arm the Bohemians. He introduced among them the "thunder-guns"—small field-pieces which had been used at the battle of Agincourt, between England and France, three years before; he shod the farmer's flails with iron, and taught them to crack helmets and armor with iron maces; and he invented a system of constructing temporary fortresses by binding strong wagons together with iron chains. Sigismund does not seem to have been aware of the formidable character of the movement until the end of his war with the Turks, some months afterward, and he then persuaded the Pope to summon all Christendom to a crusade against Bohemia. During the year 1420 a force of 100,000 soldiers was collected, and Sigismund marched at their head to Prague. The Hussites met him with the demand for the acceptance of the following articles: 1. The Word of God to be freely preached; 2. The sacrament to be administered in both forms; 3. The clergy to possess no property or temporal authority; 4. All sins to be punished by the proper authorities. Sigismund was ready to accept these articles as the price of their submission, but the Papal legate forbade the agreement, and war followed.

On November 1, 1420, the "crusaders" were totally defeated by Ziska, and all Bohemia was soon relieved of their presence. The dispute between the moderates and the radicals broke out again; the idea of a community of property began to prevail among the Taborites, and most of the Bohemian nobles refused to act with them. Ziska left Prague with his troops and for a time devoted himself to the task of suppressing all opposition through the country with fire and sword. He burned no less than 550 convents and monasteries, slaying the priests and monks who refused to accept the new doctrines; but he proceeded with equal severity against a new sect called the Adamites, who were endeavoring to restore Paradise by living without clothes. While besieging the town of Raby an arrow destroyed his remaining eye; yet he continued to plan battles and sieges as before. The very name of the blind warrior became a terror throughout Germany.

In September, 1421, a second crusade of 200,000 men, commanded by five German electors, entered Bohemia from the west. It had been planned that the Emperor Sigismund, assisted by Duke Albert of Austria, to whom he had given his daughter in marriage, and who was now also supported by many of the Bohemian nobles, should invade the country from the east at exactly the same time. The Hussites were thus to be crushed between the upper and the nether millstones. But the blind Ziska, nothing daunted, led his wagons, his flail-men, and mace-wielders against the electors, whose troops began to flee before them. No battle was fought; the 200,000 crusaders were scattered in all directions and lost heavily during their retreat. Then Ziska wheeled about and marched against Sigismund, who was late in making his appearance. The two armies met on January 8, 1422, and the Hussite victory was so complete that the emperor narrowly escaped falling into their hands. It is hardly to be wondered that they should consider themselves to be the chosen people of God after such astonishing successes.

At this juncture Prince Witold of Lithuania, supported by King Jagello of Poland, offered to accept the four articles of the Hussites, provided they would give him the crown of Bohemia. The moderates were all in his favor, and even Ziska left the Taborites when, true to their republican principles, they refused to accept Witold's proposition. The separation between the two parties of the Hussites was now complete. Witold sent his nephew, Koribut, who swore to maintain the four articles, and was installed at Prague as "Vicegerent of Bohemia." Thereupon Sigismund made such representations to King Jagello of Poland that Koribut was soon recalled by his uncle. About the same time a third crusade was arranged, and Frederick of Brandenburg (the Hohenzollern) selected to command it; but the plan failed from lack of support. The dissensions among the Hussites became fiercer than ever; Ziska was at one time on the point of attacking Prague, but the leaders of the moderate party succeeded in coming to an understanding with him, and he entered the city in triumph. In October, 1425, while marching against Duke Albert of Austria, who had invaded Moravia, he fell a victim to the plague. Even after death he continued to terrify the German soldiers, who believed that his skin had been made into a drum and still called the Hussites to battle.

A majority of the Taborites elected a priest, called Procopius the Great, as their commander in Ziska's stead; the others, who thenceforth styled themselves "Orphans," united under another priest, Procopius the Little. The approach of another imperial army, in 1426, compelled them to forget their differences, and the result was a splendid victory over their enemies. Procopius the Great then invaded Austria and Silesia, which he laid waste without mercy. The Pope called a fourth crusade, which met the same fate as the former ones: the united armies of the Archbishop of Treves, the Elector Frederick of Brandenburg, and the Duke of Saxony, 200,000 strong, were utterly defeated and fled in disorder, leaving an enormous quantity of stores and munitions of war in the hands of the Bohemians.

Procopius, who was almost the equal of Ziska as a military leader, made several unsuccessful attempts to unite the Hussites in one religious body. In order to prevent their dissensions from becoming dangerous to the common cause, he kept the soldiers of all sects under his command, and undertook fierce invasions into Bavaria, Saxony, and Brandenburg, which made the Hussite name a terror to all Germany. During these expeditions one hundred towns were destroyed, more than fifteen hundred villages burned, tens of thousands of the inhabitants slain, and such quantities of plunder collected that it was impossible to transport the whole of it to Bohemia. Frederick of Brandenburg and several other princes were compelled to pay heavy tributes to the Hussites: the empire was thoroughly humiliated, the people weary of slaughter, yet the Pope refused even to call a council for the discussion of the difficulty.

As for the Emperor Sigismund, he had grown tired of the quarrel long before. Leaving the other German states to fight Bohemia, he withdrew to Hungary and for some years found enough to do in repelling the inroads of the Turks. It was not until the beginning of the year 1431, when there was peace along the Danube, that he took any measures for putting an end to the Hussite war. Pope Martin V. was dead, and his successor, Eugene IV., reluctantly consented to call a council to meet at Basel. First, however, he insisted on a fifth crusade, which was proclaimed for the complete extermination of the Hussites. The German princes made a last and desperate effort: an army of 130,000 men, 40,000 of whom were cavalry, was brought together, under the command of Frederick of Brandenburg, while Albert of Austria was to support it by invading Bohemia from the south.

Procopius and his dauntless Hussites met the crusaders on August 14, 1431, at a place called Thauss, and won another of their marvelous victories. The imperial army was literally cut to pieces—8000 wagons, filled with provisions and munitions of war, and 150 cannons were left upon the field. The Hussites marched northward to the Baltic and eastward into Hungary, burning, slaying, and plundering as they went. Even the Pope now yielded, and the Hussites were invited to attend the council at Basel, with the most solemn stipulations in regard to personal safety and a fair discussion of their demands. Sigismund in the meantime had gone to Italy and been crowned emperor in Rome, on condition of showing himself publicly as a personal servant of the Pope. He spent nearly two years in Italy, leading an idle and immoral life, and went back to Germany when his money was exhausted.

In 1433, finally, three hundred Hussites, headed by Procopius, appeared in Basel. They demanded nothing more than the acceptance of the four articles upon which they had united in 1420; but after seven weeks of talk, during which the council agreed upon nothing and promised nothing, they marched away, after stating that any further negotiation must be carried on in Prague. This course compelled the council to act, an embassy was appointed, which proceeded to Prague, and on November 30, the same year, concluded a treaty with the Hussites. The four demands were granted, but each with a condition attached which gave the church a chance to regain its lost power. For this reason the Taborites and "Orphans" refused to accept the compact; the moderate party united with the nobles and undertook to suppress the former by force. A fierce internal war followed, but it was of short duration. In 1434 the Taborites were defeated, their fortified mountain taken, Procopius the Great and the Little were both slain, and the members of the sect dispersed. The Bohemian Reformation was never again dangerous to the Church of Rome.

The Emperor Sigismund, after proclaiming a general amnesty, entered Prague in 1436. He made some attempt to restore order and prosperity to the devastated country, but his measures in favor of the church provoked a conspiracy against him, in which his second wife, the Empress Barbara, was implicated. Being warned by his son-in-law, Duke Albert of Austria, he left Prague for Hungary. On reaching Znaim, the capital of Moravia, he felt the approach of death, whereupon, after naming Albert his successor, he had himself clothed in his imperial robes and seated in a chair, so that, after a worthless life, he was able to die in great state, on December 9, 1437. With him expired the Luxemburg dynasty.

Chapter XXIII

THE FOUNDATION OF THE HAPSBURG DYNASTY

1438-1439

THE German electors seemed to be acting contrary to their usual policy, when, on March 18, 1438, they unanimously voted for Albert of Austria, who became emperor as Albert II. With him begins the unbroken line of Hapsburg rulers, which kept sole possesssion of the imperial office until Francis II. gave up the title of emperor of Germany, in 1806. Albert II. was duke of Austria, and, as the heir of Sigismund, he was also king of Hungary and Bohemia; consequently the power of his house was much greater than that of any other German prince; but the electors were influenced by the consideration that his territories lay mostly outside of Germany proper, that they were in a condition which would demand all his time and energy, and therefore the other states and principalities would probably be left to themselves, as they had been under Sigismund. Nothing is more evident in the history of Germany, from first to last, than the opposition of the ruling princes to any close political union of a national character; but it was seldom so selfish and shamelessly manifested as in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries.

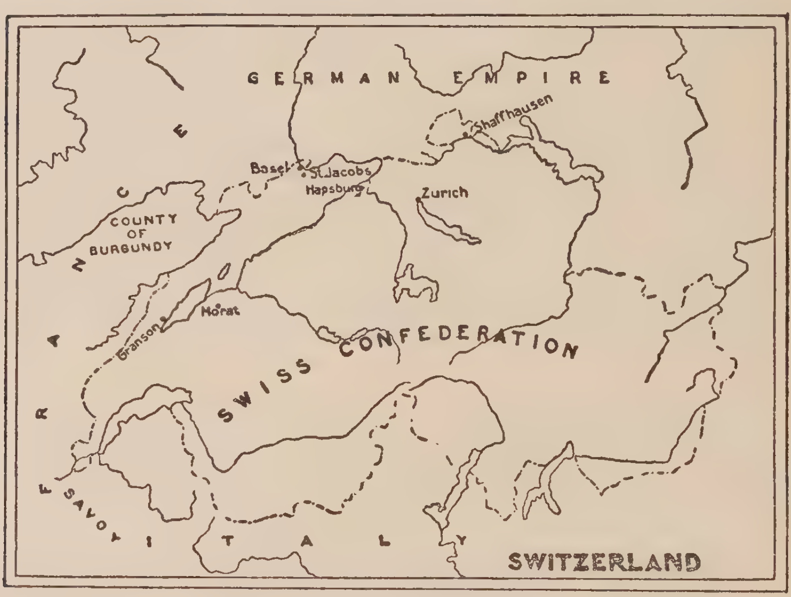
The events of Albert II.'s short reign are not important. Before anything could be accomplished he died in Hungary, in October, 1439.

The electors again met, and in February, 1440, unanimously chose Albert's cousin, Frederick of Styria and Carinthia, who, after waiting three months before he could make up his mind, finally accepted, and was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle as Frederick III. His indolence, eccentricity, and pedantic stiffness seemed to promise just such a wooden figure-head as the princes required: it is difficult to imagine any other reason for the selection. He was a loyal servant of the Papal power, and his secretary, Æneas Sylvius (who afterward became Pope as Pius II.), influenced him wholly in the interest of the Church of Rome at a time when a majority of the German princes, and even many of the bishops, were endeavoring to effect a reformation.

The council at Basel had not adjourned after concluding the compact of Prague with the Hussites. The desire for a correction of the abuses which had so weakened the spiritual authority of the church was strong enough to compel the members to discuss plans of reform. Their course was so distasteful to Pope Eugene IV. that he threatened to excommunicate the council, which, in return, deposed him and elected Amadeus, Duke of Savoy, who took the name of Pope Felix V. The prospect of a new schism disturbed the Christian world; many of the reigning princes refused to recognize Eugene unless he would grant entire freedom to Germany in religious matters, and he would have probably been obliged to yield but for the help extended to him by Frederick III., under the influence of Æneas Sylvius. The latter succeeded in destroying the work of reform in its very beginning. By the Concordat of Vienna, in 1448, Frederick neutralized the action of the council and restored the Papal authority in its most despotic form. Felix V. was forced to abdicate, and the council of Basel—which had meanwhile adjourned to Lausanne—was finally dissolved, after a session of seventeen years.

In his political course, during this time, Frederick III. was equally weak and unsuccessful. After making a temporary arrangement with Hungary and Bohemia, he determined to reconquer the former Hapsburg possessions from the Swiss. A quarrel between Zurich and the other cantons seemed to favor his plan; but not being able to obtain any troops in Germany, he applied to Charles VII. of France for 5000 of the latter's mercenaries. As Charles, with the help of Joan D'Arc, the Maid of Orleans, had just victoriously concluded his war with England, he had plenty of men to spare; so, instead of 5000, he sent 30,000, under the command of the Dauphin. This force marched into Switzerland, and was met, on August 26, 1444, at St. Jacob, near Basel, by an army of 1600 devoted Swiss, every man of whom fell, after a battle which lasted ten hours. The French were so crippled and discouraged that they turned back and for months afterward laid waste Baden and Alsatia; so that only German territory suffered by this transaction.

The Suabian cities, inspired by the heroic attitude of the Swiss, now made another attempt to protect themselves against the encroachment of the reigning princes upon their ancient rights. For two years a fierce war was waged between them and the latter, who were headed by the Hohenzollern count, Albert Achilles of Brandenburg. The struggle came to an end in 1450, and so greatly to the disadvantage of the cities that the people of Schaffhausen annexed themselves and their territory to Switzerland. The following year, as there was a temporary peace, Frederick III. undertook a journey to Italy, with an escort of 3000 men. His object was to be crowned emperor at Rome, and the Pope could not refuse the request of such an obedient servant, especially after the latter had kissed his foot and appeared publicly as his groom. He was the first German emperor who amused the Roman people by playing such a part. During the year he spent in Italy he avoided Milan, and made no attempt to claim, or even to sell, any of the former imperial rights.



Disturbances in Hungary and Bohemia hastened his return to Germany. Both countries demanded that he should give up the boy Ladislas, son of Albert II., whom he still kept with him. In Bohemia George Podiebrad, a Hussite nobleman, was at the head of the government; in Hungary the ruler was John Hunyádi, one of the most heroic and illustrious characters in Hungarian annals. The emperor was compelled to give up Austria at once to Ladislas, who, at the age of sixteen, was also chosen king of Hungary and Bohemia. But he died soon afterward, in 1457, and then Matthias Corvinus, the son of Hunyádi, was elected king by the Hungarians, and George Podiebrad by the Bohemians. Even Austria, which Frederick attempted to retain, passed partly into the hands of his brother Albert. The German princes looked on well pleased, and saw the power of the Hapsburg house diminished; only its old ally, the House of Hohenzollern, still exhibited an active friendship for Frederick III.

The condition of the empire at this time was most deplorable. While France, England, and Spain were increasing their power by better political organization, Germany was weakened by an almost unbroken series of internal wars. The 340 independent dukes, bishops, counts, abbots, barons, and cities fought or made peace, leagued themselves together or separated, just as they pleased. So wanton became the spirit of destruction that Albert Achilles of Brandenburg openly declared: "Conflagration is the ornament of war,"—and the people described one of his campaigns by saying: "They can read at night in Franconia." Frederick III. called a number of national diets, but as he never attended any, the smaller rulers soon followed his example. Although the Turks began to ravage the borders of Styria and Carinthia, and carried away thousands of the inhabitants as slaves, he spent his time in Austria, quarreling with his brother Albert, and intriguing alternately with the Hungarians and Bohemians, in the attempt to secure for himself the crowns worn by Matthias Corvinus and George Podiebrad.

Along the Baltic shore the growth of the German element was checked and almost destroyed. After its crushing defeat at Tannenberg the Teutonic Order not only lost its power, but its liberal and intelligent character. It began to impose heavy taxes on the cities, and to rule with greater harshness the population under its sway. The result was a combined revolt of the cities and the country nobility, who compelled the Order to grant them a constitution, guaranteeing the rights for which they contended. They purchased Frederick III.'s consent to this measure for 54,000 gold florins. Soon afterward, however, the Order paid the emperor 80,000 gold florins to withdraw his consent. Then the cities and nobles, exasperated at this treachery, rose again, and called the

Poles to their help. The Order appealed to the empire, but received no assistance. It was defeated and its territory overrun; West Prussia was annexed to Poland, which held it for three centuries afterward, and East Prussia, detached completely from the empire, was left as a little German island surrounded by Slavonic races. By the Peace of Thorn, in 1466, East Prussia still remained in the hands of the Teutonic knights, but they had to pay homage to the King of Poland as feudal overlord. The responsibility for this serious loss to Germany, as well as for the internal anarchy and barbarity which prevailed, rests directly upon the electors who selected Frederick III. precisely because they knew his character, and who never attempted to depose him, during his long and miserable reign of fifty-three years.

Germany was also seriously threatened on the west, not by France, but by the sudden growth of a new power which was equally dangerous to France. This was the duchy of Burgundy, which in the course of a hundred years had grown to the dimensions of a kingdom, and was now strong enough to throw off the dependency of the territories it embraced, to France on the one side and to the German Empire on the other. The foundation of its growth was laid in 1363, when King John of France made his fourth son, called Philip the Bold, Duke of Burgundy, and the latter, by marrying the Countess Margaret of Flanders, extended his territory to the mouth of the Rhine. His successors extended the sway of Burgundy, by purchase, inheritance, or force of arms, over all Belgium and Holland, so that it then reached from the Rhine to the North Sea. The Burgundian court was one of the most splendid in Europe, and became the rival of Italy in wealth, architecture, and the fine arts.

In 1467 Charles the Bold became Duke of Burgundy. He was rash, vindictive, and almost insanely ambitious. The great purpose of his life seems to have been to extend his territory to the Alps and the Mediterranean, to gain possession of Lorraine and Alsatia, and thus to found a kingdom of Burgundy, almost corresponding to that given to Lothar by the Treaty of Verdun, in 843. He first acquired additional territory in Belgium, then took a mortgage on all the possessions of the Hapsburgs in Alsatia and Baden by making a loan to Sigismund of Tyrol. Frederick III. not only permitted these transactions, but met Charles at Treves in 1473 to arrange a marriage between the latter's only daughter, Mary of

Burgundy, and his own son, Maximilian. During the visit, which lasted two months, Charles the Bold displayed so much pomp and splendor that the emperor, unable to make an equal show, finally left without saying good-by. The interests of Germany did not move him, but when his personal vanity was touched he was capable of action.

For a short time Frederick exhibited a little energy and intelligence. In order to secure the alliance of the Swiss, who were equally threatened by the designs of Charles the Bold, he concluded the Perpetual Peace with them, relinquishing forever the claims of the House of Hapsburg to authority over any part of their territory. The cities of Alsatia and Baden advanced money to Sigismund of Tyrol to pay his debt, and when Charles the Bold nevertheless refused to give up Alsatia and part of Lorraine, which he had seized in the meantime, war was declared against him. Louis XI. of France, equally jealous of Burgundy, favored the movement, but took no active part in it. Although Charles was driven out of Alsatia and failed to take the city of Neuss after a siege of ten months, he succeeded in negotiating a peace by offering a truce of nine years to Louis XI. and promising his daughter's hand to Frederick's son, Maximilian. In this treaty the emperor, who had persuaded Switzerland and Lorraine to become his allies, infamously gave them up to Charles the Bold's revenge.

The latter instantly seized the whole of Lorraine, transferred his capital from Brussels to Nancy, and, considering his future kingdom secured, prepared first to punish the Swiss. He collected a magnificent army of 50,000 men, crossed the Jura, and appeared before the town of Granson, on the Lake of Neufchatel. The place surrendered on condition that the citizens should be allowed to leave unharmed; but Charles seized them, hanged a number, and threw the rest into the lake. By this time the Swiss army, numbering 18,000, appeared before Granson. Before beginning the battle they fell upon their knees and prayed fervently; whereupon Charles cried out: "See, they are begging for mercy, but none of them shall escape!" For several hours the fight raged fiercely; then the horns of the mountaineers—the "bulls of Uri and the cows of Unterwalden," as the Swiss called them—were heard in the distance, as they hastened to join their brethren. A panic seized the Burgundians, and after a short and desperate struggle they fled, leaving all their camp equipage, 420 cannon, and such enormous treasures in the hands of the Swiss that the soldiers divided the money by hatfuls.

This splendid victory occurred on May 3, 1476. Charles made every effort to retrieve his fortunes. He called fresh troops into the field, reorganized his army, and on June 22 again met the Swiss near the little town and lake of Morat. The battle fought there resulted in a more crushing defeat than that of Granson: 15,000 Burgundians were left dead upon the field. The aid which the Swiss had begged the German Empire to give them had not been granted, but it was not needed. Charles the Bold seems to have become partially insane after this overthrow of his ambitious plans. He refused the proffered mediation of Frederick III. and the Pope, and endeavored to resume the war. In the meantime Duke René of Lorraine had recovered his land, and when Charles marched to retake Nancy the Swiss allied themselves with the former. A final battle was fought before the walls of Nancy in January, 1477. After the defeat and flight of the Burgundians the body of Charles was found on the field, so covered with blood and mud as scarcely to be recognized.

Up to this time the German Empire had always claimed that its jurisdiction extended over Switzerland, but henceforth no effort was ever made to enforce it. The little communities of free people who had defied and humiliated Austria, and now, within a few months, crushed the splendid and haughty House of Burgundy, were left alone, an eyesore to the neighboring princes, but a hope to their people. The Hapsburg dynasty, nevertheless, profited by the fall of Charles the Bold. Mary of Burgundy gave her hand to Maximilian in 1477, and he established his court in Flanders. He was both handsome and intellectually endowed, and was reputed to be the most accomplished knight of his day. Louis XI. of France attempted to gain possession of those provinces of Burgundy which had French population, but was signally defeated by Maximilian in 1479. Three years afterward, however, when Mary of Burgundy was killed by a fall from her horse, the cities of Bruges and Ghent, instigated by France, claimed the guardianship of her two children, Philip and Margaret, the latter of whom was sent to Paris to be educated as the bride of the Dauphin. A war ensued which lasted until 1485, when Maximilian was reluctantly accepted as regent of Flanders.

While these events were taking place, Frederick III. was involved in a quarrel with Matthias Corvinus, King of Hungary, who easily succeeded in driving him from Vienna and then from Austria. Still the German princes looked carelessly on, and the weak old emperor wandered from one to the other, everywhere received as an unwelcome guest. In 1486 he called a diet at Frankfort, and endeavored, but in vain, to procure a union of the forces of the empire against Hungary. All that was accomplished was Maximilian's election as King of Germany. Immediately after being crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle he made a formal demand on Matthias Corvinus for the surrender of Austria. Before any further steps could be taken he was recalled to Flanders by a new rebellion, which lasted for three years.

Frederick III., deserted on all sides, and seeing the Hapsburg possessions along the frontiers of Austria and Tyrol threatened by Bavaria, finally appealed to the Suabian cities for help. He succeeded in establishing a new Suabian League, which was composed of twenty-two free cities, the Count of Würtemberg, and a number of independent nobles. A force was raised, with which he first marched to the relief of Maximilian, who had been taken and imprisoned at Bruges and was threatened with death. The undertaking was successful. Maximilian was released, and in 1489 his authority was established over all the Netherlands.

The next step was to rescue Austria from the Hungarians. An interview between Frederick III. and Matthias Corvinus was arranged, but before it could take place the latter died, in April, 1490. Maximilian, with the troops of the Suabian League, retook Vienna, and even advanced into Hungary, the crown of which country he claimed for himself, but was forced to conclude peace at Presburg the following year, without obtaining it. Austria, however, was completely restored to the House of Hapsburg.

Before the year 1491 came to an end Maximilian suffered a new humiliation. The last Duke of Brittany (in western France) had died, leaving, like Charles the Bold of Burgundy, a single daughter, Anna, as his only heir. Maximilian, who had been a widower since 1482, applied for her hand, which she promised to him: the marriage ceremony was even performed by proxy. But Charles VIII. of France, although betrothed to Maximilian's young daughter, Margaret, now fourteen years old, saw in this new alliance a great danger for his kingdom; so he prevented Anna from leaving Brittany, married her himself, and sent Margaret home to

Austria. Maximilian entered into an alliance with Henry VII. of England, secured the support of the Suabian League, and made war upon France. The Netherlands, nevertheless, refused to aid him; whereupon Henry VII. withdrew from the alliance, and the matter was settled by a treaty of peace in 1493, which left the duchy of Burgundy in the hands of France.

Frederick III. had already given up the government of Germany (that is, what little he exercised) to his son. He settled at Linz and devoted his days to religion and alchemy. He had a habit of thrusting back his right foot and closing the doors behind him with it; but one day, kicking out too violently, he so injured his leg that the physicians were obliged to amputate it. This accident hastened his death, which took place in August, 1493. He was seventy-eight years old, and had reigned fifty-three years, wretchedly enough—but of this fact he was not aware. He evidently considered himself a great and successful monarch. All his books were stamped with the vowels, A. E. I. O. U.—which was a mystery to everyone, until the meaning was discovered after his death. The letters are the initials of the words, "*Alles Erdreich Ist Oesterreich Unterthan*"—"All earth is subject to Austria."

Two events occurred during Frederick's reign, one of which illustrated the declining influence of the Roman Church, while the other, unnoticed in the confusion of civil war, was destined to be the chief weapon for the overthrow of the priestly power. The first of these was the fall of the Eastern Empire, when Sultan Mohammed II. conquered Constantinople in 1453.

The other event was a simple invention, which is chiefly remarkable for not having been made long before. The great use of cards for gambling first led to the employment of wooden blocks, upon which the figures were cut and then printed in colors. Wood engraving of a rude kind gradually came into use, and as early as the year 1420 Lawrence Coster, of Harlem, in Holland, produced entire books, each page of which was engraved upon a single block. But John Gutenberg, of Mayence, about the year 1436, originated the plan of casting movable types and setting them together to form words. His chief difficulty was in discovering a proper metal of which to cast them and a kind of ink which would give a clear impression. Paper made of linen had already been in use in Germany for about 130 years.

Gutenberg was poor, and therefore took a man named Fust, who had considerable means, as his partner. They completed the first printing-press in 1440, but several more years elapsed before the invention achieved any result. Finally there was a quarrel between the two. There is a record of a lawsuit in 1455, Fust suing for the recovery of the various sums he had advanced from time to time to be used in aiding the progress of the invention, for making tools, and for vellum, paper, and ink. Fust won the suit, Gutenberg withdrew, and Fust took his own assistant, Peter Schoeffer, as partner in the former's place, and continued the business. Schoeffer discovered the right combination of metal for the types, as well as an excellent ink. Gutenberg soon set up another office, which he is said to have directed until his death in 1468. It is difficult, however, to specify the books which were printed by Gutenberg, as he made no effort to assert any claim to his invention. Gutenberg's process has, of course, been much improved, but the fundamental principles of his typemaking and that of the present day are practically the same.

In 1457 appeared the first printed book, a Latin psalter; in 1461 the Latin Bible, and two years afterward a German Bible. These Bibles are masterpieces of the printer's art: they were sold at from thirty to sixty gold florins a copy, which was one-tenth the cost of a manuscript Bible at that time. The art was at first kept a profound secret, and the people supposed that the books were produced by magic, as they were multiplied so rapidly and sold so cheaply; but when Mayence was taken by Adolf of Nassau, in 1462, during one of the civil wars, the invention became known to the world, and printing-presses were soon established in Holland, Italy, and England.

The rapid growth of this art, by multiplying books and pamphlets, opened the world of letters to the people. They were now equal to the nobles and the churchmen, and the civil classes in the cities soon came to be a power in the land. The clergy, and especially the monks, would have suppressed the art if they had been able. It took away from the latter the profitable business of copying manuscript works, and it placed within the reach of the people the knowledge of which the former had preserved the monopoly. Germany, more than any other country in Europe, was aroused to the greatest heights of intellectual activity.

From the time of Gutenberg dates the development of the revolt against the authority of the nobles and of the church. By the simple invention of movable types the darkness of centuries began to recede from the world; a mighty and irresistible change was sweeping over the minds and habits of men. But the rulers of that day, great or little, were the last persons to suspect that any such change was taking place.

PART III

PERIOD OF REFORMATION. 1493-1701

Chapter XXIV

THE REIGN OF MAXIMILIAN I. 1498-1519

AS Maximilian had been elected in 1486, he began to exercise the full imperial power, without any further formalities, after his father's death. For the first time since the death of Henry VII., in 1313, the Germans had a popular emperor. They were at last weary of the prevailing disorder and insecurity, and partly conscious that the power of the empire had declined, while that of France, Spain, and even Poland had greatly increased. Therefore they brought themselves to submit to the authority of an emperor who was in every respect stronger than any of the electors by whom he had been chosen.

Maximilian had all the qualities of a great ruler except prudence and foresight. He was tall, finely-formed, with remarkably handsome features, clear blue eyes, and blond hair falling in ringlets upon his shoulders; he possessed great muscular strength, his body was developed by constant exercise, and he was one of the boldest, bravest, and most skillful knights of his day. While his bearing was stately and dignified, his habits were simple. He often marched on foot, carrying his lance, at the head of his troops, and was able to forge his armor and temper his sword, as well as wear them. Yet he was also well educated, possessed a taste for literature and the arts, and became something of a poet in his later years. Unlike his avaricious predecessors, he was generous even to prodigality; but, inheriting his father's eccentricity of character, he was whimsical, very liable to act from impulse instead of reflection, and was headstrong and impatient. If he had been as wise as he was honest and well-meaning, he might have regenerated Germany.

The commencement of his reign was signalized by two threatening events. The Turks were renewing their invasions and boldly advancing into Carinthia, between Vienna and the Adriatic; Charles VIII. of France had made himself master of Naples and was apparently bent on conquering and annexing all of Italy. Maximilian had just married Blanca Maria Sforza, niece of the reigning Duke of Milan, which city, with others in Lombardy, and even the Pope—forgetting their old enmity to the German Empire—demanded his assistance. He called a diet, which met at Worms in 1495; but many of the princes, both spiritual and temporal, had learned a little wisdom, and they were unwilling to interfere in matters outside of the empire until something had been done to remedy its internal condition. Berthold, Archbishop of Mayence, Frederick the Wise of Saxony, John Cicero of Brandenburg, and Eberhard of the Beard, first Duke of Würtemberg, with many of the free cities, insisted so strongly on the restoration of order, security, and the establishment of laws which should guarantee peace, that the emperor was forced to comply. For fourteen weeks the question was discussed with the greatest earnestness: the opposition of many princes and nearly all the nobles was overcome, and the Perpetual National Peace (Landfrieden) was proclaimed. By this measure the right to use force was prohibited to all; the feuds which had desolated the land for a thousand years were ordered to be suppressed; and all disputes were referred to an imperial court, permanently established at Frankfort and composed of sixteen councilors. It was also agreed that the diet should meet annually, and remain in session for one month, in order to insure the uninterrupted enforcement of its decrees. A proposition to appoint an imperial council of state of twenty members, which should have power, in certain cases, to act in the emperor's name, was rejected by Maximilian, as an assault upon his personal rights.

Although the decree of Perpetual Peace could not be carried into effect immediately, it was not a dead letter, as all former decrees of the kind had been. Maximilian bound himself, in the most solemn manner, to respect the new arrangements, and there were now several honest and intelligent princes to assist him. One difficulty was the collection of a government tax, called "the common penny," to support the expenses of the imperial court. Such a tax had been for the first time imposed during the war with the Hussites, but very little of it was then paid. Even now, when the object of it was of such importance to the whole people, several years elapsed before the court could be permanently established. The annual sessions of the diet, also, were much less effective than had been anticipated. Princes, priests, and cities were so accustomed to selfish independence that they could not yet work together for the general good.

Before the diet at Worms adjourned it agreed to furnish the emperor with 9000 men, to be employed in Italy against the French and afterward against the Turks on the Austrian frontier. Charles VIII. retreated from Italy on hearing of this measure, yet not rapidly enough to avoid being defeated, near Parma, by the combined Germans and Milanese. In 1496 Sigismund of Tyrol died, and all the Hapsburg lands came into Maximilian's possession. The same year he married his son Philip, then eighteen years old, and accepted as regent by the Netherlands, to Joanna, the daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Castile. The other heirs to the Spanish throne died soon afterward, and when Isabella followed them, in 1504, she appointed Philip and Joanna her successors. The pride and influence of the House of Hapsburg were greatly increased by this marriage, but its consequences were most disastrous to Germany.

The next years of Maximilian's reign were disturbed, and, on the whole, unfortunate for the empire. An attempt to apply the decrees of the Diet of Worms to Switzerland brought on a war, which, after occasioning the destruction of 2000 villages and castles and the loss of 20,000 lives, resulted in the emperor formally acknowledging the independence of Switzerland in a treaty concluded at Basel in 1499. Then Louis XII. of France captured Milan, interfered secretly in a war concerning the succession, which broke out in Bavaria, and bribed various German princes to act in his interest, when Maximilian called upon the diet to assist him in making war upon France. After having with much difficulty obtained 12,000 men, the emperor marched to Italy, intending to replace the Sforza family in Milan and then be crowned by Pope Julius II. in Rome. But the Venetians stopped him at the outset of the expedition, and he was forced to return ingloriously to Germany.

Maximilian's next step was another example of his want of judgment in political matters. In order to revenge himself upon Venice, he gave up his hostility to France, and in 1508 became a party to the League of Cambray, uniting with France, Spain, and the Pope in a determined effort to destroy the Venetian republic. The war, which was bloody and barbarous, even for those times, lasted three years. Venice lost, at the outset, Trieste, Verona, Padua, and the Romagna, and seemed on the verge of ruin, when Maximilian suddenly left Italy with his army, offended, it is said, at the refusal of the French knights to fight side by side with his German troops. The Venetians then recovered so much of their lost ground that they secured the alliance of the Pope, and finally of Spain.

A new alliance, called "the Holy League," was now formed against France; and Maximilian, after continuing to support Louis XII. a while longer, finally united with Henry VII. of England in joining it. But Louis XII., who was a far better diplomatist than any of his enemies, succeeded, after he had suffered many inevitable losses, in dissolving this powerful combination. He married the sister of Henry of England, yielded Navarre and Naples to Spain, promised money to the Swiss, and held out to Maximilian the prospect of a marriage which would give Milan to the Hapsburgs.

Thus the greater part of Europe was for years convulsed with war chiefly because instead of a prudent and intelligent national power in Germany there was an unsteady and excitable family leader, whose first interest was the advantage of his house. After such sacrifices of blood and treasure, such disturbance to the development of industry, art, and knowledge among the people, the same confusion prevailed as before.

Before the war came to an end another general diet met at Cologne, in 1512, to complete the organization commenced in 1495. Private feuds and acts of retaliation had not yet been suppressed, and the imperial council was working under great disadvantages, both from the want of money and the difficulty of enforcing obedience to its decisions. The emperor demanded the creation of a permanent military force, which should be at the service of the empire; but this was almost unanimously refused. In other respects the diet showed itself both willing and earnest to complete the work of peace and order. The whole empire was divided into ten administrative districts (or "Circles"), each of which was placed under the jurisdiction of a judicial chief and board of councilors, whose duty it was to see that the decrees of the diet and the judgments of the imperial court were obeyed.

This division of Germany into districts had the external appearance of an orderly political arrangement; but the states, great and little, had been too long accustomed to having their own way. The fact that an independent baron, like Franz von Sickingen, could

ENTRY OF THE CROWN PRINCE MAXIMILIAN OF GERMANY INTO GHENT TO ESPOUSE MARY OF BURGUNDY

Painting by A. Schramm —page 218

still disturb a large extent of territory for a number of years, shows the weakness of the new national power. Moreover, nothing seems to have been done, or even attempted, by the diet to protect the agricultural population from the absolute despotism of the landed nobility. In Alsatia, as early as 1493, there was a general revolt of the peasants. Their banner bore a peasant's shoe, and their league was known therefore as the "Bundschuh." The rising was suppressed, but not until much blood had been shed. It excited a spirit of resistance throughout all southern Germany. In 1514 Duke Ulric of Würtemberg undertook to replenish his treasury by using false weights and measures, and provoked the common people to rise against him. They formed a society, to which they gave the name of "Poor Konrad," which became so threatening that, although it was finally crushed by violence, it compelled the reform of many flagrant evils and showed even the most arrogant rulers that there were bounds to tyranny.

But although the feudal system was still in force, the obligation to render military service formerly belonging to it was nearly at an end. The use of cannon and of a rude kind of musket had become general in war; heavy armor for man and horse was becoming not only useless, but dangerous; and the courage of the soldier, not his bodily strength or his knightly accomplishments, constituted his value in the field. The Swiss had set the example of furnishing good troops to whoever would pay for them, and a similar class, calling themselves Landsknechte (servants of the country), arose in Germany. The robber knights by this time were nearly extinct: when Frederick of Hohenzollern began to use artillery against their castles it was evident that their days of plunder were over. The reign of Maximilian, therefore, marks an important turning-point in German history. It is, at the same time, the end of the stormy and struggling life of the Middle Ages and the beginning of a new and fiercer struggle between men and their oppressors. Maximilian, in fact, is called in Germany "the Last of the Knights."

The strength of Germany lay chiefly in the cities, which, in spite of the narrow policy toward the country, and their jealousy of each other, had at least kept alive and encouraged all forms of art and industry, and created a class of learned men outside of the church. While the knighthood of the Hohenstaufen period had sunk into corruption and semi-barbarism, and the people had grown more dangerous through their ignorance and subjection, the cities had gradually become centers of wealth and intelligence. They were adorned with splendid works of architecture; they supported the early poets, painters, and sculptors; and, when compelled to act in concert against the usurpations of the emperor or the inferior rulers, whatever privileges they maintained or received were in favor of the middle-class, and therefore an indirect gain to the whole people.

The cities, moreover, exercised an influence over the country population by their markets, fairs, and festivals. The most of them were as large and as handsomely built as at present, but in times of peace the life within their walls was much gayer and more brilliant. Pope Pius II., when he was secretary to Frederick III. as Æneas Sylvius, wrote of them as follows: "One may veritably say that no people in Europe live in cleaner or more cheerful cities than the Germans; their appearance is as new as if they had only been built yesterday. By their commerce they amass great wealth: there is no banquet at which they do not drink from silver cups, no dame who does not wear golden ornaments. Moreover, the citizens are also soldiers, and each one has a sort of arsenal in his own house. The boys in this country can ride before they can talk, and sit firmly in the saddle when the horses are at full speed: the men move in their armor without feeling its weight. Verily, you Germans might be masters of the world, as formerly, but for your multitude of rulers, which every wise man has always considered an evil!"

During the fifteenth century a remarkable institution, called "the Vehm"—or, by the people, "the Holy Vehm"—exercised a great authority throughout northern Germany. Its members claimed that it was founded by Charlemagne to assist in establishing Christianity among the Saxons; but it is not mentioned before the twelfth century, and the probability is that it sprang up from the effort of the people to preserve their old democratic organization in a secret form, after it had been overthrown by the reigning princes. The object of the Vehm was to enforce impartial justice among all classes, and for this purpose it held open courts for the settlement of quarrels and minor offenses, while graver crimes were tried at night, in places known only to the members. The latter were sworn to secrecy, and also to implicit obedience to the judgments of the courts or the orders of the chiefs, who were called "Free Counts." The headquarters of the Vehm were in Westphalia, but its branches spread over a great part of Germany, and it became so powerful during the reign of Frederick III. that it even dared to cite him to appear before its tribunal.

In all probability the dread of the power of the Vehm was one of the causes which induced both Maximilian and the princes to reorganize the empire. In proportion as order and justice began to prevail in Germany, the need of such a secret institution grew less; but about another century elapsed before its courts ceased to be held. After that it continued to exist in Westphalia as an order for mutual assistance, something like that of the Freemasons, In this form it lingered until 1838, when the last "Free Count" died.

Among the other changes introduced during Maximilian's reign were the establishment of a police system and the invention of a postal system by Franz of Taxis. The latter obtained a monopoly of the post routes throughout Germany, and his family, which afterward became that of Thurn and Taxis, received an enormous revenue from this source from that time down to the present day. Maximilian himself devoted a great deal of time and study to the improvement of artillery, and many new forms of cannon which were designed by him are still preserved in Vienna.

Although the people of Germany did not share to any great extent in the passion for travel and adventure which followed the discovery of America in 1492 and the circumnavigation of Africa in 1498, they were directly affected by the changes which took place in the commerce of the world. The supremacy of Venice in the south and of the Hanseatic League in the north of Europe began slowly to decline, while the powers which undertook to colonize the new lands—England, Spain, and Portugal—rose in commercial importance.

The last years of Maximilian promised new splendors to the House of Hapsburg. In 1515 his younger grandson, Ferdinand, married the daughter of Ladislas, King of Bohemia and Hungary, whose only son died shortly afterward, leaving Ferdinand heir to the double crown. In 1516 the emperor's elder grandson, Charles, became king of Spain, Sicily and Naples, in addition to Burgundy and Flanders, which he held as the great-grandson of Charles the Bold. At a diet held at Augsburg, in 1518, Maximilian made great exertions to have Charles elected his successor, but failed on account of the opposition of Pope Leo X. and Francis I. of France, whose agents were present with heavy bribes in their pockets.

Disappointed and depressed, the emperor left Augsburg and went to Innsbruck, but the latter city refused to entertain him until some money which he had borrowed of it should be refunded. His strength had been failing for years before, and he always traveled with a coffin among his baggage. He now felt his end approaching, took up his abode in the little town of Wels, and devoted his remaining days to religious exercises. There he died on January 11, 1519, in the sixtieth year of his age.

Chapter XXV

THE REFORMATION. 1517-1546

WHEN the Emperor Maximilian died a greater man than he or any of his predecessors on the imperial throne had already begun a far greater work than was ever accomplished by any political ruler. Out of the ranks of the poor, oppressed German people arose the chosen leader who became powerful above all princes, who resisted the first monarch of the world, and defeated the Church of Rome after her undisturbed reign of a thousand years. We must therefore leave the succession of the House of Hapsburg until we have traced the life of Martin Luther up to the time of Maximilian's death.

The Reformation, which was now so near at hand, already existed in the feelings and hopes of a large class of the people. The persecutions of the Albigenses in France, the Waldenses in Savoy, and the followers of Wycliffe in England, the burning of Huss and Jerome, and the long ravages of the Hussite wars had made all Europe familiar with the leading doctrine of each of these sects—that the Bible was the highest authority, the only source of Christian truth. Earnest, thinking men in all countries were thus led to examine the Bible for themselves, and the great dissemination of the study of the ancient languages during the fifteenth century helped very much to increase the knowledge of the sacred volume. Then came the art of printing, as a most providential aid, making the Book accessible to all who were able to read it.

Martin Luther, the son of a poor miner, was born in the little Saxon town of Eisleben, not far from the Harz Mountain, on November 10, 1483. Luther's parents for several generations had been peasants of an honest, sturdy sort, simple in mind and strong in body. From them he inherited many of his best characteristics. He was essentially a man of the common people. He understood them, and later was able to make them understand him by his use of popular phrases and metaphors drawn from homely every-day experience. It was with true pride that he later declared, "I am a peasant's son; my father, my grandfather, and my great-grandfather were all peasants." Luther was strong and robust in body; he took a keen pleasure in nature, in outdoor life, and in healthful amusements. His fearless courage stands in striking contrast with the cowardice of his contemporary, Erasmus, who was ready to sacrifice principles for the sake of peace. But Luther also inherited the superstitious nature common to the German peasantry. He believed in a very real hell and an active devil. The boy Martin first attended a monkish school at Magdeburg. At fourteen he was sent to a boarding-school at Eisenach in Thuringia and became what is called a " wandering scholar "—that is, to gain his means of support he went about with his lute on his arm singing from door to door for alms, or sometimes chanting in the churches. As a boy he was so earnest, studious and obedient, and gave such intellectual promise, that his parents stinted themselves in order to save enough from their scanty earnings to secure him a good education. At the same time their circumstances gradually improved, and in 1501 they were able to send him to the University of Erfurt. Four years afterward he was graduated with honor, taking the degree of M. A., and delivered a course of lectures upon Aristotle.

Luther's father desired that he should study jurisprudence, but his thoughts were already turned toward religion. A copy of the Bible in the library of the university excited in him such a spiritual struggle that he became seriously ill. It is said that a few weeks later he was caught out in a terrific thunder-storm; as the lightning flashed before his eyes he uttered a hasty vow that if his life were spared he would become a monk. He immediately repented of his vow, well knowing the disappointment and anger it would cause his father. But to Luther's mind a vow once made was a solemn thing and must be kept. Accordingly, in 1505, he entered the Augustinian monastery at Erfurt. There he prayed, fasted, and followed the most rigid discipline of the order, in the hope of obtaining peace of mind, but in vain. He would shut himself up in a cell and passed through such mental struggles that once he was found senseless on the floor. But gradually he found peace of mind in the doctrine of " Justification by Faith." It was this zealous study of the Bible and its precise meaning which gave him henceforth not only a firm faith, but a peace and cheerfulness which was never afterward disturbed by trials or dangers.

The Elector of Saxony, Frederick the Wise, had founded a new university at Wittenberg, and sought to obtain competent professors for it. The vicar-general of the Augustinian Order, to whom Luther's zeal and ability were known, recommended him for one of the places, and in 1508 he began to lecture in Wittenberg, first on Greek philosophy and then on theology. His success was so marked that in 1510 he was sent by the Order on a special mission to Rome, where the laxness of the church made a profound impression upon his mind. He returned to Germany, feeling as he never had felt before the truth of the words, "the just shall live by faith," and realizing also the necessity of a reformation in the church. In 1512 he was made doctor of theology, and from that time forward his teachings, which were based upon his own knowledge of the Bible, began to bear abundant fruit.

In the year 1517 the Pope, Leo X., famous both for his luxurious habits and his love of art, in order to raise funds to continue the reconstruction of the great church of St. Peter, arranged for an extensive sale of so-called indulgences, both for the living and the dead. In order to understand the indulgence it must be borne in mind that according to the Catholic Church the priest had the right to forgive the sin of a truly contrite sinner who had duly confessed his evil deeds. This absolution freed the sinner from the deadly guilt which would otherwise have dragged him down to hell, but it did not free him from the penalities which God, or His representative, the priest, might choose to impose upon him. Serious penances had earlier been imposed by the church for wrongdoing, but in Luther's time the sinner who had been absolved was chiefly afraid of the sufferings reserved for him in purgatory. It was there that his soul would be purified and prepared for heaven. The indulgence was a pardon through which the contrite sinner escaped a part, or all, of the punishment which remained even after he had been absolved. The pardons did not therefore forgive the guilt of the sinner, for that had necessarily to be removed before the indulgence was granted; it only removed or mitigated the penalties which even the forgiven sinner would, without the indulgence, have expected to undergo in purgatory.[1]

---

[1] It is a common mistake of Protestants to suppose that men also purchased pardons in advance for the crimes they intended to commit. The Catholic Church never sanctioned this in the slightest degree. A person proposing to commit sin could not possibly be contrite in the eyes of the church, and even if he secured an indulgence, it would, according to the theologians, be quite worthless. It is possible, however, that unscrupulous agents of the church without any sanction may have occasionally sold indulgences to persons about to commit sin, and pretended that they would be efficacious.

These indulgences were made to cover nearly all forms of crime and were graduated in price. The right of selling them was granted out to agents, who received their pay by reserving a part of the profits for their own pockets. Albert, Archbishop of Mayence, bought the right of selling indulgences in Germany, and appointed as his agent a Dominican monk of the name of Tetzel. The latter began traveling through the country like a peddler, publicly offering for sale the pardon of the Catholic Church for all varieties of crime. Unfortunately Tetzel, like many of the other agents, was very eager for his own profits, and made reckless claims for the indulgences, to which no thoughtful churchman or even layman could listen without disapproval. He gave people to understand that as soon as their money chinked in his money-box the souls of their friends would be let out of purgatory. It shocked thoughtful people; it made them begin to dislike the whole indulgence system and call them " false pardons "; it made them begin to wonder whether there was anything in the Bible which really gave the church this power of remitting the punishment for sins. In other districts Tetzel only stirred up the abhorrence of the people, and increased their burning desire to have such enormities suppressed.

Only one man, however, dared to come out openly and condemn the Papal indulgences. This was Dr. Martin Luther, who on October 31, 1517, nailed upon the door of the church at Wittenberg a series of ninety-five theses, or theological declarations, the truth of which he offered to prove against all adversaries. The substance of them was that the pardon of sins came only from God, and could only be purchased by true repentance; that to offer indulgences for sale, as Tetzel was doing, was an unchristian act, contrary to the genuine doctrines of the church; and that it could not, therefore, have been sanctioned by the Pope. Luther's object, at this time, was not to separate from the Church of Rome, but to reform and purify it.

The ninety-five theses, which were written in Latin, were immediately translated, printed, and circulated throughout Germany. They were followed by replies, in which the action of the Pope was defended; Luther was styled a heretic, and threatened with the fate of Huss. He defended himself in pamphlets, which were eagerly read by the people; and his followers increased so rapidly that Leo. X., who had summoned him to Rome for trial, finally agreed that he should present himself before the Papal legate, Cardinal

Cajetanus, at Augsburg. The latter simply demanded that Luther should retract what he had preached and written, as being contrary to the Papal bulls; whereupon Luther, for the first time, was compelled to declare that "the command of the Pope can only be respected as the voice of God when it is not in conflict with the Holy Scriptures."

The vicar-general of the Augustinians was still Luther's friend, and, fearing that he was not safe in Augsburg, he had him let out of the city at daybreak, through a small door in the wall, and then supplied with a horse. Luther reached Wittenberg again in safety. He discovered that he had become a famous man. All Germany was talking about him and the ninety-five theses. The reason of this popularity was that Luther had had the courage to put into words what a great many people had already begun to think but had not definitely formulated for themselves. Luther had put their thoughts into words for them and they were ready to support him, even with arms, if need be. Thus Frederick the Wise of Saxony, though summoned to deliver Luther up, refused to do so unless he could be assured that Luther would have a fair hearing. About the same time Leo X. declared that the practices assailed by Luther were doctrines of the church, and must be accepted as such. Frederick began to waver; but the young Philip Melanchthon, Justus Jonas, and other distinguished men connected with the university exerted their influence, and the elector finally refused the demand. The Emperor Maximilian, now near his end, sent a letter to the Pope, begging him to arrange the difficulty, and Leo X. commissioned his nuncio, a Saxon nobleman named Karl von Miltitz, to meet Luther. The meeting took place at Altenburg in 1519. The nuncio, who afterward reported that he would not undertake to remove Luther from Germany with the help of ten thousand soldiers, for he had found ten men for him where one was for the Pope, was a mild and conciliatory man. He prayed Luther to pause, for he was destroying the peace of the church, and succeeded by his persuasions in inducing him to promise to keep silence, provided his antagonists remained silent also.

This was merely a truce, and it was soon broken. Dr. Eck, a German theologian noted for his devotion to the Pope and his great skill in debate, challenged Luther's friend and follower, Carlstadt, to a public discussion in Leipzig; it was not long before Luther himself felt compelled to take part in it. The discussion turned upon the powers of the Pope. Luther, who had been reading church history, declared that the Pope had not enjoyed his supremacy for more than four hundred years. This statement was not quite accurate, but, neverthelesss, he had hit upon an argument against the customs of the Roman Catholic Church which has ever since been constantly urged by Protestants. They assert that the mediæval church and the Papacy developed slowly, and that the Apostles in the time of Christ knew nothing of masses, indulgences, purgatory, and the supremacy of a Pope at Rome. Eck was quick to point out that Luther's views resembled those of Wycliffe and Huss, which had been condemned as heretical by the Council of Constance. Luther was forced to admit that the council had condemned some thoroughly Christian teachings. It led him to the conviction that even a general council might err, and, "that we are all good Hussites; yes, Paul and St. Augustine were good Hussites." Luther's encounter with a disputant of European reputation, and the startling admissions which he was compelled to make, first made him realize that he was becoming the leader in an attack upon the church. He began to see that a great change and upheaval were unavoidable. The struggle by this time had affected all Germany, the middle class and smaller nobles being mostly on Luther's side, while the priests and reigning princes, with a few exceptions, were against him. In order to defend himself from misrepresentation and justify his course, he published two pamphlets, one called "An Appeal to the Emperor and Christian Nobles of Germany," and the other, "Concerning the Babylonian Captivity of the Church."[2] These were scattered by the new printing presses and read by thousands and tens of thousands, all over the country.

Pope Leo X. immediately issued a bull, ordering all Luther's writings to be burned, excommunicating those who should believe in them, and summoning Luther to Rome. This only increased the popular excitement in Luther's favor, and on December 10, 1520, he took the step which made impossible any reconciliation between himself and the Papal power. Accompanied by the professors and students of the university, he had a fire kindled outside of one of the gates of Wittenberg, placed therein the books of Canon Law and various writings in defense of the Pope, and then cast the Papal bull into the flames, with the words: "As thou hast tormented the Lord and His saints, so may eternal flame torment and consume thee!" This was the boldest declaration of war ever hurled at such an overwhelming authority. The knight Ulric von Hutten, a distinguished scholar who had been crowned as poet by the Emperor Maximilian, openly declared for Luther; the rebellious Baron Franz von Sickingen offered him his castle as a safe place of refuge. Frederick the Wise was now his steadfast friend, and, although the dangers which beset him increased every day, his own faith in the righteousness of his cause only became firmer and purer.

---

[2] The gist of these was as follows: "To His Imperial Majesty and the Christian Nobility of the German Nation, Martin Luther wishes grace, etc. The Romanists have raised round themselves walls to protect themselves from reform. One is their doctrine that there are two separate estates; the one spiritual, *viz.*, Pope, bishops, priests and monks; the other secular, *viz.*, princes, nobles, artisans, and peasants. And they lay it down that the secular power has no power over the spiritual, but that the spiritual is above the secular; whereas in truth, all Christians are spiritual and there is no difference among them. The secular power is of God, to punish the wicked and protect the good, and so has rule over the whole body of Christians, without exception, Pope, bishops, monks,

By this time the question of electing a successor to Maximilian had been settled. When the diet came together at Frankfort, in June, 1519, two prominent candidates presented themselves—King Francis I. of France, and King Charles of Spain, Naples, Sicily, and the Spanish possessions in the newly discovered America. The former of these had no other right to the crown than could be purchased by the wagonloads of money which he sent to Germany; the latter was the grandson of Maximilian, and also represented, in his own person, Austria, the Netherlands, and the county of Burgundy. Again the old jealousy of so much power arose among the electors, and they gave their votes to Frederick the Wise, of Saxony. He, however, shrank from the burden of the imperial rule at such a time, and declined to accept. Then Charles of Spain, who had ruined the prospects of Francis I. by distributing 850,000 gold florins among the members of the diet, was elected without any further difficulty. The following year he was crowned at Aix-la-

nuns, and all. For St. Paul says, 'Let every soul [and I reckon the Pope one] be subject to the higher power.' . . . Let the power of the Pope be reduced within clear limits. Let there be fewer cardinals and let them not keep the best things for themselves. Let the national churches be more independent of Rome. Let there be fewer pilgrimages to Italy. Let there be fewer convents. Let priests marry. Let us inquire into the position of the Hussites, and if Huss was in the right, let us join with him in resisting Rome. . . . Enough for this time! I know right well I have sung in a high strain. Well, I know another little song about Rome and her people! Do their ears itch? I will sing it also, and in the highest notes."

Chapelle, and became Charles V. in the list of German emperors. Although he reigned thirty-six years, he always remained a foreigner. He never even learned to speak the German language fluently, his tastes and habits were Flemish, and his election at such a crisis in the history of Germany was a crime from the effects of which the country did not recover for three hundred years.

Luther wrote to the new emperor immediately after the election, begging that he might not be condemned unheard, and was so earnestly supported by Frederick the Wise, who had voted for Charles at the diet, that the latter sent Luther a formal invitation to appear before him at Worms, where a new diet had been called to take measures for improving the administration of the empire, and to raise a military force to drive the French out of Lombardy, which Francis I. had seized. Luther considered this opportunity "a call from God." He set out for Wittenberg, and wherever he passed the people flocked together in great numbers to see him and hear him speak. On approaching Worms one of his friends tried to persuade him to turn back, but he answered: "Though there were as many devils in the city as tiles on the housetops, yet would I go!" He entered Worms in an open wagon, in his monk's dress, stared at by an immense concourse of people. The same evening he received visits from a number of princes and noblemen.

On April 17, 1521, Luther was conducted by the marshal of the empire to the city hall, where the diet was in session. As he was passing through the outer hall the famous knight and general, George von Frundsberg, clapped him upon the shoulder, with the words: "Monk, monk! thou art in a strait, the like of which myself and many leaders, in the most desperate battles, have never known. But if thy thoughts are just, and thou art sure of thy cause, go on in God's name, and be of good cheer, He will not forsake thee!" Charles V. is reported to have said, when Luther entered the great hall: "That monk will never make a heretic of me!"

After having acknowledged all his writings, Luther was called upon to retract them. He appeared to be somewhat embarrassed and undecided, either confused by the splendor of the imperial court, or shaken by the overwhelming responsibility resting upon him. He therefore asked a little time for further consideration, and was allowed twenty-four hours. He was taken back to his inn. Without in the streets there was much noise and the quarrels of soldiers and opposing parties. Within, in his room, Luther opened his Bible before him and was heard to pray long and earnestly. People did not know what to make of his request for more time. Some thought he would retract. But, in the din and bustle about him, Luther wrote a letter to one of his friends. "I write to you from the midst of the tumult. I confessed myself the author of my books, and said I would reply to-morrow touching my recantation. With Christ's help, I shall never retract one tittle."

When he reappeared before the diet the next day he was calm and firm. In a plain, yet most earnest address, delivered first in German, and then in Latin, so that all might understand, he explained the grounds of his belief, and closed with the solemn words: "Unless, therefore, I should be confuted by the testimony of the Holy Scriptures and by clear and convincing reasons, I cannot and will not retract, because there is neither wisdom nor safety in acting against conscience. Here I stand; I cannot do otherwise: God help me! Amen."

Charles V., without allowing the matter to be discussed by the diet, immediately issued the Edict of Worms, which proclaimed Luther a heretic and an outlaw. As soon as the remaining twenty-one days of his safe conduct had expired everyone was forbidden to give him food, drink, or shelter; on the contrary, they were ordered to seize him and hand him over to the emperor's officers; and no one was to "buy, sell, read, preserve, copy, or print, any books of the aforesaid Martin Luther, since they are foul, noxious, suspected, and published by a notorious and stiff-necked heretic." Charles was urged by many of the partisans of Rome not even to respect his promise of a safe conduct for twenty-one days, but he answered: "I do not mean to blush, like Sigismund." Luther's sincerity and courage confirmed the faith of his princely friends. Frederick the Wise and the Landgrave Philip of Hesse walked by his side when he left the diet, and Duke Eric of Brunswick sent him a jug of beer. His followers among the nobility greatly increased in numbers and enthusiasm.

It was certain, however, that he would be in serious danger as soon as the twenty-one days had expired, and the emperor should proceed to enforce the Edict of Worms. A plot, kept secret from all his friends, was formed for his safety, and successfully carried out during his return from Worms to Wittenberg. Luther traveled in an open wagon, with only one companion. On entering the Thuringian Forest he sent his escort in advance, and was soon afterward, in a lonely glen, seized by four knights in armor and with closed visors, placed upon a horse and carried away. The news spread like wild-fire over Germany that he had been murdered, and for nearly a year he was lost to the world. His writings were only read the more: the Papal bull and the Edict of Worms were alike disregarded. Charles V. went back to Spain immediately after the Diet of Worms, after having transferred the German possessions of the House of Hapsburg to his younger brother, Ferdinand. The business of suppressing Luther's doctrines fell chiefly to the archbishops of Mayence and Cologne, and to the Papal legate.

Luther, meanwhile, was in security in a castle called the Wartburg, on the summit of a mountain near Eisenach. He was dressed in a knightly fashion, wore a helmet, breastplate and sword, allowed his beard to grow, and went by the name of "Squire George." But in the privacy of his own chamber—all the furniture of which is preserved to this day, as when he lived in it—he worked zealously upon a translation of the New Testament into German. In the spring of 1522 he was disturbed in his labors by the report of new doctrines which were being preached in Wittenberg. His friend Carlstadt had joined a fanatical sect called the Anabaptists. These misguided enthusiasts mistook their own excited imaginations for messages from heaven. They wanted no priests, for they were themselves prophets, no Bible, for they were themselves inspired, and they went about preaching violent changes, and exciting the crowds who heard them to violent deeds. They advocated the abolition of the mass, the destruction of pictures and statues, and proclaimed the coming of God's kingdom upon the earth.

The experience of the Bohemians showed Luther the necessity of union in his great work of reforming the Christian church. From his retreat at the Wartburg he saw at once how all this delusion and madness would injure the cause of the Reformation. Already, moreover, his enemies were triumphantly pointing to the excesses of the Anabaptists as the natural result of his doctrines. There was no time to be lost; in spite of the remonstrance of the Elector Frederick, he left the Wartburg, and rode alone, as a man-at-arms, to Wittenberg, where even Melanchthon did not recognize him on his arrival. He began preaching, with so much power and eloquence that in a few days the new sect lost all the ground it had gained, and its followers were expelled from the city. The necessity of arranging another and simpler form of divine worship was made evident by these occurrences; and after the publication of the New Testament in German, in September, 1522, Luther and Melancthon united in framing a new service for Lutheran churches.

The Reformation made such progress that by 1523, not only Saxony, Hesse, and Brunswick had practically embraced it, but also the cities of Frankfort, Strassburg, Nuremberg, and Magdeburg, the Augustinian Order of monks, a part of the Franciscans, and quite a large number of priests. Now, however, a new and most serious trouble arose, partly from the preaching of the Anabaptists, headed by their so-called prophet, Thomas Münzer, and partly provoked by the oppressions which the common people had so long endured. In the summer of 1524 the peasants of Würtemberg and Baden united, armed themselves, and issued the manifesto containing Twelve Articles.

They demanded the right to choose their own priests; the restriction of tithes to their harvests; the abolition of feudal serfdom; the use of the forests; the regulation of the privilege of the nobles to hunt and fish; and protection in certain other points against the arbitrary power of the landed nobility. They seemed to take it for granted that Luther would support them; but he, dreading a civil war and desirous to keep the religious reformation free from any political movement, published a pamphlet condemning their revolt. At the same time he used his influence on their behalf with the reigning priests and princes.

The excitement, however, was too great to be subdued by admonitions of patience and forbearance. A dreadful war broke out in 1525: the army of 30,000 peasants ravaged a great part of southern Germany, destroying castles and convents, and venting their rage in the most shocking barbarities, which were afterward inflicted upon themselves when they were finally defeated by the Count of Waldburg. The movement extended through middle Germany even to Westphalia, and threatened to become general: some parts of Thuringia were held for a short time by the peasants, and suffered terrible ravages. Another army of 8000 headed by Thomas Münzer was cut to pieces near Mühlhausen, in Saxony, and by the end of the year 1525 the rebellion was completely suppressed. In this short time some of the most interesting monuments of the Middle Ages, among them the grand castle of the

Hohenstaufens, in Suabia, had been leveled to the earth; whole provinces were laid waste; thousands of men, women, and children were put to the sword, and a serious check was given to the progress of the Reformation through all southern Germany.

The stand which Luther had taken against the rebellion preserved the friendship of those princes who were well-disposed toward him, but he took no part in the measures of defense against the imperial and Papal power which they were soon compelled to adopt. He devoted himself to the completion of his translation of the Bible, in which he was faithfully assisted by Melanchthon and others. In this great work he accomplished even more than a service to Christianity; he created the modern German language. Before his time there had been no tongue which was known and accepted throughout the whole empire. The poets and minstrels of the Middle Ages wrote in Suabian; other popular works were in Low Saxon, Franconian, or Alsatian. The dialect of Holland and Flanders had so changed that it was hardly understood in Germany; that of Brandenburg and the Baltic provinces had no literature as yet, and the learned or scientific works of the time were written in Latin.

No one before Luther saw that the simplest and most expressive qualities of the German language must be sought for in the mouths of the people. With all his scholarship, he never used the theological style of writing, but endeavored to express himself so that he could be clearly understood by all men. In translating the Old Testament he took extraordinary pains to find words and phrases as simple and strong as those of the Hebrew writers. He frequented the market-place, the merry-making, the house of birth, marriage, or death, to learn how the common people expressed themselves in all the circumstances of life. He enlisted his friends in the same service, begging them to note down for him any peculiar, characteristic phrase; "for," said he, "I cannot use the words heard in castles and courts." Not a sentence of the Bible was translated until he had found the best and clearest German expression for it. He wrote, in 1530: "I have exerted myself, in translating, to give pure and clear German. And it has verily happened, that we have sought and questioned a fortnight, three, four weeks, for a single word, and yet it was not always found. In Job, we so labored, Philip Melanchthon, Aurogallus, and I, that in four days we sometimes barely finished three lines."

Pope Leo X. died in 1521, and was succeeded by Adrian VI., the last German to wear the Papal crown. He admitted many of the corruptions of the Catholic Church, and seemed inclined to reform them, but he lived only two years, and his successor was Clement VII., a nephew of Leo. The latter induced Ferdinand of Austria, the dukes of Bavaria, and several bishops to unite in a league for suppressing the spread of Luther's doctrines. Thereupon the electors of Saxony and Brandenburg, Philip of Hesse, the dukes of Brunswick and Mecklenburg, the counts of Mansfeld and Anhalt, and the city of Magdeburg formed a counter-alliance at Torgau, in 1526. At the diet held in Speyer the same year the party of the Reformation was so strong that no decree against it could be passed. It was agreed in a decree of the diet that "each state should, as regards the Edict of Worms, so live, rule, and bear itself as it could answer to God and the emperor." This meant that the Catholic and Lutheran princes could each do as they liked in regard to the religion of their respective territories. From this decree of the Diet of Speyer came the division of Germany into Catholic and Protestant states.

The organization of the Lutheran Church which was by this time adopted in Saxony soon spread over all northern Germany. Its principal features were the abolition of the monastic orders and of priestly celibacy; divine service in the language of the country; the distribution of the Bible, in German, to all persons; the communion, in both forms, for laymen; and the instruction of the people and their children in the truths of Christianity. The former possessions of the church were given up to the state, and Luther, against Melanchthon's advice, even insisted on uniting the episcopal authority with the political, in the person of the reigning prince. He set the example of giving up priestly celibacy, by marrying, in 1525, Catharine von Bora, a nun of a noble family. This step created a great sensation; even many of Luther's friends condemned his course; but he declared that he was right, and he was rewarded by twenty-one years of unalloyed domestic happiness.

The Emperor Charles V., during all these events, was absent from Germany. His first war with France was brought to a conclusion by the battle of Pavia, in February, 1525, when Francis I. was captured and was sent as a prisoner to Madrid. But having purchased his freedom, the following year, by promising to give up his claims to Italy, Burgundy, and Flanders, he no sooner returned to France than he declared his promise was made under compulsion, and therefore not binding. He not only refused to keep his promise and give up the territories, but allied himself with Pope Clement VII., who was jealous of the emperor's increasing power in Italy, and began again the war against his life-long rival, Charles V. The old knight George von Frundsberg and the Constable de Bourbon—a member of the royal family of France who had gone over to Charles V.'s side—then united their forces, which were principally German, and marched upon Rome. The city was taken by storm in 1527, terribly ravaged, and the Pope made prisoner. Charles V. pretended not to have known of, or authorized, this movement; he liberated the Pope, who promised, in return, to call a council for the reformation of the church. The war continued, however,—Venice, Genoa, and England being also involved—until 1529, when it was terminated by the Peace of Cambray.

Charles V. and the Pope then came to an understanding, in virtue of which the former was crowned King of Lombardy and Emperor of Rome in Bologna in 1530, and bound himself to extirpate the doctrines of Luther in Germany. In Austria, Bavaria, and Würtemberg, in fact, the persecution had already commenced: many persons had been hanged or burned at the stake for professing the new doctrines. Ferdinand of Austria, who had meanwhile succeeded to the crowns of Bohemia and Hungary, was compelled to call a diet at Speyer in 1529, to take measures against the Turks, then victorious in Transylvania and a great part of Hungary; a majority of Catholics was present, and they passed a decree repeating the outlawry of Luther and his doctrines by the Diet of Worms. Seven reigning princes, headed by Saxony, Brandenburg and Hesse, and fifteen imperial cities claimed that the majority had no right to abrogate the edict of the former Diet of Speyer, for that had passed unanimously, and all had solemnly pledged themselves to support that agreement. They therefore appealed in protest to the emperor and a future council against the tyranny of the majority. Those who signed this appeal were called " Protestants." Thus originated the name which came to be generally applied to all Christians who do not accept the rule and teachings of the Roman Catholic Church.

The history of the Reformation in Switzerland cannot be here given. It will be enough to say that Zwingli, who was born in the canton of St. Gall in 1484, resembled Luther in his character, in his earnest devotion to study, and in the circumstance that his ideas of religious reform were derived from an intimate study of the Bible. But Zwingli and Luther differed utterly in their conception of the Lord's Supper. Luther believed in the "real presence" of Christ in the consecrated bread and wine; he believed in the absolute literalness of the words, "This is my body," and declared that at every celebration of the Eucharist "the actual body of Christ was bitten with the teeth." Zwingli's great contribution to the religious thought of the Reformation was that he took the words "This is my body" in a metaphorical sense, as meaning, that the bread and wine were merely symbols or tokens of Christ's body; he thought it a debasement of the Most High, who sitteth in heaven at the right hand of God, to think that at the bidding of men He must so often descend to earth. Thus were formed two Protestant parties, and it became ever more difficult for them to unite against the Catholic Church. To Philip of Hesse this theological difference seemed "madness and raving," and to try to reach a settlement he arranged for a conference between the two reformers at Marburg in 1529. It was his passionate desire that both branches of the Protestants should become united, in order to be so much the stronger to meet the dangers which all felt were coming. But Luther, who labored and prayed to prevent the struggle from becoming political, and who had opposed even the league of the Protestant princes at Torgau in 1526, was with difficulty induced to meet Zwingli. He was still busy with his translation of the Bible, with the preparation of a catechism for the people, a collection of hymns to be used in worship, and other works necessary to the complete organization of the Protestant Church.

When the meeting finally took place, Melanchthon, Jonas, and many other distinguished men were present: both Luther and Zwingli fully and freely compared their doctrines, but, although they were united on many essential points, they could not agree in regard to the nature of the Eucharist. Luther, as he sat at a table opposite Zwingli, drew from his pocket a piece of chalk and wrote on the table, "This is my body," and positively refused to accept any except the literal meaning of the words. He even refused to make common cause with the Swiss Protestants. This was one of several instances wherein the great reformer injured his cause through his lack of wisdom and tolerance; in small things, as in great, he was inflexible.

So matters stood in the beginning of 1530, when Charles V. returned to Germany, after an absence of nine years. He established his court at Innsbruck, and summoned a diet to meet at Augsburg, in April, but it was not opened until the 20th of June. Melanchthon, with many other Protestant professors and clergymen, was present. Luther, being under the ban of the empire, remained in Coburg, where he wrote his grand hymn, "Our Lord, He is a Tower of Strength." The Lutheran princes and cities united in signing a Confession of Faith, which had been very carefully drawn up by Melanchthon, and the emperor was obliged to consent that it should be read before the diet. He ordered, however, that the reading should take place, not in the great hall where the sessions were held, but in the bishop's chapel, and at a very early hour in the morning. The object of this arrangement was to prevent any but the members of the diet from hearing the document.

But the weather was intensely warm, and it was necessary to open the windows. The Saxon chancellor, Dr. Bayer, read the confession in such a loud, clear voice that a thousand or more persons, gathered on the outside of the chapel, were able to hear every word. The principles asserted were: That men are justified by faith alone; that an assembly of true believers constitutes the church; that it is not necessary that forms and ceremonies should be everywhere the same; that preaching, the sacraments, and infant baptism are necessary; that Christ is really present in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, which should be administered to the congregation in both forms; that monastic vows, fastings, pilgrimages, and the invocation of saints are useless, and that priests must be allowed to marry. After the confession had been read many persons were heard to exclaim: "It is reasonable that the abuses of the church should be corrected; the Lutherans are right, for our spiritual lords have carried it with too high a hand." The general impression was favorable to the Protestants, and the princes who had signed the confession determined that they would maintain it at all hazards. This "Augsburg Confession," as it was thenceforth called, was the foundation of the Lutheran Church throughout Germany. The Zwinglians were not present at Augsburg and did not accept the Augsburg Confession. They drew up a statement of their own.

The emperor ordered a refutation of the Protestant doctrines to be prepared by the Catholic theologians who were present, but refused to furnish a copy to the Protestants, and prohibited them from making any reply. The statement of the Catholics admitted that a number of Melanchthon's articles were perfectly orthodox, but rejected altogether the part of the Augsburg Confession which dealt with the practical reforms introduced by the Protestants. Charles declared the Catholic refutation to be convincing and unanswerable, and commanded the Protestants to accept it. They were to cease troubling the Catholics and to give back all the monasteries and church property which they had seized. As to the abuses which the Protestants complained of, he promised they would be corrected by himself and the Pope in a council which should meet within a year. This he hoped would be able to settle all differences and reform the church according to the views of the Catholics. But the council was not held for many years, and meanwhile the breach became more and more permanent between Rome and more than half of Germany. Charles V. procured the election of his brother Ferdinand to the crown of Germany, although Bavaria united with the Protestant princes in voting against him.

The imperial courts in the ten districts were now composed entirely of Catholics, and they were ordered to enforce the suppression of Protestant worship. Thereupon the Protestant princes and delegates from the cities met at the little town of Schmalkalden, in Thuringia, and on March 29, 1531, they bound themselves to unite, for the space of six years, in resisting the imperial decree. Even Luther, much as he dreaded a religious war, could not oppose this movement. The League of Schmalkalden, as it is called, represented so much military strength that King Ferdinand became alarmed and strongly advised a more conciliatory course toward the Protestants. Suleiman the Magnificent, Sultan of Turkey, who had conquered all Hungary, was marching upon Vienna with an immense army, and openly boasted that he would subdue Germany.

It thus became impossible for Charles V. either to suppress the Protestants at this time or to repel the Turkish invasion without their help. He was compelled to call a new diet, which met at Nuremberg, and in August, 1532, concluded the Religious Peace; both parties agreed to refrain from all hostilities until a general council of the church should be called. Thereupon the Protestants loyally contributed their share of troops to the imperial army. The army soon amounted to 80,000 men and was commanded by the famous General Sebastian Schertlin, himself a Protestant. The Turks were defeated everywhere, the siege of Vienna was raised, and the whole of Hungary might have been reconquered but for Ferdinand's unpopularity among the Catholic princes.

Other cities and smaller principalities joined the League of Schmalkalden, the power of which increased from year to year. The Religious Peace of Nuremberg greatly favored the spread of the Reformation, although it was not very strictly observed by either side. In 1534 Würtemberg, which was then held by Ferdinand of Austria, was conquered by Philip of Hesse, who reinstated the exiled duke, Ulric. The latter became a Protestant, and thus Würtemberg was added to the League. Charles V. would certainly have interfered in this case, but he had left Germany for another nine years' absence, and was just then engaged in a war with Tunis. The reigning princes of Brandenburg and Ducal Saxony (Thuringia), who had been enemies of the Reformation, died and were succeeded by Protestant sons: in 1537 the League of Schmalkalden was renewed for ten years more, and the so-called "holy alliances" which were attempted against it by Bavaria and the archbishops of Mayence and Salzburg were of no avail. The Protestant faith continued to spread, not only in Germany, but also in Denmark, Sweden, Holland, and England. The first of these countries even became a member of the Schmalkalden League in 1538.

Out of the "Freedom of the Gospel," which was the first watchword of the reformers, smaller sects continued to arise, notwithstanding they met with almost as much opposition from the Protestants as the Catholics. The Anabaptists obtained possession of the city of Münster in 1534, and held it for more than a year, under the government of a Dutch tailor, named John of Leyden, who had himself crowned King of Zion, introduced polygamy, and cut off the heads of all who resisted his decrees. When the Bishop of Münster finally took the city, John of Leyden and two of his associates were tortured to death, and their bodies suspended in iron cages over the door of the cathedral. About the same time Simon Menno, a native of Friesland, founded a quiet and peaceful sect which was named after him, the Mennonite, and which still exists, both in Germany and the United States.

While, therefore, Charles V. was carrying on his wars, alternately with the Barbary States and with Francis I. of France, the foundations of the Protestant Church, in spite of all divisions and disturbances, were permanently laid in Germany. Although he had been brilliantly successful in Tunis in 1535, he failed so completely before Algiers in 1541 that Francis I. was emboldened to make another attempt, in alliance with Turkey, Denmark, and Sweden. So formidable was the danger that the emperor was again compelled to seek the assistance of the German Protestants, and even of England. He returned to Germany for the second time and called a diet to meet in Speyer, which renewed the Religious Peace of Nuremberg, with the assurance that Protestants should have equal rights before the imperial courts and that they would be left free until the meeting of a free council of the church.

Having obtained an army of 40,000 men by these concessions, Charles V. marched into France, captured a number of fortresses, and had reached Soissons on his way to Paris when Francis I. acknowledged himself defeated and begged for peace. In the Treaty of Crespy, in 1544, he gave up his claim to Lombardy, Naples, Flanders, and Artois, the emperor gave him a part of Burgundy, and both united in a league against the Turks and Protestants, the allies of one and the other. In order, however, to preserve some appearance of fidelity to his solemn pledges, the emperor finally prevailed upon the Pope, Paul III., to order an ecumenical council. It was just 130 years since the Catholic Church had promised to reform itself. The delay had given rise to the Protestant Reformation, which was now so powerful that only a just and conciliatory course on the part of Rome could settle the difficulty. Instead of this, the council was summoned to meet at Trent, in the Italian part of the Tyrol; the Pope reserved the government of it for himself, and the Protestants, although invited to attend, were thus expected to acknowledge his authority. They unanimously declared, therefore, that they would not be bound by its decrees. Even Luther, who had ardently hoped to see all Christians again united under a purer organization of the church, saw that a reconciliation was impossible.

The publication of the complete translation of the Bible in 1534 was not the end of Luther's labors. His leadership in the great work of reformation was acknowledged by all, and he was consulted by princes and clergymen, by scholars and jurists, even by the common people. He never relaxed in his efforts to preserve peace, not only among the Protestant princes, who could not yet overcome their old habit of asserting an independent authority, but also between Protestants and Catholics. Yet he could hardly help feeling that with such a form of government, and such an emperor as Germany then possessed, peace was impossible; he only prayed that it might last while he lived.

Luther's powerful constitution gradually broke down under the weight of his labors and anxieties. He became subject to attacks of bodily suffering, followed by great depression of mind. Nevertheless, the consciousness of having in a great measure performed the work which he had been called upon to do kept up his faith, and he was accustomed to declare that he had been made "a chosen weapon of God, known in heaven and hell, as well as upon earth." In January, 1546, he was summoned to Eisleben, the place of his birth, by the counts of Mansfeld, who begged him to act as arbitrator between them in a question of inheritance. Although much exhausted by the fatigues of the winter journey, he settled the dispute, and preached four times to the people. His last letter to his wife, written on February 14, is full of courage, cheerfulness, and tenderness.

Two days afterward his strength began to fail. His friend, Dr. Jonas, was in Eisleben at the time, and Luther forced himself to sit at the table with him and with his own two sons; but it was noticed that he spoke only of the future life, and with an unusual earnestness and solemnity. The same evening it became evident to all that his end was rapidly approaching: he grew weaker from hour to hour, and occasionally repeated passages from the Bible in German and Latin. After midnight he seemed to revive a little: Dr. Jonas, the Countess of Mansfeld, the pastor of the church at Eisleben, and his sons stood near his bed. Then Jonas said: "Beloved Father, do you acknowledge Christ, the Son of God, our Redeemer?" Luther answered "Yes," in a strong and clear voice; then, folding his hands, he drew one deep sigh and died, between two and three o'clock on the morning of February 17.

After solemn services in the church at Eisleben the body was removed on its way to Wittenberg. In every village through which the procession passed the bells were tolled, and the people flocked together from all the surrounding country. The population of Halle, men and women, came out of the city with loud cries and lamentations, and the throng was so great that it was two hours before the coffin could be placed in the church. "Here," says an eye-witness of the scene, "we endeavored to raise the funeral psalm, "*De profundis*" ["Out of the depths have I cried unto thee"]; but so heavy was our grief that the words were rather wept than sung." On February 18, 1546, the remains of the great reformer were given to the earth at Wittenberg, with all the honors which the people, the authorities, and the university could render.

Chapter XXVI

GROWTH OF PROTESTANTISM. 1546-1600

LUTHER, throughout his life, had always been a respecter of established authority; he abhorred civil war, and wished that he might never see Germany torn by religious strifes. His wish was gratified, but only by a narrow margin. In the year following his death the long-feared wars broke out between the Catholics, under the leadership of Charles V., and the Lutherans, who were united in the Schmalkalden League. The period of prosperity for the Protestants had come to an end. Political events which had so long granted them a respite from an enforcement of the Edict of Worms by an imperial army no longer offered them a shelter. Charles V. had defeated the Turks on land and on sea, and along the northern shores of Africa, where they were established as pirates. He had made peace with his rival Francis I. of France; Spain was in complete subjection, and Italy under his influence. Now at last, therefore, in 1547, he thought he could carry out the wish of the Pope and put down the Lutheran heretics in Germany.

The Council of Trent, which had first met in 1545, and which was composed almost entirely of Spanish and Italian prelates, followed the instructions of the Pope and declared that the traditions of the Catholic Church were of equal authority with the Bible. This made a reconciliation with the Protestants impossible. In fact, if the spirit of the Protestant faith had not already entered into the lives of the mass of the people, the Reformation might have been lost through the hesitation of some princes and the treachery of others. While the emperor was at last rid of most of his enemies and political embarrassment, the Schmalkalden League was weakened by personal quarrels among its members; yet it was still able to raise an army of 40,000 men, which was placed under the command of Sebastian Schertlin. Charles V. at one moment had only a very small force with him at Ratisbon; the troops he had summoned from Flanders and Italy had not arrived; and an energetic offensive movement by the Protestants might have been successful, and so given the Protestants the advantage at the beginning of the war by capturing or badly defeating the emperor himself.

But the two chiefs of the Schmalkalden League, John Frederick of Saxony and Philip of Hesse, showed a timidity almost amounting to cowardice in this emergency. In spite of Schertlin's entreaties, they refused to allow him to move, fearing, as they alleged, to invade the neutrality of Bavaria, or to excite Ferdinand of Austria against them. For months they compelled their army to wait, while the emperor was constantly receiving reinforcements, among them 12,000 Italian troops furnished by the Pope. Then, when they were absolutely forced to act, a new and unexpected danger rendered them powerless. Maurice, Duke of Saxony, suddenly abjured the Protestant faith, declared for Charles V., and took possession of Electoral Saxony, which belonged to his cousin, John Frederick.[1] The latter hastened home with his own portion of the army, and defeated and expelled Maurice, it is true, but in doing so gave up the field to the emperor. Duke Ulric of Würtemberg first humbly submitted to the latter, then Ulm, Augsburg, Strassburg, and other cities: Schertlin was not left with troops enough to resist, and the imperial and Catholic power was restored throughout southern Germany without a struggle.

In the spring of 1547 Charles V. marched into northern Germany, surprised and defeated John Frederick of Saxony at Mühlberg on the Elbe, and took him prisoner. The elector was so enormously stout and heavy that he could only mount his horse by the use of a ladder; so the emperor's Spanish cavalry easily overtook him in his flight. Charles V. now showed himself in his true character: he appointed the fierce Duke of Alba president of a court which tried John Frederick and condemned him to death. The other German princes protested so earnestly against this sentence that it was not carried out, but John Frederick was compelled to give up to the traitor Maurice the title of elector and all his electoral territory except the small scattered districts west of the Saale—the territory embraced in the present duchies of Meiningen, Gotha, Weimar, and Altenburg. He steadfastly refused, however, to submit to the decrees of the Council of Trent, and remained firm in the Protestant faith during the five years of imprisonment which followed.

---

[1] In 1485 Saxony had been divided between the elder and younger line. Electoral Saxony, with its capital at Wittenberg, fell to the elder line, to which John Frederick belonged. Ducal Saxony, with its capital at Dresden, fell to the younger line, represented in 1547 by the ambitious and unscrupulous Maurice.

His wife, the Duchess Sibylla, heroically defended Wittenberg against the emperor, but when John Frederick had been despoiled of his territory she could no longer hold the city, which was surrendered. Charles V. was urged by Alba and others to burn Luther's body and scatter the ashes, as those of a heretic; but he answered, like a man: "I wage no war against the dead." Herein he showed the better side of his nature, although only for a moment. The fate of Philip of Hesse was even harder than that of the elector; left alone, he was unable to resist and was made to atone bitterly for his long attitude of passive opposition to the emperor's will. Philip, seeing his dangerous position and persuaded by his son-in-law, Maurice of Saxony, promised to beg the emperor's pardon on his knees, to destroy all his fortresses except Cassel, and to pay a fine of 150,000 gold florins, on condition that he should be allowed to retain his princely rights. These were Charles V.'s own conditions; but when Philip, kneeling before him, happened (or seemed) to smile while his application for pardon was being read, the emperor cried out: "Wait, I'll teach you to laugh!" Breaking his solemn word without scruple, he sent Philip instantly to prison, and the latter was kept for years in close confinement, both in Germany and in Flanders. A frustrated attempt at flight drew down upon him further severities; the man who had been the head of the league of princes, as well as the hope of the Protestant party, was actually threatened with torture in a Flemish dungeon.

Charles V. was now also master of northern Germany, except the city of Magdeburg, which was strongly fortified, and refused to surrender. He intrusted the siege of the place to Maurice of Saxony, and returned to Bavaria in order to be nearer Italy. He had at last become the arbitrary ruler of nearly all Germany: he had not only violated his word in dealing with the princes, but defied the diet in subjecting them by the aid of foreign soldiers. His court, his commanders, his prelates were Spaniards, who, as they passed through the German states, abused and insulted the people with perfect impunity. The princes were now reaping only what they themselves had sown; but the mass of the people, who had had no voice in the election—who saw their few rights despised and their faith threatened with suppression—suffered terribly during this time.

In May, 1548, the emperor proclaimed what was called the "Augsburg Interim," which allowed to the Protestants the communion in both forms and the marriage of priests, but insisted that all the other forms and ceremonies of the Catholic Church should be observed until the council should pronounce its final judgment. This latter body had removed from Trent to Bologna, in spite of the emperor's remonstrance, and it did not meet again at Trent until 1551, after the death of Pope Paul III. There was, in fact, almost as much confusion in the church as in political affairs. A number of intelligent, zealous prelates desired a correction of the former abuses, and they were undoubtedly supported by the emperor himself; but the Pope, with the French and Spanish cardinals and bishops, controlled a majority of the votes of the council, and thus postponed its action from year to year.

The acceptance of the "Interim" was resisted both by Catholics and Protestants. Charles V. used all his arts,—persuasion, threats, armed force,—and succeeded for a short time in compelling a sort of external observance of its provisions. His ambition now was to have his son Philip chosen by the diet as his successor, notwithstanding that Ferdinand of Austria had been elected king in 1530, and had governed during his brother's long absence from Germany. The Protestant electors, conquered as they were, and abject as many of them had seemed, were not ready to comply; Ferdinand's jealousy was aroused, and the question was in suspense when a sudden and startling event changed the whole face of affairs.

Maurice of Saxony had been besieging Magdeburg for a year, in the emperor's name. The city was well-provisioned, admirably defended, and the people answered every threat with defiance and ridicule. Maurice grew tired of his inglorious position, sensitive to the name of "Traitor" which was everywhere hurled against him, and indignant at the continued imprisonment of Philip of Hesse. He made a secret treaty with Henry II. of France, to whom he promised Lorraine, including the cities of Toul, Verdun, and Metz, in return for his assistance; and then, in the spring of 1552, before his plans could be divined, marched with all speed against the emperor, who was holding his court in Innsbruck. The latter attempted to escape to Flanders, but Maurice had already seized the mountain passes. Nothing but speedy flight across the Alps, in night and storm, attended only by a few followers, saved Charles V. from capture. The Council of Trent broke up and fled in terror; John Frederick of Saxony and Philip of Hesse were freed from their long confinement, and the Protestant cause gained at one blow all the ground it had lost.

Maurice returned to Passau, on the Danube, where Ferdinand of Austria united with him in calling a diet of the German electors. The latter, bishops as well as princes, admitted that the Protestants could be no longer suppressed by force, and agreed to establish a religious peace, independent of any action of the Pope and council. The "Treaty of Passau," as it was called, allowed freedom of worship to all who accepted the Augsburg Confession, and postponed other questions to the decision of a German diet. The emperor at first refused to subscribe to the treaty, but when Maurice began to renew hostilities there was no other course left. The French in Lorraine and the Turks in Hungary were making rapid advances, and it was no time to assert his lost despotism over the empire.

With the troops which the princes now agreed to furnish, the emperor marched into France, and in October, 1552, arrived before Metz, which he besieged until the following January. Then, with his army greatly reduced by sickness and hardship, he raised the siege and marched away, to continue the war in other quarters. But it was four years before the quarrel with France came to an end, and during this time the Protestant states of Germany had nothing to fear from the imperial power. The Margrave Albert of Brandenburg, who was on the emperor's side, attempted to carry fire and sword through their territories, in order to pay himself for his military services. After wasting, plundering, and committing shocking barbarities in Saxony and Franconia he was defeated by Maurice in July, 1553. The latter fell in the moment of victory, giving his life in expiation of his former apostasy. The greater part of Saxony, nevertheless, has remained in the hands of his descendants to this day, while the descendants of John Frederick, although representing the elder line, possess only the little principalities of Thuringia, to each of which the Saxon name is prefixed, as in Saxe-Weimar and Saxe-Gotha.

Charles V., who saw his ambitious plans for the government of the world failing everywhere, and whose bodily strength was failing also, left Germany in disgust, commissioning his brother Fer dinand to call a diet, in accordance with the stipulations of the Treaty of Passau. The diet met at Augsburg, and, in spite of the violent opposition of the Papal legate, on September 25, 1555, concluded the Treaty of Religious Peace which finally gave rest to Germany. The Protestant princes who followed the Augsburg Confession received religious freedom, perfect equality before the law, and the undisturbed possession of the church property which had fallen into their hands. In other respects their privileges were not equal. By a clause called the "Ecclesiastical Reservation," it was ordered that when a Catholic bishop or abbot became Protestant he should give up land and title in order that the church might lose none of its possessions. The rights and consciences of the people were so little considered that they were not allowed to change their faith unless the ruling prince changed his. The doctrine was asserted that religion was an affair of the government—that is, that he to whom belonged the rule possessed the right to choose the people's faith. In accordance with this law the population of the Palatinate of the Rhine was afterward compelled to be alternately Catholic and Protestant, four times in succession! But it was provided also that any subject, who did not agree with the faith of his ruling prince and was unwilling to conform to the state church, had the right to emigrate with all his belongings to a territory whose prince believed as he himself did.

The Treaty of Augsburg did not include the followers of Zwingli and Calvin, who were getting to be quite numerous in southern and western Germany; they were left without any recognized rights. This was one of the elements of weakness in this Religious Peace of Augsburg, for the Calvinists were bound to agitate and cause disturbance until they too were given the same legal recognition as the Lutheran adherents of the Confession of Augsburg. The Pope rejected and condemned this peace, but without the least effect upon the German Catholics, who were no less desirious of peace than the Protestants. Moreover, their hopes of a final triumph over the latter were greatly increased by the zeal and activity of the Jesuits, who had been accepted and commissioned by the Church of Rome fifteen years before, and who were rapidly increasing in numbers, and professed to have made the suppression of Protestant doctrines their chief task.

This treaty was the last political act of Charles V.'s reign. One month later, to a day, he formally conferred on his son, Philip

II., at Brussels, the government of the Netherlands, and on January 15, 1556, resigned to him the crowns of Spain and Naples. He then sailed for Spain, where he retired to the monastery of St. Just and lived for two years longer as an imperial monk. He was the first monarch of his time and he made Spain the leading nation of the world: his immense energy, his boundless ambition, and his cold, calculating brain reëstablished his power again and again, when it seemed on the point of giving way; but he died at last without having accomplished the two chief aims of his life—the reunion of all Christendom under the Pope and the union of Germany with the Spanish Empire. The German people, following the leaders who had risen out of their own midst—Luther, Melanchthon, Reuchlin, and Zwingli—defeated the first of his aims; the ambitious princes, who had found in Charles V. much more of a despot than they had bargained for, defeated the second of the emperor's wishes.

The German diet did not meet until March, 1558, when Ferdinand of Austria was elected and crowned emperor, at Frankfort. Although a Catholic, he had always endeavored to protect the Protestants from the extreme measures which Charles V. attempted to enforce, and he faithfully observed the Treaty of Augsburg. He even allowed the Protestant form of the sacrament and the marriage of priests in Austria, which brought upon him the condemnation of the Pope. Immediately after the diet a meeting of Protestant princes was held at Frankfort, for the purpose of settling certain differences of opinion which were not only disturbing the Lutherans, but also tending to prevent any unity of action between them and the Swiss Protestants. Melanchthon did his utmost to restore harmony, but without success. He died in 1560, at the age of sixty-four, and Calvin four years afterward, the last of the leaders of the Reformation.

On December 4, 1563, the Council of Trent finally adjourned, eighteen years after it first came together. The attempts of a portion of the prelates composing it to reform and purify the Catholic Church had been almost wholly thwarted by the influence of the Popes. It adopted a series of articles, to each one of which was attached an anathema, cursing all who refused to accept it. They contained the doctrines of priestly celibacy, purgatory, masses for the dead, veneration of saints, pictures, and relics, absolution, fasts, and censorship of books—thus making an eternal chasm between Catholicism and Protestantism. At the close of the council the Cardinal of Lorraine cried out: "Accursed be all heretics!" and all present answered: "Accursed! accursed!" until the building rang. In Italy, Spain, and Poland the articles were accepted at once, but the Catholics in France, Germany, and Hungary were dissatisfied with many of the declarations, and the church in those countries was compelled to overlook a great deal of quiet disobedience.

At this time, although the Catholics had a majority in the diet (since there were nearly one hundred priestly members), the great majority of the German people had become Protestants. In all northern Germany, except Westphalia, very few Catholic congregations were left; even the archbishops of Bremen and Magdeburg, and the bishops of Lübeck, Verden, and Halberstadt, had joined the Reformation. In the priestly territories of Cologne, Treves, Mayence, Worms, and Strasburg the population was divided; the Palatinate of the Rhine, Baden, and Würtemberg were almost entirely Protestant, and even in Upper Austria and Styria the Catholics were in a minority. Bavaria was the mainstay of Rome: her princes, of the House of Wittelsbach, were the most zealous and obedient champions of the Pope in all Germany. The Catholic Church, however, had not given up the struggle: she was quietly and shrewdly preparing for one more desperate effort to recover her lost ground, and the Protestants, instead of preceiving the danger and uniting themselves more closely, were quarreling among themselves concerning theological questions upon which they have not yet agreed.

There could be no better evidence that the reign of Charles V. had weakened instead of strengthening the German empire than the losses and humiliations which immediately followed. Ferdinand I. gave up half of Hungary to Sultan Suleiman, and purchased the right to rule the other half by an annual payment of 300,000 ducats. About the same time the emperor's lack of power and the selfishness of the Hanseatic cities occasioned a much more important loss. The provinces on the eastern shore of the Baltic, which had been governed by the Order of the Brothers of the Sword after the downfall of the German Order, were overrun and terribly devastated by the Czar Ivan of Russia. The Grand Master of the Order appealed to Lübeck and Hamburg for aid, which was refused; then, in 1559, he called upon the diet of the

German Empire and received vague promises of assistance, which had no practical value. Then, driven to desperation, he turned to Poland, Sweden, and Denmark, all of which countries took instant advantage of his necessities. The Baltic provinces were defended against Russia—and lost to Germany. The Swedes and Danes took Esthonia, the Poles took Livonia, and only the little province of Courland remained as an independent state. the Grand Master becoming its first duke.

Ferdinand I. died in 1564, and was immediately succeeded by his eldest son, Maximilian II. The latter was in the prime of life, already popular for his goodness of heart, his engaging manners, and his moderation and justice. The Protestants cherished great hopes, at first, that he would openly join them; but, although he so favored and protected them in Austria that Vienna almost became a Protestant city, he refused to leave the Catholic Church, and even sent his son Rudolf to be educated in Spain, under the bitter and bigoted influence of Philip II. His daughter was married to Charles IX. of France, and when he heard of the Massacre of St. Bartholomew (in August, 1572) he cried out: "Would to God that my son-in-law had asked counsel of me! I would so faithfully have persuaded him as a father, that he certainly would never have done this thing." He also endeavored, but in vain, to soften the persecutions of Philip II.'s reign in the Netherlands.

Maximilian II.'s reign of twelve years was quiet and uneventful. Only one disturbance of the internal peace occurred, and it is worthy of note as the last feud after so many centuries of free fighting between the princes. An independent knight, William von Grumbach, having been dispossessed of his lands by the Bishop of Würzburg, waylaid the latter, who was slain in the fight which occurred. Grumbach fled to France, but soon allied himself with several dissatisfied Franconian knights, and finally persuaded John Frederick of Saxony to espouse his cause. The latter was outlawed by the emperor, yet he obstinately determined to resist, in the hope of wresting the Electorate of Saxony from the younger line and restoring it to his own family. He was besieged by the imperial army in Gotha, in 1567, and taken prisoner. Grumbach was tortured and executed, and John Frederick kept in close confinement until his death, twenty-eight years afterward. His sons, however, were allowed to succeed him. The severity with which this breach of the internal peace was punished put an end forever to petty wars in Germany: the measures adopted by the diet of 1495, under Maxmilian I., were at last recognized as binding laws.

The revolt of the Netherlands, which broke out immediately after Maxmilian II.'s accession to the throne, had little, if any, political relation to Germany. Under Charles V. the Netherlands had been quite separated from any connection with the German Empire, and he was free to introduce the Inquisition there and persecute the Protestants with all the severity demanded by Rome. Philip II. followed the same policy: the torture, fire, and sword were employed against the people until they arose against the intolerable Spanish rule, and entered upon that famous eighty years' struggle which ended in establishing the independence of Holland.

At a diet in 1576, where he had declared his policy in religious matters to be simply the enforcement of the Treaty of Augsburg, Maximilian II. suddenly fell dead. According to the custom which they had now followed for nearly a century and a half, of keeping the imperial dignity in the House of Hapsburg, the electors immediately chose his son, Rudolf II., an avowed enemy of the Protestants. Unlike his father, his nature was cold, stern, and despotic: he was gloomy, unsocial, and superstitious, and the circumstance that he aided and encouraged the great astronomers, Kepler and Tycho de Brahe, was probably owing to his love for astrology and alchemy. He was subject to sudden and violent attacks of passion, which were followed by periods of complete indifference to his duties. Like Frederick III., a hundred years before, he concerned himself with the affairs of Austria, his direct inheritance, rather than with those of the empire; and thus, although internal wars had been suppressed, he encouraged the dissensions in religion and politics which were gradually bringing on a more dreadful war than Germany had ever known before.

One of Rudolf II.'s first measures was to take from the Austrian Protestants the right of worship which his father had allowed them. He closed their churches, removed them from all the offices they held, and, justifying himself by the Treaty of Augsburg that whoever ruled the people should choose their religious faith, did his best to make Austria wholly Catholic. Many Catholic princes and priests, emboldened by his example, declared that the articles promulgated by the Council of Trent abolished the Treaty of Augsburg and gave them the right to put down heresy by force. When the Archbishop of Cologne became a Protestant and married, although the larger part of the population in the archbishopric had been converted to Protestantism, the German Catholics, rightly declared that this was exactly the kind of case which the Ecclesiastical Reservation of 1555 was intended to cover; they naturally said that the archbishopric should be "reserved" for a good Catholic. When the Protestant population made some objection these German Catholics called upon Alexander of Parma, who came from the Netherlands with a Spanish army, took possession of the territory, and installed a new Catholic archbishop, without resistance on the part of the Protestant majority of Germany. Thus the hate and bitterness on both sides increased from year to year, without culminating in open hostilities.

The history of Germany, from the accession of Rudolf II. to the end of the century, is marked by no political event of importance. Spain was fully occupied in her hopeless attempt to subdue the Netherlands: in France Henry of Navarre was fighting the Duke of Guise; Hungary and Austria were left to check the advance of the Turkish invasion, and nearly all Germany enjoyed peace for upward of fifty years. During this time population and wealth greatly increased, and life in the cities and at courts became luxurious and more or less immoral. The arts and sciences began to flourish, the people grew in knowledge, yet the spirit out of which the Reformation sprang seemed almost dead. The elements of good and evil were strangely mixed together—intelligence and superstition, piety and bigotry, civilization and barbarism, were found side by side. As formerly in her history, it appeared nearly impossible for Germany to grow by a gradual and healthful development; her condition must be bad enough to bring on a violent convulsion before it could be improved.

Such was the state of affairs at the end of the sixteenth century. In spite of the material prosperity of the country, there was a general feeling among the people that evil days were coming; but the most desponding prophet could hardly have predicted worse misfortunes than they were called upon to suffer during the next fifty years.

Chapter XXVII

BEGINNING OF THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR

1600-1634

THE beginning of the seventeenth century found the Protestants in Germany still divided. The followers of Zwingli, it is true, had accepted the Augsburg Confession as the shortest means of acquiring freedom of worship; but the Calvinists, who were now rapidly increasing, were not willing to take this step, nor were the Lutherans any more tolerant toward them than at the beginning. The Dutch, in winning their independence from Spain, gave the Calvinistic, or, as it was called in Germany, the Reformed Church, a new political importance; and it was not long before the Palatinate of the Rhine, Baden, Hesse-Cassel, and Anhalt also joined it. The Protestants were split into two strong and unfriendly sects, at the very time when the Catholics, under the teaching of the Jesuits, were uniting against them.

Duke Ferdinand of Styria, a young cousin of Rudolf II., began the struggle. Styria was at that time Protestant, and refused to change its faith at the command of the duke, whereupon he visited every part of the land with an armed force, closed the churches, burned the hymn-books and Bibles, and banished everyone who was not willing to become a Catholic on the spot. He openly declared that it was better to rule over a desert than a land of heretics. Duke Maximilian of Bavaria followed his example. In 1607 he seized the free Protestant city of Donauwörth, on the Danube, on account of some quarrel between its inhabitants and a monastery, and held it, in violation of all laws of the empire. A protest made to the diet on account of this act was of no avail, since a majority of the members were Catholics. The Protestants of southern Germany formed a "Union" for mutual protection, in May, 1608, with Frederick IV. of the Palatinate at their head; but, as they were mostly of the Reformed Church, they received little sympathy or support from the Protestant states in the north.

Maximilian of Bavaria then established a "Catholic League," in opposition, relying on the assistance of Spain, while the "Protestant Union" relied on that of Henry IV. of France. Both sides began to arm, and they would soon have proceeded to open hostilities, when a dispute of much greater importance diverted their attention to the north of Germany. This was the so-called "Succession of Cleves." Duke John William of Cleves, who governed the former separate dukedoms of Jülich, Cleves, and Berg, and the countships of Ravensberg and Mark, embracing a large extent of territory on both sides of the Lower Rhine, died in 1609 without leaving a direct heir. He had been a Catholic, but his people were Protestants. John Sigismund, Elector of Brandenburg, and Wolfgang William of Neuburg, both relatives on the female side, claimed the splendid inheritance; and when it became evident that the Catholic interest meant to secure it, they quickly united their forces and took possession. The emperor then sent the Archduke Leopold of Hapsburg to hold the disputed territories in the name of the emperor as feudal overlord of all Germany until the succession question could be satisfactorily settled before the courts. Thereupon the Protestant Union made an instant alliance with Henry IV. of France, who was engaged in organizing an army for its aid, when he fell by the dagger of the assassin, Ravaillac, in 1610. This dissolved the alliance, and the "Union" and "League," finding themselves agreed in opposing the creation of another Austrian state on the Lower Rhine, concluded peace before any serious fighting had taken place between them.

The two claimants to the succession adopted a similar policy. Wolfgang William became a Catholic, married the sister of Maximilian of Bavaria, and so brought the "League" to support him, and the Elector John Sigismund became a Calvinist (which almost excited a rebellion among the Brandenburg Lutherans), in order to get the support of the "Union." The former was assisted by Spanish troops from Flanders, the latter by Dutch troops from Holland, and the war was carried on until 1614, when it was settled by a division which gave John Sigismund the lion's share—Cleves, Mark, and Ravensberg.

Meanwhile, the Emperor Rudolf was becoming so old, so whimsical, and so useless that in 1606 the princes of the House of Hapsburg held a meeting, declared him incapable of governing, "on account of occasional imbecilities of mind," and appointed his brother Matthias regent for Austria, Hungary, and Moravia. The emperor refused to yield, but with the help of the nobility, who were mostly Protestants, Matthias maintained his claim. Matthias was obliged, in return, to grant religious freedom, which so encouraged the oppressed Protestants in Bohemia that they demanded similar rights from the emperor. In his helpless situation Rudolf gave way to their demand and issued a royal charter (*Majestätsbrief*) by which freedom of conscience was secured to almost all Protestants and freedom of worship granted on all crown lands; but on private estates and in the towns the consent of the landowner and the town authorities was necessary to the erection of any church or the establishment of any religious worship. An arrangement so one-sided as this, by which the king was obliged to grant freedom of worship while his subjects were not, was thoroughly unpractical. Difficulties at once broke out about its interpretation. Rudolf soon became alarmed at the increase of the heretics, and tried to take back his concession. The Bohemians then called Matthias to their assistance, and in 1611 Rudolf lost his remaining kingdom and his favorite residence of Prague. As he looked upon the city for the last time he cried out: "May the vengeance of God overtake thee, and my curse light on thee and all Bohemia!" In less than a year, January 20, 1612, he died.

Matthias was elected Emperor of Germany as a matter of course. The House of Hapsburg was now the strongest German power which represented the Church of Rome, and the Catholic majority in the diet secured to it the imperial dignity then and thenceforward. The Protestants, however, voted also for Matthias, for the reason that he had already shown a tolerant policy toward their brethren in Austria, Hungary, and Bohemia. His first measures, as emperor, justified this view of his character. He held a diet at Ratisbon for the purpose of settling the existing differences between the two, but nothing was accomplished. The Protestants, finding that they would be outvoted, withdrew in a body and thus broke up the diet. Matthias next endeavored to dissolve both the "Union" and the "League," in which he was only partially successful. At the same time his rule in Hungary was menaced by a revolt of the Transylvanian chief, Bethlen Gabor, who was assisted by the Turks. He grew weary of his task, and was easily persuaded by the other princes of his house to adopt his nephew, Duke Ferdinand of Styria, as his successor, in the year 1617, having no children of his own.

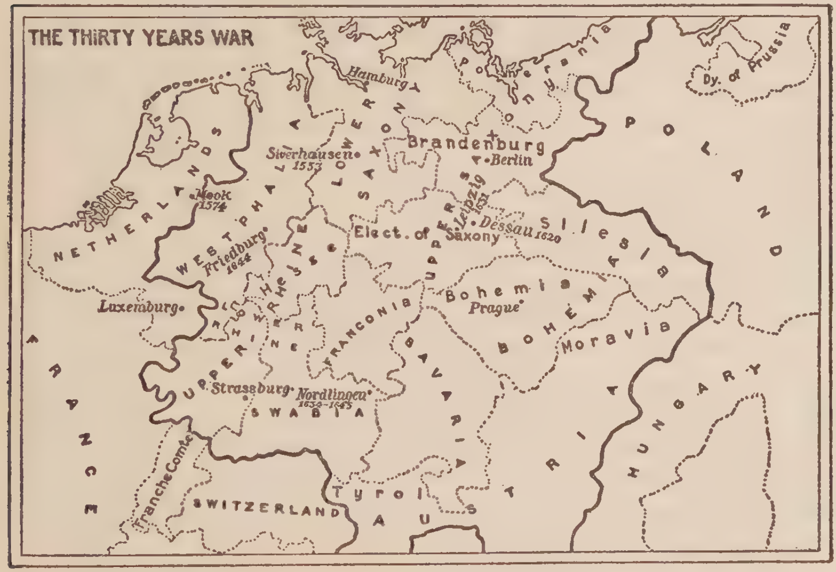
Ferdinand, who had been carefully educated by the Jesuits for the part which he was afterward to play, and whose violent suppression of the Protestant faith in Styria made him acceptable to all the German Catholics, was a man of great energy and force of character. He was stern, bigoted, cruel, yet shrewd, cunning, and apparently conciliatory when he found it necessary to be so, resembling in both respects his predecessor, Charles V. of Spain. In return for being chosen by the Bohemians to succeed Matthias as king, he confirmed them in the religious freedom which they had extorted from Rudolf II., and then joined the emperor in an expedition to Hungary, leaving Bohemia to be governed in the interim by a council of ten, seven Catholics and three Protestants.

The first thing that happened was the destruction of two or three Protestant churches by Catholic bishops. The Bohemian Protestants appealed immediately to the Emperor Matthias and to their royal charter; they received no satisfaction, but only threats. Thereupon they rose in Prague, stormed the council hall, seized two of the councilors and their secretary and hurled them out of the windows. Although the three men fell a distance of some seventy feet, not one was very seriously injured; they all easily made their escape. It seemed at the time as though a miracle had happened; but it appears that they fell on a soft dungheap. This event happened on May 23, 1618, and after such long chronicles of violence and slaughter the deed seemed of slight importance. In reality, it was one of the most important and irrevocable acts in German history; it was the signal for the beginning of the terrible Thirty Years' War.

Although the Protestants had only three councilors out of ten, they were largely in the majority in Bohemia. They knew what retaliation the outbreak in Prague would bring upon them, and anticipated it by making the revolution general. They chose Count Thurn as their leader, overturned the imperial government, banished the Jesuits from the country, and entered into relations with the Protestant nobles of Austria and the insurgent chief Bethlen Gabor in Hungary. The Emperor Matthias was willing to compromise the difficulty, but Ferdinand, stimulated by the Jesuits, declared for war. He sent two small armies into Bohemia, with a proclamation calling upon the people to submit. The Protestants of the north were at last aroused from their lethargy. Count Mansfeld marched with a force of 4000 men to aid the

Bohemians, and 3000 more came from Silesia; the imperial army was defeated and driven back to the Danube. At this juncture the Emperor Matthias died, on May 20, 1619.

Ferdinand lost not a day in taking the power into his own hands. But Austria threatened revolution, Hungary had made common cause with Bohemia, Count Thurn was marching on Vienna, and he was without an army to support his claims. Count Thurn, however, instead of attacking Vienna, encamped outside the walls and began to negotiate. Ferdinand, hard pressed by the demands of the Austrian Protestants, was on the very point of yielding—in fact, a member of a deputation of noblemen had seized him by the coat—when trumpets were heard, and a body of 500 cavalry, which had reached the city without being intercepted by the besiegers, appeared before the palace. This enabled him to defend the city, until the defeat of Count Mansfeld by another portion of his army which had entered Bohemia compelled Count Thurn to raise the siege. Then Ferdinand hastened to Frankfort to look after his election as emperor by the diet, which met on August 28, 1619.



It seems surprising that now, knowing his character and designs, the three electors who were Protestants should have voted for him. It has been charged, but without any clear evidence, that they were bribed; it is possible that Ferdinand misled them by promises of peace and justice; but it is also very likely that they imagined their own sovereignty depended on sustaining every tradition of the empire. The people, of course, had not yet acquired any rights which a prince felt himself called upon to respect.

Ferdinand was elected and properly crowned in the cathedral at Frankfort as Ferdinand II. The Bohemians, who were entitled to one of the seven electoral votes in the diet, claimed that the election was not binding upon them, and chose Frederick V. of the Palatinate as their king, in the hope that the Protestant " Union " would rally to their support. It was a fatal choice and a false hope. When Maximilian of Bavaria, at the head of the Catholic " League," took the field for the emperor, the " Union " weakly withdrew. Frederick V. went to Bohemia, was crowned, and idled his time away in fantastic diversions for one winter, while Ferdinand was calling Spain to attack the Palatinate of the Rhine, and borrowing Cossacks from Poland to put down his Protestant subjects in Austria. The emperor assured the Protestant princes that the war should be confined to Bohemia, and one of them, the Elector John George of Saxony, a Lutheran, openly went over to his side in order to defeat Frederick V., a Calvinist. The Bohemians fell back to the walls of Prague before the armies of the emperor and Bavaria, and there, on the White Mountain, a battle of an hour's duration, in November, 1620, decided the fate of the country. The turbulent Bohemian nobles were scattered in all directions; Frederick V. left Prague never to return; and Spanish, Italian, and Hungarian troops occupied the country.

Ferdinand II. acted as might have been expected from his despotic and bigoted nature. The 8000 Cossacks which he had borrowed from his brother-in-law, King Sigismund of Poland, had already closed all Protestant churches and suppressed freedom of worship in Austria; he now applied the same measures to Bohemia, but in a more violent and bloody form. Twenty-seven of the chief Protestant nobles were beheaded at Prague in one day; thousands of families were stripped of all their property and banished; the Protestant churches were given to the Catholics, the Jesuits took possession of the university and the schools, until finally, as a historian says, " the quiet of a sepulcher settled over Bohemia." The Protestant faith was practically obliterated from all the Austrian realm with the exception of a few scattered congregations in Hungary and Transylvania. Thus was the will of one man allowed to destroy the work of a hundred years, to crush both the faith and freedom of a prosperous people, and to plunder them of their best earnings and make them ignorant slaves for two centuries more. The property which was seized by Ferdinand II. in Bohemia alone was estimated at forty millions of florins! And the strength of Germany, which was Protestant, looked on and saw all this happen! Only the common people of Austria arose against the tyrant, and gallantly struggled for months, at first under the command of a farmer named Stephen Fadinger, and, when he was slain in the moment of victory, under an unknown young hero, who had no other name than "the Student." The latter defeated the Bavarian army, resisted the famous Austrian general, Pappenheim, in many battles, and at last fell, after most of his followers had fallen, without leaving his name to history.

The fate of Austria from that day to this was now sealed. Both parties—the Catholics, headed by Ferdinand II., and the Protestants, without any head—next turned to the Palatinate of the Rhine, where a Spanish army, sent from Flanders, was wasting and plundering in the name of the emperor. Count Ernest of Mansfeld and Prince Christian of Brunswick, who had supported Frederick V. in Bohemia, endeavored to save at least the Palatinate for him. They were dashing and eccentric young generals, whose personal reputation attracted all sorts of wild and lawless characters to take service under them. Mansfeld, who had been originally a Catholic, was partly supported by contributions from England and Holland, but he also took what he could get from the country through which he marched. Christian of Brunswick was a fantastic prince who tried to imitate the knights of the Middle Ages. He was a great admirer of the Countess Elizabeth of the Palatinate (sister of Charles I. of England), and always wore her glove on his helmet. In order to obtain money for his troops he plundered the bishoprics in Westphalia and forced the cities and villages to pay him heavy contributions. When he entered the cathedral at Paderborn and saw the silver statues of the Apostles around the altar, he cried out: "What are you doing here? You were ordered to go forth into the world, but wait a bit—I'll send you!" So he had them melted and coined into dollars, upon which the words were stamped: "Friend of God, foe of the priests!" He afterward gave himself that name; but the soldiers generally called him "Mad Christian."

Against these two Ferdinand II. sent Maximilian of Bavaria and General Tilly. The latter, already famous both for his military talent and his inhumanity, had been educated by the Jesuits for a priest, but was now in the Bavarian service. He was a small, lean man, with a face almost comical in its ugliness. His nose was like a parrot's beak, his forehead seamed with deep wrinkles, his eyes sunk in their sockets, and his cheek-bones projecting. He usually wore a dress of green satin, with a cocked hat and long red feather, and rode a small, mean-looking gray horse.

Early in 1622 the imperial army under Tilly was defeated, or at least checked, by the united forces of Mansfeld and Prince Christian. But in May of the same year the forces of the latter, with those of George Frederick of Baden, were almost cut to pieces by Tilly, at Wimpfen. They retreated into Alsace, where they burned and plundered at will, while Tilly pursued the same course on the eastern side of the Rhine. He took and destroyed the cities of Mannheim and Heidelberg, closed the Protestant churches, banished the clergymen and teachers, and supplied their places with Jesuits. The invaluable library of Heidelberg was sent to Pope Gregory XV. at Rome, and remained there until 1815, when a part of it came back to the university by way of Paris.

Frederick V., who had fled from the country, entered into negotiations with the emperor in the hope of retaining the Palatinate. He dissolved his connection with Mansfeld and Prince Christian, who thereupon offered their services to the emperor on condition that he would pay their soldiers! Receiving no answer, they marched through Lorraine and Flanders, laying waste the country as they went, and finally took refuge in Holland. Frederick V.'s humiliation was of no avail; none of the Protestant princes supported his claim. The emperor gave his land, with the electoral dignity, to Maximilian of Bavaria, and this act, although a direct violation of the laws which the German princes held as sacred, was acquiesced in by them at a diet held at Ratisbon in 1623. John George of Saxony, who saw clearly that it was a fatal blow aimed both at the Protestants and at the rights of the reigning princes, was persuaded to be silent by the promise of having Lusatia added to Saxony.

By this time Germany was in a worse condition than she had known for centuries. The power of the Jesuits, represented by Ferdinand II., his councilors and generals, was supreme almost everywhere; the Protestant princes vied with each other in meanness, selfishness, and cowardice; the people were slaughtered, robbed, driven hither and thither by both parties: there seemed to be neither faith nor justice left in the land. The other Protestant nations—England, Holland, Denmark, and Sweden—looked on with dismay, and even Cardinal Richelieu, who was then practically the ruler of France, was willing to see Ferdinand II.'s power crippled, though the Protestants should gain thereby. England and Holland assisted Mansfeld and Prince Christian with money, and the latter organized new armies, with which they ravaged Friesland and Westphalia. Prince Christian was on his way to Bohemia in order to unite with the Hungarian chief, Bethlen Gabor, when, on August 6, 1623, he met Tilly at a place called Stadtlohn, near Münster, and after a murderous battle which lasted three days was utterly defeated. About the same time Mansfeld, needing further support, went to England, where he was received with great honor.

Ferdinand II. had in the meantime concluded a peace with Bethlen Gabor, and his authority was firmly established over Austria and Bohemia. Tilly with his Bavarians was victorious in Westphalia; all armed opposition to the emperor's rule was at an end, yet instead of declaring peace established and restoring the former order of the empire, his agents continued their work of suppressing religious freedom and civil rights in all the states which had been overrun by the Catholic armies. The whole empire was threatened with the fate of Austria. Then, at last, in 1625, Brunswick, Brandenburg, Mecklenburg, Hamburg, Lübeck, and Bremen formed a union for mutual defense, choosing as their leader King Christian IV. of Denmark, the same monarch who had broken down the power of the Hanseatic League in the Baltic and North seas. Although a Protestant, he was no friend to the north German states, but he energetically united with them in the hope of being able to enlarge his kingdom at their expense.

Christian IV. lost no time in making arrangements with England and Holland which enabled both Mansfeld and Prince Christion of Brunswick to raise new forces, with which they returned to Germany. Tilly, in order to intercept them, entered the territory of the states which had united, and thus gave Christian IV. a pretext for declaring war. The latter marched down from Denmark at once, but found no earnest union among the states, and only 7,000 men collected. He soon succeeded, however, in bringing together a force much larger than that commanded by Tilly, and was only hindered in his plan of immediate action by a fall from his horse, which crippled him for six weeks. The city of Hamelin was taken, and Tilly compelled to fall back behind the River Weser, but no other important movements took place during the year 1625.

Ferdinand II. was already growing jealous of the increasing power of Bavaria, and determined that the Catholic and imperial cause should not be intrusted to Tilly alone. But he had little money, his own military force had been wasted by the wars in Bohemia, Austria, and Hungary, and there was no other commander of sufficient renown to attract men to his standard. Yet it was necessary that Tilly should be reinforced as soon as possible, or his scheme of crushing the whole of Germany, and laying it, as a fettered slave, at the feet of the Catholic Church, might fail, and at the very moment when success seemed sure.

In this emergency a new man presented himself. Albert of Waldstein, better known under his historical name of Wallenstein, was born at Prague in 1583. He was the son of a poor Protestant nobleman. As a youth he was violent and unruly, until a fall from the third story of a house effected a sudden change in his nature. He became brooding and taciturn, gave up his Protestant faith, and was educated by the Jesuits at Olmütz. He traveled in Spain, France, and the Netherlands, fought in Italy against Venice, and in Hungary against Bethlen Gabor and the Turks, and rose to the rank of colonel. He married an old and rich widow, and after her death increased his wealth by a second marriage, so that when the Protestants were expelled from Bohemia he was able to purchase some sixty of their confiscated estates at greatly depreciated prices. Adding these to that of Friedland, which he had received from the emperor in return for military services, he possessed a small principality, lived in great splendor, and paid and equipped his own troops. He was first made Count, and then Duke, of Friedland, with the authority of an independent prince of the empire.

Wallenstein was superstitious, and his studies in astrology gave him the belief that a much higher destiny awaited him. Here was the opportunity. He offered to raise and command a second army in the emperor's service. Ferdinand II. accepted the offer with joy, and sent word to Wallenstein that he should immediately proceed to enlist 20,000 men. "My army," the latter answered, "must live by what it can take: 20,000 men are not enough. I must have 50,000, and then I can demand what I want!"

Wallenstein was tall and meager in person. His forehead was high but narrow, his hair black and cut very short, his eyes small, dark, and fiery, and his complexion yellow. His voice was harsh and disagreeable, he never smiled, and spoke only when it was necessary. He usually dressed in scarlet, with a leather jerkin, and wore a long red feather on his hat. There was something cold, mistrustful, and mysterious in his appearance, yet he possessed unbounded power over his soldiers, whom he governed with severity and rewarded splendidly. There are few more interesting personages in German history.

Before the end of the year 1625, and within three months after Ferdinand II. had commissioned Wallenstein to raise an army, the new commander marched into Saxony at the head of 30,000 men. No important operations were undertaken during the winter. Christian IV. and Mansfeld had their separate quarters on the east side of the Elbe, Tilly and Wallenstein on the west side, and the four armies devoured the substance of the lands where they were encamped. In April, 1626, Mansfeld marched against Wallenstein, to prevent him from uniting with Tilly. The two armies met at the bridge of the Elbe, at Dessau, and fought desperately. Mansfeld was defeated, driven into Brandenburg, and then took his way through Silesia toward Hungary, with the intention of forming an alliance with Bethlen Gabor. Wallenstein followed and compelled Gabor to make peace with the emperor. Mansfeld disbanded his troops and set out for Venice, where he meant to embark for England. But he was already worn out by the hardships of his campaigns, and died on the way, in Dalmatia, in November, 1626, forty-five years of age. A few months afterward Prince Christian of Brunswick also died, and the Protestant cause was left without any native German leader.

During the same year the cause received a second and severer blow. On August 26 Christian IV. and Tilly fought a bloody and decisive battle at Lutter, a little town on the northern edge of the Harz Mountains. Christian's army was cut to pieces, and he himself barely escaped with his life. There seemed now to be no further hope for the Protestants. Christian IV. retreated to Holstein, the Elector of Brandenburg gave up his connection with the Union of the Saxon states, the dukes of Mecklenburg were powerless, and Maurice of Hesse was compelled by the emperor to abdicate. New measures in Bohemia and Austria foreshadowed the probable fate of Germany: the remaining Protestants in those two countries, including a large majority of the Austrian nobles, were made Catholics by force.

In the summer of 1627 Wallenstein again marched northward with an army reorganized and recruited to 40,000 men. John George of Saxony, who tried to maintain a selfish and cowardly neutrality, now saw his land overrun, and himself at the mercy of the conqueror. Brandenburg was subjected to the same fate, the two Mecklenburg duchies were seized as the booty of the empire, and Wallenstein, marching on without opposition, plundered and wasted Holstein, Jutland, and Pomerania. In 1628 the emperor bestowed Mecklenburg upon him. He gave himself the title of "Admiral of the Baltic and the Ocean," and drew up a plan for creating a navy out of the vessels of the Hanseatic League, and conquering Holland for the House of Hapsburg. After this should have been accomplished, his next project was to form an alliance with Poland against Denmark and Sweden, the only remaining Protestant powers.

While the rich and powerful cities of Hamburg and Lübeck surrendered at his approach, the little Hanseatic town of Stralsund closed its gates against him. The citizens took a solemn oath to defend their religious faith and their political independence to the last drop of their blood. Wallenstein exclaimed: "And if Stralsund were bound to heaven with chains, I would tear it down!" and marched against the place. At the first assault he lost 1000 men; at the second, 2000; and then the citizens, in turn, made sallies, and inflicted still heavier losses upon him. They were soon reinforced by 2000 Swedes, and then Wallenstein was forced to raise the siege, after having lost, altogether, 12,000 of his best troops. At this time the Danes appeared with a fleet of two hundred vessels, and took possession of the port of Wolgast, in Mecklenburg.

In spite of this temporary reverse, Ferdinand II. considered that his absolute power was established over all Germany. After consulting with the Catholic electors (one of whom, now, was Maximilian of Bavaria), he issued, on March 6, 1629, an "Edict of Restitution," ordering that all the former territory of the Catholic Church which had become Protestant should be restored to

CHRISTIAN OF BRUNSWICK SACKING A CLOISTER IN WESTPHALIA DURING THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR

Painting by G. Gaupp

—page 271

Catholic hands. This required that two archbishoprics, twelve bishoprics, and a great number of monasteries and churches which had ceased to exist nearly a century before, should be again established; and then, on the principle that the religion of the ruler should be that of the people, that the Protestant faith should be suppressed in all such territory. The armies were kept in the field to enforce this edict, which was instantly carried into effect in southern Germany, and in the most violent and barbarous manner. The estates of 6000 noblemen in Franconia, Würtemberg, and Baden were confiscated; even the property of reigning princes was seized; but, instead of passing into the hands of the church, much of it was bestowed upon the emperor's family and his followers. The archbishoprics of Bremen and Magdeburg were given to his son Leopold, a boy of fifteen.

Wallenstein, while equally despotic, was much more arrogant and reckless than Ferdinand II. He openly declared that reigning princes and a national diet were no longer necessary in Germany; the emperor must be an absolute ruler, like the kings of France and Spain. At the same time he was carrying out his own political plans without much reference to the imperial authority. Both Catholics and Protestants united in calling for a diet. Ferdinand II. at first refused, but there were such signs of hostility on the part of Holland, Denmark, Sweden, and even France, that he was forced to yield. The diet met on June 5, 1630, at Ratisbon, and Maximilian of Bavaria headed the universal demand for Wallenstein's removal. The Protestants gave testimony of the merciless system of plunder by which he had ruined their lands; the Catholics complained of the more than imperial splendors of his court, upon which he squandered uncounted millions of stolen money. He traveled with one hundred carriages and more than one thousand horses, kept fifteen cooks for his table, and was waited upon by sixteen pages of noble blood. Jealousy of this pomp and state, and fear of Wallenstein's ambitious designs, and not the latter's fiendish inhumanity, induced Ferdinand II. to submit to the entreaties of the diet and remove him.

The imperial messengers who were sent to his camp with the order of dismissal approached him in great dread and anxiety, and scarcely dared to mention their business. Wallenstein pointed to a sheet covered with astrological characters and quietly told them that he had known everything in advance; that the emperor had been misled by the Elector of Bavaria; but, nevertheless, the order would be obeyed. He entertained them at a magnificent banquet, loaded them with gifts, and then sent them away. With rage and hate in his heart, but with all the external show and splendor of an independent sovereign, he retired to Prague, well knowing that the day was not far off when his services would be again needed.

Tilly was appointed commander-in-chief of the imperial armies. At the very moment, however, when Wallenstein was dismissed and his forces divided among several inferior generals, the leader whom the German Protestants could not furnish came to them from abroad. On July 4, 1630, Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden, landed on the coast of Pomerania with an army of 16,000 men. As he stepped upon the shore he knelt in the sight of all the soldiers and prayed that God would befriend him. Some of his staff could not restrain their tears; whereupon he said to them: "Weep not, friends, but pray, for prayer is half the victory!"

Gustavus Adolphus, who had succeeded to the throne in 1611 at the age of seventeen, was already distinguished as a military commander. He had defeated the Russians in Livonia and banished them from the Baltic; he had fought for three years with King Sigismund of Poland, and taken from him the ports of Elbing, Pillau, and Memel, and he was now burning with zeal to defend the falling Protestant cause in Germany. Cardinal Richelieu, in France, helped him to the opportunity by persuading Sigismund to accept an armistice, and by furnishing Sweden with the means of carrying on a war against Ferdinand II. The latter had assisted Poland, so that a pretext was not wanting; but when Gustavus laid his plans before his council in Stockholm, a majority of the members advised him to wait for a new cause of offense. Nevertheless, he insisted on immediate action. The representatives of the four orders of the people were convoked in the senate house, where he appeared before them with his little daughter, Christina, in his arms, asked them to swear fealty to her, and then bade them a solemn farewell. All burst into tears when he said: "Perhaps forever," but nothing could shake his resolution to undertake the great work.

Gustavus Adolphus was at this time thirty-six years old. He was so tall and powerfully built that he almost seemed a giant; his face was remarkably frank and cheerful in expression, his hair light, his eyes large and gray, and his nose aquiline. Personally, he was a striking contrast to the little, haggard and wrinkled Tilly and the dark, silent, and gloomy Wallenstein. Ferdinand II. laughed when he heard of his landing, called him the "Snow King," and said that he would melt away after one winter; but the common people, who loved and trusted him as soon as they saw him, named him the "Lion of the North." He was no less a statesman than a soldier, and his accomplishments were unusual in a ruler of those days. He was a generous patron of the arts and sciences, spoke four languages with ease and elegance, was learned in theology, a ready orator and—best of all—he was honest, devout, and conscientious in all his ways. The best blood of the Goths, from whom he was descended, beat in his veins, and the Germans, therefore, could not look upon him as a foreigner; to them he was a countryman as well as a deliverer.

The Protestant princes, however, although in the utmost peril and humiliated to the dust, refused to unite with him. If their course had been cowardly and selfish before, it now became simply infamous. The Duke of Pomerania shut the gates of Stettin upon the Swedish army, until compelled by threats to open them; the electors of Brandenburg and Saxony held themselves aloof, and Gustavus found himself obliged to respect their neutrality, lest they should go over to the emperor's side! Out of all Protestant Germany there came to him a few petty princes whose lands had been seized by the Catholics, and who could only offer their swords. His own troops, however, had been seasoned in many battles; their discipline was perfect, and when the German people found that the slightest act of plunder or violence was severely punished, they were welcomed wherever they marched.

Moving slowly, and with as much wisdom as caution, Gustavus relieved Pomerania from the imperial troops by the end of the year. He then took Frankfort-on-the-Oder by storm, and forced the Elector of Brandenburg to give him the use of Spandau as a fortress until he should have relieved Magdeburg, the only German city which had forcibly resisted the "Edict of Restitution," and was now besieged by Tilly and Pappenheim. As the city was hard pressed, Gustavus demanded of John George, Elector of Saxony, permission to march through his territory. It was refused! Magdeburg was defended by 2300 soldiers and 5000 armed citizens against an army of 30,000 men for more than a month; then, on May 10, 1631, it was taken by storm and given up to the barbarous fury of Tilly and his troops. The city sank in blood and ashes: 30,000 of the inhabitants perished by the sword, or in the flames, or crushed under falling walls, or drowned in the waters of the Elbe. Only 4000, who had taken refuge in the cathedral, were spared. Tilly wrote to the emperor: "Since the fall of Troy and Jerusalem, such a victory has never been seen; and I am sincerely sorry that the ladies of your imperial family could not have been present as spectators!"

Gustavus Adolphus has been blamed, especially by the admirers and defenders of the Houses of Brandenburg and Saxony, for not having saved Magdeburg. This he might have done had he disregarded the neutrality asserted by John George; but he had been bitterly disappointed at his reception by the Protestant princes, he could not trust them, and was not strong enough to fight Tilly with possible enemies in his rear. In fact, George William of Brandenburg immediately ordered him to give up Spandau and leave his territory. Then Gustavus did what he should have done at first: he planted his cannon before Berlin and threatened to lay the city in ashes. This brought George William to his senses; he agreed that his fortresses should be used by the Swedes, and contributed thirty thousand dollars a month toward the expenses of the war. So many recruits flocked to the Swedish standard that both Mecklenburgs were soon cleared of the imperial troops, the banished dukes restored, and an attack by Tilly upon the fortified camp of Gustavus was repulsed with heavy losses.

Landgrave William of Hesse-Cassel was the first Protestant prince who voluntarily allied himself with the Swedish king. He was shortly followed by the unwilling but helpless John George of Saxony, whose territory was invaded and wasted by Tilly's army. Ferdinand II. had given this order, meaning that the elector should at least support his troops. Tilly took possession of Halle, Naumburg, and other cities, plundered and levied heavy contributions, and at last entered Leipzig, after bombarding it for four days. Then John George united his troops with those of Gustavus Adolphus, who now commanded an army of 35,000 men.

Tilly and Pappenheim had an equal force to oppose him. After a good deal of cautious maneuvering, the two armies stood face to face at Breitenfeld, a few miles north of Leipzig, on September 7, 1631. The Swedes were without armor, and Gustavus distributed musketeers among the cavalry and pikemen. Banér, one of his generals, commanded his right, and Marshal Horn his left, where the Saxons were stationed. The army of Tilly was drawn up in a long line, and the troops wore heavy cuirasses and helmets. Pappenheim commanded the left, opposite Gustavus, while Tilly undertook to engage the Saxons. The battle-cry of the Protestants was "God with us!"—that of the Catholics "Jesus Maria!" Gustavus, wearing a white hat and green feather, and mounted on a white horse, rode up and down the lines, encouraging his men. The Saxons gave way before Tilly, and began to fly; but the Swedes, after repelling seven charges of Pappenheim's cavalry, broke the enemy's right wing, captured the cannon, and turned them against Tilly. The imperial army, thrown into confusion, fled in disorder, pursued by the Swedes, who cut them down until night put an end to the slaughter. Tilly, severely wounded, narrowly escaped death, and reached Halle with only a few hundred men.

This splendid victory restored the hopes of the Protestants everywhere. Duke Bernard of Saxe-Weimar had joined Gustavus before the battle. In his zeal for the cause, his honesty and bravery, he resembled the king, whose chief reliance, as a military leader, he soon became. John George of Saxony consented, though with evident reluctance, to march into Bohemia, where the crushed Protestants were longing for help, while the Swedish army advanced through central Germany to the Rhine. Tilly gathered together the scattered imperial forces left in the north, followed, and vainly endeavored to check Gustavus. The latter took Würzburg, defeated 17,000 men under Charles of Lorraine, who had crossed the Rhine to oppose him, and entered Frankfort in triumph. Here he fixed his winter quarters, and allowed his faithful Swedish troops the rest which they so much needed.

Gustavus proclaimed everywhere religious freedom, not retaliation for the barbarities inflicted on the Protestants. He soon made himself respected by his enemies, and his influence spread so rapidly that the idea of becoming emperor of Germany was a natural consequence of his success. His wife, Queen Eleanor, having joined him, he held a splendid court at Frankfort, and required the German princes whom he had subjected to acknowledge themselves his dependents. The winter of 1631-1632 was given up to diplomacy rather than war. Richelieu began to be jealous of the increasing power of the Swedish king, and entered into secret negotiations with Maximilian of Bavaria. The latter also corresponded with Gustavus Adolphus, who by this time had secured the neutrality of the states along the Rhine, and the support of a large majority of the population of the Palatinate, Baden, and Würtemberg.

In the early spring of 1632, satisfied that no arrangement with Maximilian was possible, Gustavus reorganized his army and set out for Bavaria. The city of Nuremberg received him with the wildest rejoicing: then he advanced upon Donauwörth, drove out Maximilian's troops and restored Protestant worship in the churches. Tilly meanwhile had added Maximilian's army to his own, and taken up a strong position on the eastern bank of the River Lech, between Augsburg and the Danube. Gustavus marched against him, cannonaded his position for three days from the opposite bank, and had partly crossed under cover of the smoke before his plan was discovered. On April 15 Tilly was mortally wounded, and his army fled in the greatest confusion. He died a few days afterward, at Ingolstadt, seventy-three years old.

The city of Augsburg opened its gates to the conqueror and acknowledged his authority. Then, after attacking Ingolstadt without success, Gustavus marched upon Munich, which was unable to resist, but was spared, on condition of paying a heavy contribution. The Bavarians had buried a number of cannon under the floor of the arsenal, and news thereof came to the king's ears. "Let the dead arise!" he ordered; and 140 pieces were dug up, one of which contained 30,000 ducats. Maximilian, whose land was completely overrun by the Swedes, would gladly have made peace, but Gustavus plainly told him that he was not to be trusted. While the Protestant cause was so brilliantly victorious in the south, John George of Saxony, who had taken possession of Prague without the least trouble, remained inactive in Bohemia during the winter and spring, apparently as jealous of Gustavus as he was afraid of Ferdinand II.

The emperor had long before ceased to laugh at the "Snow King." He was in the greatest strait of his life. He knew that his trampled Austrians would rise at the approach of the Swedish army, and then the Catholic cause would be lost. Before this he had appealed to Wallenstein, who was holding a splendid court at Znaim, in Moravia; but the latter refused, knowing that he could exact better terms for his support by waiting a little longer. The danger, in fact, increased so rapidly that Ferdinand II. was finally compelled to subscribe to an agreement which practically made Wallenstein the lord and himself the subject. He gave the duchies of Mecklenburg to Wallenstein, and promised him one of the Hapsburg states in Austria; he gave him the entire disposal of all the territory he should conquer, and agreed to pay the expenses of his army. Moreover, all appointments were left to Wallenstein, and the emperor pledged himself that neither he nor his son should ever visit the generalissimo's camp.

Having thus become absolute master of his movements, Wallenstein offered a high rate of payment and boundless chances of plunder to all who might enlist under him, and in two or three months stood at the head of an army of 40,000 men, many of whom were demoralized Protestants. He took possession of Prague, which John George vacated at his approach, and then waited quietly until Maximilian should be forced by necessity to give him also the command of the Bavarian forces. This soon came to pass, and then Wallenstein, with 80,000 men, marched against Gustavus Adolphus, who fell back upon Nuremberg, which he surrounded with a fortified camp. Instead of attacking him, Wallenstein took possession of the height of Zirndorf, in the neighborhood of the city, and strongly entrenched himself. Here the two commanders lay for nine weeks, watching each other, until Gustavus, whose force amounted to about 35,000, grew impatient of the delay and troubled by the want of supplies.

He attacked Wallenstein's camp, but was repulsed with a loss of 2000 men; then, after waiting two weeks longer, he marched out of Nuremberg, with the intention of invading Bavaria. Maximilian followed him with the Bavarian troops, and Wallenstein, whose army had been greatly diminished by disease and desertion, moved into Franconia. Then, wheeling suddenly, he crossed the Thuringian Mountains into Saxony, burning and pillaging as he went, took Leipzig, and threatened Dresden. John George, who was utterly unprepared for such a movement, again called upon Gustavus for help, and the latter, leaving Bavaria, hastened to Saxony by forced marches. On October 27 he reached Erfurt, where he took leave of his wife, with a presentiment that he should never see her again.

As he passed on through Weimar to Naumburg, the country people flocked to see him, falling on their knees, kissing his garments, and expressing such other signs of faith and veneration that he exclaimed: "I pray that the wrath of the Almighty may not be visited upon me on account of this idolatry toward a weak and sinful mortal!" Wallenstein's force being considerably larger than his own, he halted in Naumburg to await the former's movements. As the season was so far advanced, Wallenstein finally decided to send Pappenheim with 10,000 men into Westphalia, and then go into winter quarters. As soon as Gustavus heard of Pappenheim's departure he marched to the attack, and the battle began on the morning of November 16, 1632, at Lützen, between Naumburg and Leipzig.

On both sides the troops had been arranged with great military skill. Wallenstein had 25,000 men and Gustavus 20,000. The latter made a stirring address to his Swedes, and then the whole army united in singing Luther's grand hymn: "Our Lord, He is a Tower of Strength." For several hours the battle raged furiously, without any marked advantage on either side; then the Swedes broke Wallenstein's left wing and captured the artillery. The imperialists rallied and retook it, throwing the Swedes into some confusion. Gustavus rode forward to rally them and was carried by his horse among the enemy. A shot, fired at close quarters, shattered his left arm, but he refused to leave the field, and shortly afterward a second shot struck him from his horse. The sight of the steed, covered with blood and wildly galloping to and fro, told the Swedes what had happened; but instead of being disheartened they fought more furiously than before, under the command of Duke Bernard of Saxe-Weimar.

At this juncture Pappenheim, who had been summoned from Halle the day before, arrived on the field. His first impetuous charge drove the Swedes back, but he also fell, mortally wounded, his cavalry began to waver, and the lost ground was regained. Night put an end to the conflict, and before morning Wallenstein retreated to Leipzig, leaving all his artillery and colors on the field. The body of Gustavus Adolphus was found after a long search, buried under a heap of dead, stripped, mutilated by the hoofs of horses, and barely recognizable. The loss to the Protestant cause seemed irreparable, but the heroic king, in falling, had so crippled the power of its most dangerous enemy that its remaining adherents had a little breathing-time left them to arrange for carrying on the struggle.

Wallenstein was so weakened that he did not even remain in Saxony, but retired to Bohemia. The Protestant princes felt themselves powerless without the aid of Sweden, and when the chancellor of the kingdom, Oxenstierna, decided to carry on the war, they could not do otherwise than accept him as the head of the Protestant Union, in the place of Gustavus Adolphus. A meeting was held at Heilbronn, in the spring of 1633, at which the Suabian, Franconian. and Rhenish princes formally joined the new league. Duke Bernard of Saxe-Weimar and the Swedish Marshal Horn were appointed commanders of the army. Electoral Saxony and Brandenburg, as before, hesitated and half drew back, but they finally consented to favor the movement without joining it, and each accepted 100,000 thalers a year from France, to pay them for the trouble. Richelieu had an ambassador at Heilbronn, who promised large subsidies to the Protestant side: it was in the interest of France to break the power of the Hapsburgs, and there was also a chance, in the struggle, of gaining another slice of German territory.

Hostilities were renewed, and for a considerable time the Protestant armies were successful everywhere. William of Hesse and Duke George of Brunswick defeated the imperialists and held Westphalia. Duke Bernard took Bamberg and moved against Bavaria. Saxony and Silesia were delivered from the enemy, and Marshal Horn took possession of Alsatia. Duke Bernard and Horn were only prevented from overrunning all Bavaria by a mutiny which broke out in their armies, and deprived them of several weeks of valuable time.

While these movements were going on Wallenstein remained idle at Prague, in spite of the repeated and pressing entreaties of the emperor that he would take the field. He seems to have considered his personal power secured, and was only in doubt as to the next step which he should take in his ambitious career. Finally, in May, he marched into Silesia, easily out-generaled Arnheim, who commanded the Protestant armies, but declined to follow up his advantage. and concluded an armistice. Secret negotiations then began between Wallenstein, Arnheim, and the French ambassador. The project was that Wallenstein should come over to the Protestant side in return for the crown of Bohemia. Louis XIII. of France promised his aid, but Chancellor Oxenstierna, distrusting Wallenstein, refused to be a party to the plan. There is no positive evidence, indeed, that Wallenstein consented; it rather seems that he was only courting offers from the Protestant side in order to have a choice of advantages, but without binding himself in any way.

Ferdinand II., in his desperation, summoned a Spanish army from Italy to his aid. This was a new offense to Wallenstein, since the new troops were not placed under his command, as they should have been in accordance with the stipulation he had exacted from the emperor upon taking up the command a second time. In the autumn of 1633, however, he felt obliged to make some movement. He entered Silesia, defeated a Protestant army under Count Thurn, overran the greater part of Saxony and Brandenburg, and threatened Pomerania. In the meantime the Spanish and Austrian troops in Bavaria had been forced to fall back, Duke Bernard had taken Ratisbon, and the road to Vienna was open to him. Ferdinand II. and Maximilian of Bavaria sent messenger after messenger to Wallenstein, imploring him to return from the north without delay. He moved with the greatest slowness, evidently enjoying their anxiety and alarm, crossed the northern frontier of Bavaria, and then, instead of marching against Duke Bernard, he turned about and took up his winter quarters at Pilsen, in Bohemia.

Here he received an order from the emperor, commanding him to march instantly against Ratisbon, and further, to send 6000 of his best cavalry to the Spanish army. This step compelled him, after a year's hesitation, to act without further delay. He was already charged, at Vienna, with being a traitor to the imperial cause: he now decided to become one, in reality. He first confided his design to his brothers-in-law, Counts Kinsky and Terzky, and to one of his generals, Illo. Then a council of war of all the chief officers of his army was called on January 11, 1634. Wallenstein stated what Ferdinand II. had ordered, and in a cunning speech commented on the latter's ingratitude to the army which had saved him, and ended by declaring that he should instantly resign his command. The officers were thunderstruck. They had boundless faith in Wallenstein's military genius, and they saw themselves deprived of glory, pay, and plunder by his resignation. He skillfully made use of their excitement. At a grand banquet the next day forty-two of the officers, which included the great majority of them, signed a document pledging their entire fidelity to Wallenstein.

General Piccolomini, one of the signers, betrayed all this to the emperor, who, twelve days afterward, appointed General Gallas, another of the signers, commander in Wallenstein's stead. At the same time a secret order was issued for the seizure of Wallenstein, Illo, and Terzky, dead or alive. Both sides were now secretly working against each other, but Wallenstein's former delay told against him. He could not go over to the Protestant side unless certain important conditions were secured in advance, and while his agents were negotiating with Duke Bernard, his own army, privately worked upon by Gallas and other agents of the emperor, began to desert him. What arrangement was made with Duke Bernard is uncertain; the chief evidence is that he and Wallenstein with the the few thousand troops who still stood by him moved rapidly toward each other, as if to join their forces.

On February 24, 1634, Wallenstein reached the town of Eger, near the Bohemian frontier. Only two or three more days were required to consummate his plan of uniting with the Protestant Swedes under Bernard. Then Colonel Butler, an Irishman, and two Scotch officers, Gordon and Leslie, conspired to murder him and his associates—no doubt in consequence of instructions received from Vienna. Illo, Terzky, and Kinsky accepted an invitation to a banquet in the citadel the following evening; but Wallenstein, who was unwell, remained in his quarters in the burgomaster's house. Everything had been carefully prepared in advance. At a given signal Gordon and Leslie put out the lights, dragoons entered the banquet hall, and the three victims were murdered in cold blood. Then a Captain Devereux, with six soldiers, forced his way into the burgomaster's house, on pretense of bearing important dispatches, cut down Wallenstein's servant, and entered the room where he lay. Wallenstein, seeing that his hour had come, made no resistance, but silently received his death-blow.

When Duke Bernard arrived, a day or two afterward, he found Eger defended by the imperialists. Ferdinand II. shed tears when he heard of Wallenstein's death, and ordered 3000 masses to be said for his soul; but at the same time he raised the assassins, Butler and Leslie, to the rank of counts, and rewarded them splendidly for the deed. Wallenstein's immense estates were divided among the officers who had sworn to support him and had then secretly gone over to the emperor.

Chapter XXVIII

END OF THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR. 1634-1648

THE Austrian army, composed chiefly of Wallenstein's troops and commanded nominally by the emperor's son, the Archduke Ferdinand, but really by General Gallas, marched upon Ratisbon and forced the Swedish garrison to surrender before Duke Bernard, hastening back from Eger, could reach the place. Then, uniting with the Spanish and Bavarian forces, the archduke took Donauwörth and began the siege of the fortified town of Nördlingen, in Würtemberg. Duke Bernard effected a junction with Marshal Horn, and with his usual daring determined to attack the imperialists at once. Horn endeavored to dissuade him, but in vain; the battle was fought on September 6, 1634, and the Protestants were terribly defeated, losing 12,000 men, besides 6,000 prisoners, and nearly all their artillery and baggage wagons. Marshal Horn was among the prisoners, and Duke Bernard barely succeeded in escaping with a few followers.

The result of this defeat was that Würtemberg and the Palatinate were again ravaged by Catholic armies. Oxenstierna, who was consulting with the Protestant princes in Frankfort, suddenly found himself nearly deserted; only Hesse-Cassel, Würtemberg and Baden remained on his side. In this crisis he turned to France, which agreed to assist the Swedes against the emperor, in return for more territory in Lorraine and Alsatia. For the first time Richelieu found it advisable to give up his policy of aiding the Protestants with money, and now openly supported them with French troops. John George of Saxony, who had driven the imperialists from his land and invaded Bohemia, cunningly took advantage of the emperor's new danger, and made a separate treaty with him, at Prague, in May, 1635. The emperor gave up the "Edict of Restitution" so far as Saxony was concerned, confirmed the elector in the possession of Lusatia, and made a few other concessions, none of which favored the Protestants in other lands.

Brandenburg, Mecklenburg, Brunswick, Anhalt, and many free cities followed the example of Saxony. The most important, and —apparently for the Swedes and south German Protestants—most fatal provision of the treaty was that all the states which accepted it should combine to raise an army to enforce it, the said army to be placed at the emperor's disposal. The effect of this was to create a union of the Catholics and German Lutherans against the Swedish Lutherans and German Calvinists—a measure which gave Germany many more years of fire and blood. Duke Bernard of Saxe-Weimar and the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel scorned to be parties to such a compact. The Swedes and south Germans were outraged and indignant. John George was openly denounced as a traitor, as, on the Catholic side, the emperor was also denounced, because he had agreed to yield anything whatever to the Protestants. France, only, enjoyed the miseries of the situation.

Ferdinand II. was evidently weary of the war, which had now lasted nearly a score of years, and he made an effort to terminate it by offering to Sweden three and a half millions of florins and to Duke Bernard a principality in Franconia, provided they would accept the Treaty of Prague. Both refused. Bernard took command of 12,000 French troops and marched into Alsatia, while the Swedish General Banér defeated the Saxons, who had taken the field against him, in three successive battles. The imperialists, who had meanwhile retaken Alsatia and invaded France, were recalled to Germany by Banér's victories, and Duke Bernard, at the same time, went to Paris to procure additional support. During the years 1636 and 1637 nearly all Germany was wasted by the opposing armies; the struggle had become fiercer and more barbarous than ever, and the last resources of many states were so exhausted that famine and disease carried off nearly all of the population whom the sword had spared.

Duke Bernard made an agreement with Louis XIII, whereby he received the rank of Marshal of France, and a subsidy of four million livres a year, to pay for a force of 18,000 men, which he undertook to raise in Germany. After the death of Gustavus Adolphus the hope of the Protestants was centered on him; soldiers flocked to his standard at once, and his fortunes suddenly changed. He entered Alsatia, routed the imperialists, took their commander prisoner, and soon gained possession of all the territory with the exception of the fortress of Breisach, to which he laid siege.

On February 15, 1637, the Emperor Ferdinand II. died, in the fifty-ninth year of his age, after having occasioned, by his policy, the death of ten millions of human beings. Yet the responsibility of his fatal and terrible reign rests not so much upon himself, personally, as upon the Jesuits, who educated him. He appears to have believed sincerely that it was better to reign over a desert than over a Protestant people. As a man he was courageous, patient, simple in his tastes, and without personal vices. But all the weaknesses and crimes of his worst predecessors added together were scarcely a greater curse to the German people than his devotion to what he considered the true faith. His son, Ferdinand III., was immediately elected to succeed him. The Protestants considered him less subject to the Jesuits and more kindly disposed toward themselves, but they were mistaken; he adopted all the measures of his father, and carried on the war with equal zeal.

More than one army was sent to the relief of Breisach, but Duke Bernard defeated them all, and in December, 1638, the strong fortress surrendered to him. His compact with France stipulated that he should possess the greater part of Alsatia as his own independent principality, after conquering it, relinquishing to France the northern portion, bordering on Lorraine. But now Louis XIII. demanded Breisach, making its surrender to him the condition of further assistance. Bernard refused, gave up the French subsidy, and determined to carry on the war alone. His popularity was so great that his chance of success seemed good; he was a brave, devout, and noble-minded man, whose strong personal ambition was always controlled by his conscience. The people had entire faith in him, and showed him the same reverence which they had manifested toward Gustavus Adolphus; yet their hope, as before, only preceded their loss. In the midst of his preparations Duke Bernard died suddenly, on July 18, 1639, only thirty-six years old. It was generally believed that he had been poisoned by a secret agent of France, but there is no evidence that this was the case, except that a French army instantly marched into Alsatia and held the country.

Duke Bernard's successes, nevertheless, had drawn a part of the imperialists from northern Germany, and in 1638 Banér, having recruited his army, marched through Brandenburg and Saxony into the heart of Bohemia, burning and plundering as he went with no less barbarity than Tilly or Wallenstein. Although repulsed in 1639, near Prague, by the Archduke Leopold (Ferdinand III.'s brother), he only retired as far as Thuringia, where he was again strengthened by Hessian and French troops. In this condition of affairs Ferdinand III. called a diet, which met at Ratisbon in the autumn of 1640. A majority of the Protestant members united with the Catholics in their enmity to Sweden and France, but they seemed incapable of taking any measures to put an end to the dreadful war. Month after month went by and nothing was done.

Then Banér conceived the bold design of capturing the emperor and the diet. He made a winter march with such skill and swiftness that he appeared before the walls of Ratisbon at the same moment with the first news of his movement. Nothing but a sudden thaw and the breaking up of the ice in the Danube prevented him from being successful. In May, 1641, he died, his army broke up, and the emperor began to recover some of the lost ground. Several of the Protestant princes showed signs of submission, and ambassadors from Austria, France, and Sweden met at Hamburg to decide where and how a peace congress might be held.

In 1642 the Swedish army was reorganized under the command of Torstenson, one of the greatest of the many distinguished generals of the time. Although he was a constant sufferer from gout and had to be carried in a litter, he was no less rapid than daring and successful in all his military operations. His first campaign was through Silesia and Bohemia, almost to the gates of Vienna; then, returning through Saxony, toward the close of the year he almost annihilated the army of Piccolomini before the walls of Leipzig. The Elector John George, fighting on the Catholic side, was forced to take refuge in Bohemia.

Denmark having declared war against Sweden, Torstenson made a campaign in Holstein and Jutland in 1643, in conjunction with a Swedish fleet on the coast, and soon brought Denmark to terms. The imperialist general, Gallas, followed him, but was easily defeated, and then Torstenson, in turn, followed him back through Bohemia into Austria. In March, 1645, the Swedish army won such a splendid victory near Tabor that Ferdinand III. had scarcely any troops left to oppose their march. Again Torstenson appeared before Vienna, and was about commencing the siege of the city when a pestilence broke out among his troops and compelled him to retire, as before, through Saxony. Worn out with the fatigues of his marches, he died before the end of the year, and the command was given to General Wrangel.

During this time the French, under the famous marshals, Turenne and Condé, had not only maintained themselves in Alsatia, but had crossed the Rhine and ravaged Baden, the Palatinate, Würtemberg, and part of Franconia. Although badly defeated by the Bavarians in the early part of 1645, they were reinforced by the Swedes and Hessians, and before the close of the year won such a victory over the united imperialist forces, not far from Donauwörth, that all Bavaria lay open to them. The effect of these French successes, and of those of the Swedes under Torstenson, was to deprive Ferdinand III. of nearly his whole military strength.

The chief obstacle to peace—the power of the Hapsburgs—now seemed to be broken down. The wanton and tremendous effort made to crush out Protestantism in Germany, although helped by the selfishness, the cowardice, or the miserable jealousy of so many Protestant princes, had signally failed, owing to the intervention of three foreign powers, one of which was Catholic. Yet the peace congress which had been agreed upon in 1643 had accomplished nothing. It was divided into two bodies: the ambassadors of the emperor were to negotiate at Osnabrück with Sweden, as the representative of the Protestant powers, and at Münster with France, as the representative of the Catholic powers which desired peace. Two more years elapsed before all the ambassadors came together, and then a great deal of time was spent in arranging questions of rank, title, and ceremony, which seem to have been considered much more important than the weal or woe of a whole people. Spain, Holland, Venice, Poland, and Denmark also sent representatives, and about the end of 1645 the congress was sufficiently organized to commence its labors. But as the war was still being waged with as much fury as ever, one side waited and then the other for the result of battles and campaigns; and so two more years were squandered.

After the armistice with Maximilian of Bavaria the Swedish general, Wrangel, marched into Bohemia, where he gained so many advantages that Maximilian finally took sides again with the emperor and drove the Swedes into northern Germany. Then, early in 1648, Wrangel effected a junction with Marshal Turenne, and the combined Swedish and French armies overran all Bavaria, defeated the imperialists in a bloody battle, and stood ready to

FREDERICK WILLIAM, THE GREAT ELECTOR, RECEIVES THE FUGITIVE FRENCH EMIGRES AND OFFERS THEM ASYLUM. 1686

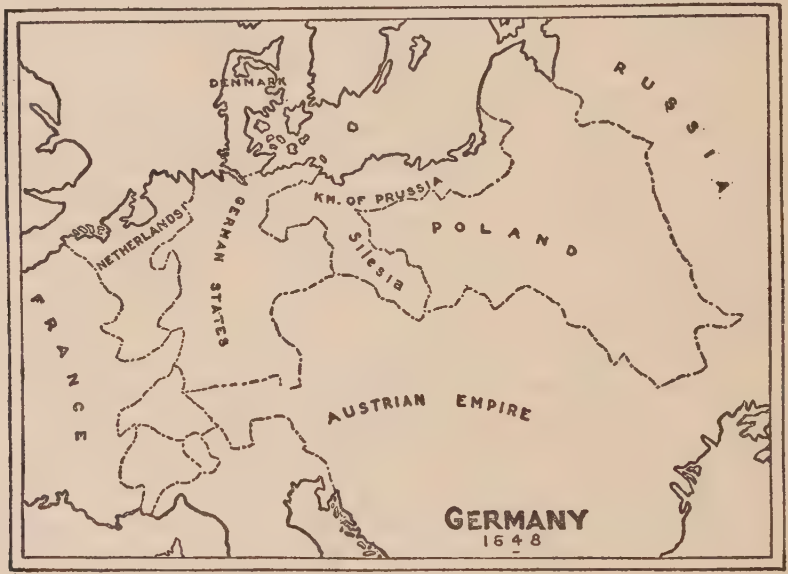
Painting by Hugo Vogel

—page 302

invade Austria. At the same time Königsmark, with another Swedish army, entered Bohemia, stormed and took half the city of Prague, and only waited the approach of Wrangel and Turenne to join them in a combined movement upon Vienna. But before this movement could be executed Ferdinand III. had decided to yield. His ambassadors at Osnabrück and Münster had received instructions, and lost no time in acting upon them. The proclamation of peace, after such heartless delays, came suddenly and put an end to thirty years of war.

The Peace of Westphalia, as it is called, was concluded on October 24, 1648. Inasmuch as its provisions extended not to Germany alone, but fixed the political relations of Europe for a period of nearly a hundred and fifty years, they must be briefly stated. France and Sweden, as the military powers which were victorious in the end, sought to draw the greatest advantages from the necessities of Germany, but France opposed any settlement of the religious questions (in order to keep a chance open for future interference), and Sweden demanded an immediate and final settlement, which was agreed to. France received Lorraine, with the cities of Metz, Toul, and Verdun, which she had held nearly a hundred years, all southern Alsatia with the fortress of Breisach, the right of appointing the governors of ten German cities, and other rights which practically placed nearly the whole of Alsatia in her power. Sweden received the western half of Pomerania, with the cities of Wismar and Stettin, and the coast between Bremen and Hamburg, together with an indemnity of five million thalers. Electoral Saxony received Lusatia and part of the territory of Magdeburg. Brandenburg received the other half of Pomerania, the archbishopric of Magdeburg, the bishoprics of Minden and Halberstadt, and other territory which had belonged to the Catholic Church. Additions were made to the domains of Mecklenburg, Brunswick, and Hesse-Cassel, and the latter was also awarded an indemnity of six hundred thousand thalers. Bavaria received the upper Palatinate (north of the Danube) and the title of elector. Baden, Würtemberg, and Nassau were restored to their banished rulers. Other petty states were confirmed in the position which they had occupied before the war, and the independence of Switzerland and Holland was acknowledged.

In regard to religion the results were much more important to the world. Both Calvinists and Lutherans received entire freedom of worship and equal civil rights with the Catholics. Ferdinand II.'s "Edict of Restitution" was withdrawn, and the territories which had been secularized up to the year 1624 were not given back to the church. Universal amnesty was decreed for everything which had happened during the war, except for the Austrian Protestants, whose possessions were not restored to them. The emperor retained the authority of deciding questions of war and peace, taxation, defenses, alliances, etc., with the concurrence of the diet. He acknowledged the absolute sovereignty of the several princes in their own states, and conceded to them the right of forming alliances among themselves or with foreign powers. A special article of the treaty prohibited all persons from writing, speaking, or teaching anything contrary to its provisions.



The Pope (at that time Innocent X.) declared the Treaty of Westphalia null and void, and issued a bull against its observance. The parties to the treaty, however, did not allow this bull to be published in Germany. The Catholics in all parts of the country (except Austria, Styria, and the Tyrol) had suffered almost as severely as the Protestants, and would have welcomed the return of peace upon any terms which simply left their faith free. The Peace of 1648, from a religious point of view, yielded even more to the Protestants than the Religious Peace of Augsburg, granted by Charles V. in 1555.

Thirty years of war! The slaughters of Rome's worst emperors, the persecution of the Christians under Nero and Diocletian, the invasions of the Huns and Magyars, the long struggle of the Guelphs and Ghibellines, left no such desolation behind them. At the beginning of the century the population of the German Empire was about 30,000,000. When the Peace of Westphalia was declared it was scarcely more than 12,000,000! Electoral Saxony, alone, lost 900,000 lives in two years. The population of Augsburg had diminished from 80,000 to 18,000, and out of 500,000 inhabitants Würtemberg had but 48,000 left. The city of Berlin contained but 300 citizens, the whole of the Palatinate of the Rhine but 200 farmers. In Hesse-Cassel 17 cities, 47 castles, and 300 villages were entirely destroyed by fire. Thousands of villages, in all parts of the country, had but four or five families left out of hundreds, and landed property sank to about one-twentieth of its former value. Franconia was so depopulated that an assembly held in Nuremberg ordered the Catholic priests to marry, and permitted all other men to have two wives. The horses, cattle, and sheep were exterminated in many districts, the supplies of grain were at an end, even for sowing, and large cultivated tracts had relapsed into a wilderness. Even the orchards and vineyards had been wantonly destroyed wherever the armies had passed. So terrible was the ravage that in a great many localities the same amount of population, cattle, acres of cultivated land, and general prosperity was not restored until two centuries afterward!

This settlement of the losses of Germany, however, was but a small part of the suffering endured. Only two commanders, Gustavus Adolphus and Duke Bernard of Saxe-Weimar, preserved rigid discipline among their troops, and prevented them from plundering the people. All others allowed, or were powerless to prevent, the most savage outrages. During the last ten or twelve years of the war both Protestants and Catholics vied with each other in deeds of barbarity; the soldiers were nothing but highway robbers, who maimed and tortured the country people to make them give up their last remaining property, and drove hundreds of thousands of them into the woods and mountains to die miserably or live as half-savages. Multitudes of others flocked to the cities for refuge, only to be visited by fire and famine. In the year 1637, when Ferdinand

II. died, the want was so great that men devoured each other, and even hunted down human beings like deer or hares, in order to feed upon them. Great numbers committed suicide, to avoid a slow death by hunger. On the island of Rügen many poor creatures were found dead, with their mouths full of grass, and in some districts attempts were made to knead earth into bread. Then followed a pestilence which carried off a large proportion of the survivors. A writer of the time exclaims: "A thousand times ten thousand souls, the spirits of innocent children butchered in this unholy war, cry day and night unto God for vengeance, and cease not: while those who have caused all these miseries live in peace and freedom, and the shout of revelry and the voice of music are heard in their dwellings!"

In character, in intelligence, and in morality the German people were set back two hundred years. All branches of industry had declined, commerce had almost entirely ceased, literature and the arts were suppressed, and except the astronomical discoveries of Copernicus and Kepler there was no contribution to human knowledge. Even the modern High German language, which Luther had made the classic tongue of the land, seemed to be on the point of perishing. Spaniards and Italians on the Catholic, Swedes and French on the Protestant side, flooded the country with foreign words and expressions, the use of which soon became an affectation with the nobility, who did their best to destroy their native language. Wallenstein's letters to the emperor were a curious mixture of German, French, Spanish, Italian, and Latin.

The nobles, who in former centuries had maintained a certain amount of independence, were almost as much demoralized as the people, and when every little prince began to imitate Louis XIV. and set up his own Versailles, the nobles in his territory became his courtiers and government officials. As for the mass of the people, their spirit was broken. For a time they gave up even the longing for rights which they had lost, and taught their children abject obedience in order that they might simply live.

Politically, the change was no less disastrous. The ambition of the House of Hapsburg, it is true, had brought its own punishment; the imperial dignity was secured to it, but henceforth the head of the "Holy Roman Empire" was not much more than a shadow. Each petty state became, practically, an independent nation, with power to establish its own foreign relations, make war

1648

and contract alliances. After the Thirty Years' War Germany was composed of 9 electorates, 24 religious principalities (Catholic), 9 princely abbots, 10 princely abbesses, 24 princes with seat and vote in the diet, 13 princes without seat and vote, 62 counts of the empire, 51 cities of the empire, and about 1000 knights of the empire. These last, however, no longer possessed any political power. But, without them, there were 203 more or less independent, jealous, and conflicting states, united by a bond which was more imaginary than real. In reality the result of the war had been greatly to promote the transference of power from the head (emperor) to the members (princes), a process which had been steadily going on since the fifteenth century. Each prince pursued his own selfish independent policy without thought for the good of the whole empire. Such decentralization also greatly weakened the empire, so that it could not hold its own in the rival struggle of European powers, and could not regain the proud position which it had held under Charles V. and in the Middle Ages. The empire became the joke of Europe. The most eminent lawyer of the age (Pufendorf) declared it to be "an irregular sort of a body, like a monster." Voltaire with much truth said that the Holy Roman Empire was neither holy, nor Roman, nor an empire. In fact, it continued to decay and decline in power until it met its deserved destruction at the hands of Napoleon.

Chapter XXIX

DECLINE OF IMPERIAL POWER. 1648-1701

THE Peace of Westphalia coincides with the beginning of great changes throughout Europe. The leading position on the continent which Germany had preserved from the Treaty of Verdun until the accession of Charles V.—nearly seven hundred years—was lost beyond recovery. It had passed into the hands of France, where Louis XIV. was just commencing his long and brilliant reign. Spain, after a hundred years of supremacy, was in a rapid decline. The new republic of Holland was mistress of the seas, and Sweden was the great power of northern Europe. In England Charles I. had lost his throne, and Cromwell was at work laying the foundation of a broader and firmer power than either the Tudors or the Stuarts had ever built. Poland was still a large and strong kingdom, and Russia was only beginning to attract the notice of other nations. The Italian republics had seen their best days. Even the power of Venice was slowly crumbling to pieces. The coast of America, from Maine to Virginia, was dotted with little English, Dutch, and Swedish settlements, only a few of which had safely passed through their first struggle for existence.

The history of Germany during the remainder of the seventeenth century furnishes few events upon which the intelligent and patriotic German of to-day can look back with any satisfaction. Austria was the principal power, through her territory and population, as well as the imperial dignity, which was thenceforth accorded to her as a matter of habit. The provision of religious liberty had not been extended to her people, who were now forcibly made Catholic. The former legislative assemblies, even the privileges of the nobles, had been suppressed, and the rule of the Hapsburgs was as absolute a despotism as that of Louis XIV. When Ferdinand III. died, in 1657, the " Great Monarch," as the French call Louis XIV., made an attempt to be elected his successor. He secured the votes of the archbishops of Mayence, Treves, and

Cologne, and might have carried the day but for the determined resistance of the electors of Brandenburg and Saxony. Even had he been successful, it is doubtful whether his influence over most of the German princes would have been greater than it was in reality.

Ferdinand's son, Leopold I., a stupid, weak-minded youth of eighteen, was chosen emperor in 1658. Like his ancestor, Frederick III., whom he most resembled, his reign was as long as it was useless. Until the year 1705 he was the imaginary ruler of an imaginary empire. The Hapsburgs and the Bourbons being absolute, all the ruling princes, even the best of them, introduced the same system into their territories, and the participation of the other classes of the people in the government ceased. The cities followed this example, and their burgomasters and councilors became a sort of aristocracy, more or less arbitrary in character. The condition of the people, therefore, depended entirely on the princes, priests, or other officials who governed them. One state or city might be orderly and prosperous, while another was oppressed and checked in its growth. A few of the rulers were wise and humane. Ernest the Pious of Gotha was a father to his land during his long reign; in Hesse, Brunswick, and Anhalt learning was encouraged, and Frederick William of Brandenburg set his face against the corrupting influences of France. These small states were exceptions, yet they kept alive what of hope and strength and character was left to Germany, and were the seeds of her regeneration in the nineteenth century.

Throughout the greater part of the country the people relapsed into ignorance and brutality, and the higher classes assumed the stiff, formal, artificial manners which nearly all Europe borrowed from the court of Louis XIV. Public buildings, churches, and schools were allowed to stand as ruins, while the petty sovereign built his stately palace, laid out his park in the style of Versailles, and held his splendid and ridiculous festivals. Although Saxony had been impoverished and almost depopulated, the elector, John George II., squandered all the revenues of the land on banquets, hunting-parties, fireworks, and collections of curiosities, until his treasury was hopelessly bankrupt. Another prince made his Italian singing master prime minister, and others again surrendered their lives and the happiness of their people to influences which were still more disastrous.

The one historical character among the German rulers of this time is Frederick William of Brandenburg, who is generally called "The Great Elector." In bravery, energy, and administrative ability he was the first worthy successor of Frederick of Hohenzollern. No sooner had peace been declared than he set to work to restore order to his wasted and disturbed territory. He imitated Sweden in organizing a standing army, small at first, but admirably disciplined; he introduced a regular system of taxation, of police, and of justice, and encouraged trade and industry in all possible ways. In a few years a war between Sweden and Poland gave him the opportunity of interfering, in the hope of obtaining the remainder of Pomerania. He first marched to Königsberg, the capital of the duchy of Prussia, which belonged to Brandenburg, but was still under the sovereignty of Poland. Allying himself first with the Swedes, he helped win a great victory at Warsaw in July, 1656. He then found it to his advantage to go over to the side of John Casimir, King of Poland, and secured from him as a reward the complete independence of Prussia. He no longer had to pay homage to the King of Poland as his feudal overlord. This was his only gain from the war; for, by the peace in 1660, he was forced to give up western Pomerania, which he had in the meantime conquered from Sweden.

Louis XIV. of France was by this time aware that his kingdom had nothing to fear from any of its neighbors, and might easily be enlarged at their expense. In 1667 he began his wars of conquest by laying claim to Brabant, and instantly sending Turenne and Condé over the frontier. A number of fortresses, unprepared for resistance, fell into their hands. But Holland, England, and Sweden formed an alliance against France, and the war terminated in 1668 by the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. Louis' next step was to ally himself with England and Sweden against Holland, on the ground that a republic, by furnishing a place of refuge for political fugitives, was dangerous to monarchies. In 1672 he entered Holland with an army of 118,000 men, took Gelders, Utrecht, and other strongly fortified places, and would soon have made himself master of the country if its inhabitants had not shown themselves capable of the sublimest courage and self-sacrifice. They were victorious over France and England on the sea, and defended themselves stubbornly on the land. Even the German Archbishop of Cologne and Bishop of Munster furnished troops to Louis XIV. and the Emperor Leopold promised to remain neutral. Then Frederick William of

Brandenburg allied himself with Holland, and so wrought upon the emperor by representing the danger to Germany from the success of France that the latter sent an army under General Montecuccoli to the Rhine. But the Austrian troops remained inactive; Louis XIV. purchased the support of the archbishops of Mayence and Treves; Westphalia was invaded by the French, and in 1673 Frederick William was forced to sign a treaty of neutrality.

About this time Holland was strengthened by the alliance of Spain, and the Emperor Leopold, alarmed at the continual invasions of German territory on the Upper Rhine, ordered Montecuccoli to make war in earnest. In 1674 the diet formally declared war against France, and Frederick William marched with 16,000 men to the Palatinate, which Marshal Turenne had ravaged with fire and sword. The French were driven back and even out of Alsatia for a time; but they returned the following year, and were successful until the month of July, when Turenne found his death on the soil which he had turned into a desert. Before this happened Frederick William had been recalled in all haste to Brandenburg, where the Swedes, instigated by France, were wasting the land with a barbarity equal to Turenne's. His march was so swift that he found the enemy scattered. Dividing and driving them before him, on June 18, 1675, at Fehrbellin, with only 7000 men, he attacked the main Swedish army, numbering more than double that number. For three hours the battle raged with the greatest fury; Frederick William fought at the head of his troops, who more than once cut him out from the ranks of the enemy, and the result was a splendid victory. The fame of this achievement rang through all Europe, and Brandenburg was thenceforth mentioned with the respect due to an independent power.

Frederick William continued the war for two years longer, gradually acquiring possession of all Swedish Pomerania, including Stettin and the other cities on the coast. He even built a small fleet, and undertook to dispute the supremacy of Sweden on the Baltic. During this time the war with France was continued on the Upper Rhine, with varying fortunes. Though repulsed and held in check after Turenne's death, the French burned five cities and several hundred villages west of the Rhine, and in 1677 captured Freiburg, in Baden. But Louis XIV. began to be tired of the war, especially as Holland proved to be unconquerable. Negotiations for peace were commenced in 1678, and on February 5, 1679, the "Peace of Nymwegen" was concluded with Holland, Spain, and the German Empire, but not with Brandenburg!

Frederick William at first determined to carry on the war alone, but the French had already laid waste Westphalia, and in 1679 he was forced to accept a peace which required that he should restore nearly the whole of Pomerania to Sweden. Austria, moreover, took possession of several small principalities in Silesia which had fallen to Brandenburg by inheritance. Thus did the Hapsburgs repay the support which the Hohenzollerns had faithfully rendered to them for four hundred years. Thenceforth the two houses were enemies, and they were soon to become irreconcilable rivals. Leopold I. again betrayed Germany in the Peace of Nymwegen by yielding the city and fortress of Freiburg to France.

Louis XIV., nevertheless, was not content with this acquisition. He determined to possess the remaining cities of Alsatia which belonged to Germany. The Catholic Bishop of Strassburg was his secret agent, and three of the magistrates of the city were bribed to assist. In the autumn of 1681, when nearly all the merchants were absent, attending the fair at Frankfort, a powerful French army, which had been secretly collected in Lorraine, suddenly appeared before Strassburg. Between force outside and treachery within the walls, the city surrendered. On October 23, Louis XIV. made his triumphant entry, and was hailed by the bishop with the words: "Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation!" The great cathedral, which had long been in the possession of the Protestants, was given up to this bishop, all Protestant functionaries were deprived of their offices, and the clergymen driven from the city. French names were given to the streets, and the inhabitants were commanded, under heavy penalties, to lay aside their German costume and adopt the fashions of France. No official claim or declaration of war preceded this robbery, but the effect which it produced throughout Germany was comparatively slight. The people had been long accustomed to violence and outrage, and the despotic independence of each state suppressed anything like a national sentiment.

Leopold I. called upon the princes of the empire to declare war against France, but met with little support. Frederick William positively refused, as he had been shamefully excepted from the Peace of Nymwegen. He gave as a reason, however, the great danger which menaced Germany from a new Turkish invasion, and offered to send an army to the support of Austria. The emperor, equally stubborn and jealous, declined this offer, although his own dominions were on the verge of ruin.

The Turks had remained quiet during the whole of the Thirty Years' War, when they might easily have conquered Austria. In the early part of Leopold's reign they recommenced their invasions, which were terminated, in 1664, by a truce of twenty years. Before the period came to an end the Hungarians, driven to desperation by Leopold's misrule, especially his persecution of the Protestants, rose in rebellion. The Turks came to an understanding with them, and early in 1683 an army of more than 200,000 men, commanded by the Grand Vizier Kara Mustapha, marched up the Danube, carrying everything before it, and encamped around the walls of Vienna. There is good evidence that the sultan, Mohammed IV., was strongly encouraged by Louis XIV. to make this movement. Leopold fled at the approach of the Turks, leaving his capital to its fate. For two months Count Stahremberg, with only 7000 armed citizens and 6000 mercenary soldiers under his command, held the fortifications against the overwhelming force of the enemy; then, when further resistance was becoming hopeless, help suddenly appeared. An army commanded by Duke Charles of Lorraine, another under the Elector of Saxony, and a third, composed of 20,000 Poles, headed by their king, John Sobieski, reached Vienna about the same time. The decisive battle was fought on September 12, 1683, and ended with the total defeat of the Turks, who fled in wild disorder back into Hungary, leaving their camp, treasures, and supplies to the value of ten million dollars in the hands of the conquerors.

The deliverance of Vienna was due chiefly to John Sobieski, yet, when Leopold I. returned to the city which he had deserted, he treated the Polish king with coldness and haughtiness, never once thanking him for his generous aid. The war was continued in the interest of Austria by Charles of Lorraine and Max Emanuel of Bavaria, until 1687, when a great victory at Mohacs in Hungary forced the Turks to retreat beyond the Danube. Then Leopold I. took brutal vengeance on the Hungarians, executing so many of their nobles that the event is called "the Shambles of Eperies," from the town where it occurred. The Jesuits were allowed to put down Protestantism in their own way; the power and national pride of Hungary were trampled under foot, and a diet held at Presburg declared that the crown of the country should thenceforth belong to the House of Hapsburg.

In spite of the defeat of the Turks in 1687, they were encouraged by France to continue the war. Max Emanuel took Belgrade in 1688, the Margrave Ludwig of Baden won an important victory, and Prince Eugene of Savoy (a grand-nephew of Cardinal Mazarin, whom Louis XIV. called, in derision, the "little Abbé" and to whom he refused a military command) especially distinguished himself as a soldier. After ten years of varying fortune the war was brought to an end by the magnificent victory of Prince Eugene at Zenta, in 1697. It was followed by the Treaty of Carlowitz, in 1699, in which Turkey gave up Transylvania and the Slavonic provinces to Austria, Morea and Dalmatia to Venice, and agreed to a truce of twenty-five years.

While the best strength of Germany was engaged in this Turkish war, Louis XIV. was busy in carrying out his plans of conquest. He claimed the Palatinate of the Rhine for his brother, the Duke of Orleans, and also attempted to make one of his agents Archbishop of Cologne. In 1686 an alliance was formed between Leopold I., several of the German states, Holland, Spain, and Sweden, to defend themselves against the aggressions of France; but nothing was accomplished by the negotiations which followed. Finally, in 1688, two powerful French armies suddenly appeared upon the Rhine: one took possession of the territory of Treves and Cologne, the other marched through the Palatinate into Franconia and Würtemberg. But the demands of Louis XIV. were not acceded to. The preparation for war was so general on the part of the allied countries that it was evident his conquests could not be held; so he determined, at least, to ruin the territory before giving it up.

No more wanton and barbarous deed was ever perpetrated. The "Great Monarch," the model of elegance and refinement for all Europe, was guilty of brutality beyond what is recorded of the most savage chieftains. The vines were pulled up by the roots and destroyed; the fruit trees were cut down, the villages burned to the ground, and 400,000 persons were made beggars, while many more were slain in cold blood. The castle of Heidelberg, one of the most splendid monuments of the Middle Ages in all Europe, was blown up with gunpowder; the people of Mannheim were compelled to pull down their own fortifications, after which their city was burned;

Speyer, with its grand and venerable cathedral, was razed to the ground, and the bodies of the emperors buried there were exhumed and plundered. While this was going on the German princes, with a few exceptions (the "Great Elector" being the prominent one), were copying the fashions of the French court, and even trying to unlearn their native language!

Frederick William of Brandenburg, however, was spared the knowledge of the worst features of this outrage. He died the same year, after a reign of forty-eight years, at the age of sixty-eight. The latter years of his reign were devoted to the internal development of his state. He united the Oder and Elbe by a canal, built roads and bridges, encouraged agriculture and the mechanic arts, and set a personal example of industry and intelligence to his people while he governed them. His possessions were divided and scattered, reaching from Königsberg to the Rhine, but, taken collectively, they were larger than any other German state at the time, except Austria. None of the smaller German rulers before him took such a prominent part in the intercourse with foreign nations. He was thoroughly German in his jealousy of foreign rule; but this did not prevent him from helping to confirm Louis XIV. in his robbery of Strasburg, out of revenge for his own treatment by Leopold I. When personal pride or personal interest was concerned the Hohenzollerns were hardly more patriotic than the Hapsburgs.

The German Empire raised an army of about 60,000 men to carry on the war with France; but its best commanders, Max Emanuel and Prince Eugene, were fighting the Turks, and the first campaigns were not successful. The other allied powers, Holland, England, and Spain, were equally unfortunate, while France, compact and consolidated under one despotic head, easily held out against them. In 1693, finally, the Margrave Ludwig of Baden obtained some victories in southern Germany which forced the French to retreat beyond the Rhine. The seat of war was then gradually transferred to Flanders, and the task of conducting it fell upon the foreign allies. At the same time there were battles in Spain and Savoy, and sea fights in the British Channel. Although the fortunes of Germany were influenced by these events, they belong properly to the history of other countries. Victory inclined sometimes to one side and sometimes to the other; the military operations were so extensive that there could be no single decisive battle.

All parties became more or less weary and exhausted, and the end of it all was the Treaty of Ryswick, concluded on September 20, 1697. By its provisions France retained Strasburg and the greater part of Alsatia, but gave up Freiburg and her other conquests east of the Rhine in Baden. Lorraine was restored to its duke, but on conditions which made it practically a French province. The most shameful clause of the treaty was one which ordered that the districts which had been made Catholic by force during the invasion were to remain so.

While Germany was thus a prey to external forces, a number of the reigning families in Europe became extinct, and, by a strange whim of fate, bequeathed their thrones to German princes. This circumstance, however, far from proving beneficial to the German Empire, greatly contributed to estrange her native princes and to render their hereditary provinces dependent upon their new possessions.

The House of Oldenburg had long reigned in Denmark and directed its policy against the empire. Schleswig and Holstein were, as provinces subordinate to Denmark, governed by a prince of this house in the Danish interest. In Sweden the Palatine dynasty, raised (1654) to the throne, also pursued an anti-German system for the aggrandizement of the north. The House of Orange was no sooner seated (1688) on the throne of England than the interests of Germany were sacrificed to those of Great Britain.

Frederick Augustus, brother to John George IV., elector of Saxony, traveled over the half of Europe during his youth. A giant in size and strength, he took delight in the dangers and pleasures pursued by the French gallants of that period. After escaping all the dangers with which he was threatened by jealous Southerns, he returned to Saxony, where (1694) he succeeded his brother on the electoral throne. Louis XIV. was his model, and, aided by his favorite, Fleming, on whom he had bestowed the title of count, he began to subvert Saxony. The extravagance of his predecessor was economy when compared with his. His household was placed upon an immense footing: palaces, churches, retreats (as, for instance, Moritzburg, the Saxon Versailles, notorious for its wanton fêtes) were erected; the most costly *chef-d'œuvres* were purchased with tons of gold; the "green vaults," a collection of useless treasures, was swelled with fresh valuables and curiosities of every description. And for all this his little territory paid. Not a murmur escaped the people until the elector, instead of raising his numerous army as usual from volunteers, levied recruits by force, and a revolt ensued (1696). The rebellion was quelled, and the recruits were forced by the infliction of torture to swear fealty to the colors.

The ensuing year found the elector at the summit of his ambition. He was elected, by means of bribing the *waiwodes* and gaining Russia and the emperor of Germany over to his interests, King of Poland. Russia was at that period under the rule of Peter the Great, who raised her power to a height destined at a future period to endanger Europe. Sweden was at that time Russia's most formidable opponent, and Peter, with the view of paralyzing the influence of that monarchy over Poland, favored the elevation of the Elector of Saxony. The emperor was won over by the recantation of the new sovereign. The reception of the successor of John Frederick, the sturdy opponent to Catholicism, into the bosom of the ancient church was indeed a triumph. He also gained over the Jesuits by favoring their establishment in Poland. The elevation of the House of Saxony, on the other hand, deprived it of its station as the head of the Protestant princes and of all the advantages it had thereby gained since the Reformation, and Brandenburg became henceforward the champion of Protestantism and the first Protestant power in Germany.

The frustration of the schemes of Louis XIV. upon Poland and the ignominious retreat of the Prince of Conti, the French competitor for that throne, after the expulsion of his fleet under Jean Bart from the harbor of Dantzic, were the sole advantages gained on this occasion by Germany. Augustus was (1697) elected King of Poland. Still, notwithstanding his knee being kissed in token of homage by the whole of the Polish nobility, and the magnificence of his state (his royal robes alone cost a million dollars), he was compelled to swear to some extremely humiliating terms, and to refrain from bringing his consort, who steadily refused to embrace the Catholic faith, into the country. The privileges of the Poles were secured; Saxony was taxed to meet the expenses incurred by her sovereign and was compelled to furnish Poland with money and troops.

The national German diet from this time on was no longer attended by the emperor and ruling princes, but only by their official representatives. It was held permanently in Ratisbon, and its members spent their time mostly in absurd quarrels about forms. When any important question arose messengers were sent to the rulers to ask their advice, and so much time was always lost that the diet was practically useless. The imperial court established by Maximilian I. was now permanently located at Wetzlar, not far from Frankfort, and had become as slow and superannuated as the diet. The emperor, in fact, had so little concern with the rest of the empire that his title was only honorary; the revenues it brought him were about 13,000 florins annually. The only change which took place in the political organization of Germany was that in 1692 Ernest Augustus of Hanover (the father of George I. of England) was raised to the dignity of elector, which increased the whole number of electors, temporal and spiritual, to nine.

During the latter half of the seventeenth century learning, literature, and the arts received little encouragement in Germany. At the petty courts there was more French spoken than German, and the few authors of the period—with the exception of Spener, Francke, and other devout religious writers—produced scarcely any works of value. The philosopher Leibnitz stands alone as the one distinguished intellectual man of his age. The upper classes were too French and too demoralized to assist in the better development of Germany, and the lower classes were still too poor, oppressed, and spiritless to think of helping themselves. Only in a few states, chief among them Brunswick, Hesse, Saxe-Gotha, and Saxe-Weimar, were the courts on a moderate scale, the government tolerably honest, and the people prosperous.

PART IV

RISE AND GROWTH OF PRUSSIA. 1701-1806

Chapter XXX

THE WAR OF THE SPANISH SUCCESSION. 1701-1714

THE beginning of the new century brought with it new troubles for all Europe, Germany included. In the north Charles XII. of Sweden and Peter the Great of Russia were fighting for "the balance of power." In Spain King Charles II. was responsible for a new cause of war, simply because he was the last of the Hapsburgs in a direct line, and had no children! Louis XIV. had married his elder sister and Leopold I. his younger sister, and both claimed the right to succeed him. The former, it is true, had renounced all claim to the throne of Spain when he married, but he put forth his grandson, Duke Philip of Anjou, as the candidate. There were two parties at the court of Madrid—the French, at the head of which was Louis XIV.'s ambassador, and the Austrian, directed by Charles II.'s mother and wife. The other nations of Europe were opposed to any division of Spain between the rival claimants, since the possession of even half her territory (which still included Naples, Sicily, Milan, and Flanders, besides her enormous colonies in America) would have made either France or Austria too powerful. Charles II., however, was persuaded to make a will appointing Philip of Anjou his successor, and when he died, in 1700, Louis XIV. immediately sent his grandson over the Pyrenees and had him proclaimed as King Philip V. of Spain.

Leopold I. thereupon declared war against France in the hope of gaining the crown of Spain for his son, the Archduke Charles. England and Holland made alliances with him, and he was supported by most of the German states. The elector, Frederick III. of Brandenburg (son of "the Great Elector"), who was a very proud and ostentatious prince, furnished his assistance on condition that he should be authorized by the emperor to assume the title of king. Since the traditional customs of the German Empire did not permit another king than that of Bohemia among the electors, Frederick was obliged to take the name of his detached duchy of Prussia, instead of Brandenburg. On January 18, 1701, he crowned himself and his wife at Königsberg, and was thenceforth called King Frederick I. of Prussia. But his capital was still Berlin, and thus the names of "Prussia" and "the Prussians"—which came from a small tribe of mixed Slavonic blood—were gradually transferred to all his other lands and their population, German, and especially Saxon, in character. Prince Eugene of Savoy saw the future with a prophetic glance when he declared: "The emperor, in his own interest, ought to have hanged the ministers who counseled him to make this concession to the Elector of Brandenburg!"

The Elector Max Emanuel of Bavaria and his brother, the Archbishop of Cologne, openly espoused the cause of France. Several smaller princes were also bribed by Louis XIV., but one of them, the Duke of Brunswick, after raising 12,000 men for France, was compelled by the Elector of Hanover to add them to the German army. With such miserable disunion at home, Germany would have gone to pieces and ceased to exist but for the powerful participation of England and Holland in the war. The English Parliament, it is true, granted only 10,000 men at first, but as soon as Louis XIV. recognized the exiled Stuart, Prince James, as the rightful heir to the throne of England, the grant was enlarged to 40,000 soldiers and an equal number of sailors. The value of this aid was greatly increased by the military genius of the English commander, the famous Duke of Marlborough.

The war was commenced by Louis XIV., who suddenly took possession of a number of fortified places in Flanders, which Max Emanuel of Bavaria, then governor of the province, had purposely left unguarded. While the recovery of this territory was left to England and Holland, Prince Eugene undertook to drive the French out of northern Italy. He made a march across the Alps as daring as that of Napoleon, transporting cannon and supplies by paths only known to the chamois hunters. For nearly a year he was entirely successful; then, having been recalled to Vienna, the French were reinforced and recovered their lost ground. An important result of the campaign, however, was that Victor Amadeus, Duke of Savoy (ancestor of the present King of Italy), quarreled with the French, with whom he had been allied, and joined the German side.

The struggle now became more and more confused, and we cannot undertake to follow all its entangled episodes. France encouraged a rebellion in Hungary; the Archbishop of Cologne laid waste the Lower Rhine; Max Emanuel seized Ulm and held it for

France; Marshal Villars, in 1703, pressed back Ludwig of Baden (who had up to that time been successful in the Palatinate and Alsatia), marched through the Black Forest and effected a junction with the Bavarian army. His plan was to cross the Alps and descend into Italy in the rear of the German forces which Prince Eugene had left there; but the Tyrolese rose against him and fought with such desperation that he was obliged to fall back on Bavaria.

Marshal Villars and Max Emanuel now commanded a combined army of 60,000 men in the very heart of Germany. They had defeated the Austrian commander, and Ludwig of Baden's army was too small to take the field against them. But the Duke of Marlborough had been brilliantly victorious in the Spanish Netherlands and on the Lower Rhine, and he was thus able to march on toward the Danube. Prince Eugene hastened from Hungary with such troops as he could collect, and the two, with Ludwig of Baden, were strong enough to engage the French and Bavarians. They met on August 13, 1704, on the plain of the Danube, near the little village of Blenheim. After a long and furious battle the French left 14,000 men upon the field, lost 13,000 prisoners, and fled toward the Rhine in such haste that scarcely one-third of their army reached the river. Marlborough and Eugene were made princes of the German Empire, and all Europe rang with songs celebrating the victory, in which Marlborough's name appeared as "Malbrook." His proposal to follow up the victory with an invasion of France was rejected by the emperor, and the war, which might then have been pressed to a termination, continued for ten years longer.

In 1705 Leopold I. relieved Germany, by his death, of the dead weight of his incapacity. He was succeeded by his son, Joseph I., who possessed, at least, a little ordinary common sense. He manifested it at once by making Prince Eugene his counselor, instead of surrounding him with spies, as his jealous and spiteful father had done. Both sides were preparing for new movements, and the principal event of the year took place in Spain, where the archduke, who had been conveyed to Barcelona by an English fleet, obtained possession of Catalonia and Aragon, and threatened Philip V. with the loss of his crown. The previous year, 1704, the English had taken Gibraltar.

In 1706 operations were recommenced on a larger scale, and with results which were very disastrous to the plans of France

Marlborough's great victory at Ramillies, on May 23, gave him the Spanish Netherlands, and enabled the emperor to declare Max Emanuel and the Archbishop of Cologne outlawed. The city of Turin, held by an Austrian garrison, was besieged about the same time by the Duke of Orleans with 38,000 men. Then Prince Eugene hastened across the Alps with an army of 24,000, was reinforced by 13,000 more under Victor Amadeus of Savoy, and on September 7 attacked the French with such impetuosity that they were literally destroyed. Among the spoils were 211 cannon, 80,000 barrels of powder, and a great amount of money, horses, and provisions. By this victory Prince Eugene also became a hero to the German people, and many of their songs about him are sung at this day. The "Prussian" troops, under Prince Leopold of Dessau, especially distinguished themselves. Their commander was afterward one of Frederick the Great's most famous generals.

The first consequence of this victory was an armistice with Louis XIV., so far as Italian territory was concerned. Nevertheless, a part of the Austrian army was sent to Naples in 1707 to take possession of the country in the name of Spain. The Archduke Charles, after some temporary successes over Philip V., was driven back to Barcelona, and Louis XIV. then offered to treat for peace. Austria and England refused. In 1708 Marlborough and Prince Eugene, again united, won another victory over the French at Oudenarde, and took the stronghold of Lille, which had been considered impregnable. The road to Paris was apparently open to the allies, and Louis XIV. offered to give up his claim, on behalf of Philip V., to Spain, Milan, the Spanish-American colonies, and the Netherlands, provided Naples and Sicily were left to his grandson. Marlborough and Prince Eugene required, in addition, that he should expel Philip from Spain, in case Philip refused to conform to the treaty. Louis XIV.'s pride was wounded by this demand, and the negotiations were broken off.

With great exertion a new French army was raised, and Marshal Villars placed in command. But the two famous commanders, Marlborough and Eugene, achieved such a new and crushing victory in the battle of Malplaquet, fought on September 11, 1709, that France made a third attempt to conclude peace. Louis XIV. now offered to withdraw his claim to the Spanish succession, to restore Alsatia and Strasburg to Germany, and to pay one million livres a month toward defraying the expenses of expelling Philip V.

from Spain. It will scarcely be believed that this proposal, so humiliating to the extravagant pride of France, and conceding more than Germany had hoped to obtain, was rejected! The cause seems to have been a change in the fortunes of the Archduke Charles in Spain. He was again victorious, and in 1710 made his triumphal entry into Madrid. Yet it is difficult to conceive what further advantages Joseph I. expected to secure by prolonging the war.

Germany was soon punished for this presumptuous refusal of peace. A court intrigue in England overthrew the Whig ministry and gave the power into the hands of the Tories. Marlborough was at first hampered and hindered in carrying out his plans, and then recalled. While keeping up the outward forms of her alliance with Holland and Germany, England began to negotiate secretly with France, and thus the chief strength of the combination against Louis XIV. was broken. In 1711 the Emperor Joseph I. died, leaving no direct heirs, and the Archduke Charles became his successor to the throne. The latter immediately left Spain, was elected emperor and crowned that same year as Charles VI. Although by deserting Spain he had seemed to renounce his pretension to the Spanish crown, there was a general fear that the success of Germany would unite the two countries, as in the time of Charles V., and Holland's interest in the war began also to languish. Prince Eugene, even without English aid, was so successful in the early part of 1712 that Paris seemed in danger; but Marshal Villars, by cutting off all his supplies, finally forced him to retreat.

During the same year negotiations were carried on between France, England, Holland, Savoy, and Prussia. They resulted in 1713 in the Peace of Utrecht, by which the Bourbon, Philip V., was recognized as King of Spain and her colonies on condition that the crowns of Spain and France should never be united. England received Gibraltar and the Island of Minorca from Spain, and Acadia, Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and the Hudson's Bay Territory from France, and the recognition of her Protestant monarchy. Holland obtained the right to garrison a number of strong frontier fortresses in the Netherlands near the French territory, and Prussia received Neufchatel in Switzerland, some territory on the Lower Rhine, and the acknowledgment of Frederick I.'s royal dignity.

Charles VI. refused to recognize his rival, Philip V., as King of Spain, and therefore rejected the Treaty of Utrecht. But the other princes of Germany were not eager to prolong the war for the sake of gratifying the Hapsburg pride. Prince Eugene, who was a devoted adherent of Austria, in vain implored them to be united and resolute. "I stand," he wrote, "like a sentinel (a watch!) on the Rhine; and as mine eye wanders over these fair regions, I think to myself how happy, and beautiful, and undisturbed in the enjoyment of nature's gifts they might be, if they possessed courage to use the strength which God hath given them. With an army of 200,000 men I would engage to drive the French out of Germany, and would forfeit my life if I did not obtain a peace which should gladden our hearts for the next twenty years." With such forces as he could collect he carried on the war along the Upper Rhine, but he lost the fortresses of Landau and Freiburg. Louis XIV., however, who was now old and infirm, was very tired of the war, and after these successes he commissioned Marshal Villars to treat for peace with Prince Eugene. The latter was authorized by the emperor to negotiate. The two commanders met at Rastatt, in Baden, and in spite of the unreasonable stubbornness of Charles VI. a treaty was finally concluded on March 7, 1714.

Austria received the Spanish Netherlands, Naples, Milan, Mantua, and the Island of Sardinia. Freiburg, Old Breisach, and Kehl were restored to Germany, but France retained Landau, on the west bank of the Rhine, as well as all Alsatia and Strasburg. Thus the recovery of the latter territory, which Joseph I. refused to accept in 1710, was lost to Germany until the year 1870.

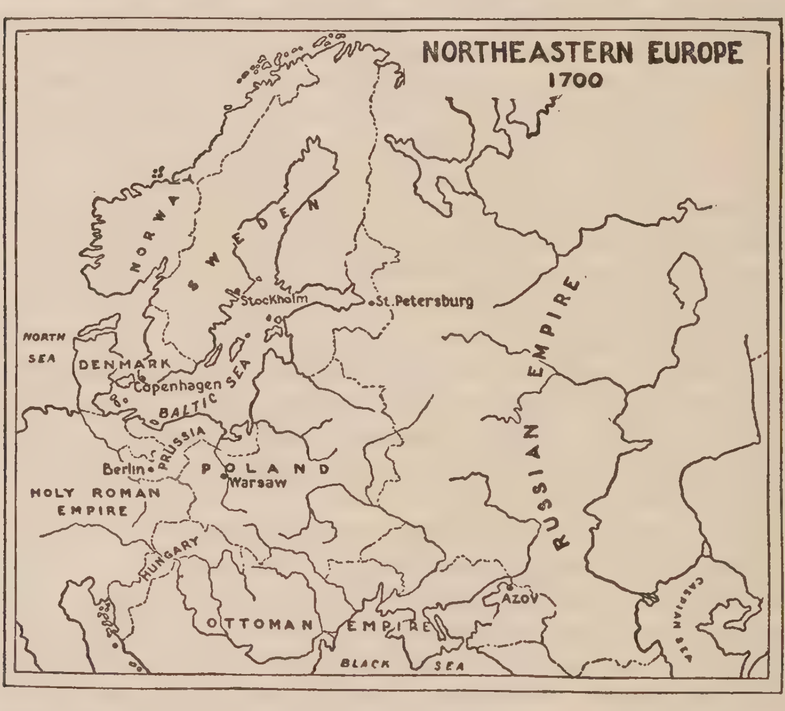
By the Treaty of Utrecht Duke Victor Amadeus of Savoy had received Sicily as an independent kingdom. A few years afterward he made an exchange with Austria, giving Sicily for Sardinia. Thus originated the kingdom of Sardinia, which continued to exist until the year 1860, when Victor Emmanuel became King of Italy.

Chapter XXXI

THE RISE OF PRUSSIA. 1714-1740

WHILE the War of the Spanish Succession raged along the Rhine, in Bavaria, and the Netherlands, the north of Germany was convulsed by another and very different struggle. The ambitious designs of Charles XII. of Sweden, who succeeded to the throne in 1697, aroused the jealousy and renewed the old hostility of Denmark, Russia, and Poland, and in 1700 they formed an alliance against Sweden. Denmark began the war the same year by invading Holstein-Gottorp, the duke of which was the brother-in-law of Charles XII. The latter immediately attacked Copenhagen, and conquered a peace. A few months afterward he crushed the power of Peter the Great, in the battle of Narva, and was then free to march against Poland. Augustus the Strong was no match for the young northern hero, who compelled the Polish nobles to depose him and elect Stanislas Lesczinsky in his stead. Charles XII. then marched through Silesia into Saxony, in the year 1706, and from his camp near Leipzig dictated his own terms to Augustus.

A year later, having exhausted what resources were left to the people after the outrageous exactions of their own electors, Charles XII. evacuated Saxony with an army of 40,000 men, many of them German recruits, and marched through Poland toward Moscow, which he hoped to capture and so compel the Emperor of Russia to a humiliating peace. But as he advanced into the depths of Russia his troops began to drop away, from starvation and exhaustion. Peter the Great had meanwhile been gathering his forces and at last annihilated the Swedish force at the fatal battle of Pultowa. Charles XII. and a few companions barely escaped capture and fled to Turkey. Peter the Great then took possession of the Baltic provinces, and prepared to found his new capital of St. Petersburg on the Neva. Denmark and Saxony also entered into an alliance with Russia, Augustus the Strong was again placed on the throne of Poland, and the Swedish-German provinces on the Baltic and the North Sea were overrun and ravaged by the Danish and Russian armies. Toward the end of the year 1714, after peace had been concluded with France, Charles XII. suddenly appeared in Stralsund, having escaped from his long exile in Turkey and traveled day and night on horseback across Europe, from the shores of the Black Sea. Then Prussia and Hanover, both eager to enlarge their dominions at the expense of Sweden, united against him. He had not sufficient military strength to resist them, and after his death at Frederickshall, in 1718, Sweden was compelled to make peace on conditions which forever destroyed her supremacy among the northern powers.



By the Treaties of Stockholm, made in 1719 and 1720, Prussia acquired Stettin and all of Pomerania except a strip of the coast with Wismar, Stralsund, and the Island of Rügen, paying two million thalers to Sweden. Hanover acquired the territories of Bremen and Verden, paying one million thalers. Denmark received Schleswig, and Russia all of her conquests except Finland. The power of Poland, already weakened by the corruptions and dissensions of her nobles, steadily declined after this long and exhausting war.

The collective history of the German states—for we can hardly say history of "Germany," when there really was no Germany—at this time is a continuous succession of wars and diplomatic intrigues, which break out in one direction before they are settled in another. In 1713 Frederick I. of Prussia died, and was succeeded by his son, Frederick William I. In 1714 George I., Elector of Hanover, was made King of England, and about the same time the Emperor Charles VI. issued a decree, called the "Pragmatic Sanction," establishing the order of succession to the throne for his dynasty. He was led to this step by the example of Spain, where the failure of the direct line had given rise to thirteen years of European war, and by the circumstance that he himself had neither sons nor brothers. A daughter, Maria Theresa, was born in 1717, and thus the provision of the Pragmatic Sanction that the crown should descend to female heirs in the absence of male, preserved the succession in his own family, and forestalled the claim of the Elector of Bavaria and other princes who were more or less distantly related to the Hapsburgs.

The Pragmatic Sanction was accepted in Austria without difficulty, as there was no power to dispute the emperor's will, but it was not recognized by the other states of Germany and other nations of Europe until after twenty years of diplomatic negotiations and serious sacrifices on the part of Austria. Prussia received more territory on the Lower Rhine, the duchies of Parma and Piacenza in Italy were given to Spain, and the claims of Augustus III. of Saxony and Poland were so strenuously supported that in 1733 the so-called "War of the Polish Succession" broke out. In the meantime, however, two other wars had occurred, and, although both of them affected Austria rather than the German Empire, they must be briefly described.

In 1714 the Emperor Charles VI. formed an alliance with the Venetians against the Turks, who had taken the Morea from Venice. The command was given to Prince Eugene, who marched against his old enemy, determined to win back what remaining Hungarian or Slavonic territory was still held by Turkey. The Grand Vizier Ali opposed him with a powerful force, and after various minor engagements a great battle was fought at Peterwardein, in August, 1716. Eugene was completely victorious. The

Turks were driven beyond the Save and sheltered themselves behind the strong walls of Belgrade. Eugene followed, and, after a siege which is famous in military annals, took Belgrade by storm. The victory is celebrated in a song which the German people are still in the habit of singing. The war ended with the Treaty of Passarowitz, in 1718, by which Turkey was compelled to surrender to Austria the Banat of Temesvar, Servia, including Belgrade, and a part of Wallachia, Bosnia, and Croatia.

Before this treaty was concluded a new war had broken out in Italy. Philip V. of Spain, incensed at not being recognized by Charles VI., took possession of Sardinia and Sicily, with the intention of conquering Naples from Austria. England, France, Holland, and Austria then formed the "Quadruple Alliance," as it was called, for the purpose of enforcing the Treaty of Utrecht, and Spain was compelled to yield.

The power of Prussia, during these years, was steadily increasing. Frederick I., it is true, was among the imitators of Louis XIV.: he built stately palaces, and spent a great deal of money on showy court festivals, but he did not completely exhaust the resources of the country, like the electors of Saxony and the rulers of many smaller states. On the other hand, he founded the University of Halle in 1694, and commissioned the philosopher Leibnitz to draw up a plan for an Academy of Science, which was established in Berlin, in 1711. He was a zealous Protestant, and gave welcome to all who were exiled from other states on account of their faith. As a ruler, however, he was equally careless and despotic, and his government was often intrusted to the hands of unworthy agents. Frederick the Great said of him: "He was great in small matters, and small in great matters."

His son, Frederick William I., was a man of an entirely different nature. He disliked show and ceremony. He hated everything French with a heartiness which was often unreasonable, but which was honestly provoked by the enormous, monkey-like affectation of the manners of Versailles by some of his fellow-rulers. While Augustus of Saxony spent six millions of thalers on a single entertainment, he set to work to reduce the expenses of his royal household. While the court of Austria supported forty thousand officials and hangers-on, and half of Vienna was fed from the imperial kitchen, he was employed in examining the smallest details of the receipts and expenditures of his state in order to economize and save. He was miserly, fierce, coarse, and brutal; he aimed at being a German, but he went back almost to the days of Wittekind for his ideas of German culture and character; he was a tyrant of the most savage kind,—but, after all has been said against him, it must be acknowledged that without his hard practical sense in matters of government, his rigid, despotic organization of industry, finance, and the army, Frederick the Great would never have possessed the means to maintain himself in that struggle which made Prussia a great power.

Some illustrations of his policy as a ruler and his personal habits must be given in order to show both sides of his character. He had the most unbounded idea of the rights and duties of a king, and the aim of his life, therefore, was to increase his own authority by increasing the wealth, the order, and the strength of Prussia. He was no friend of science, except when it could be shown to have some practical use, but he favored education, and one of his first measures was to establish four hundred schools among the people by the money which he saved from the expenditures of the royal household. His personal economy was so severe that the queen was only allowed to have one waiting woman. At this time the empress of Germany had several hundred attendants, received two hogsheads of Tokay daily for her parrots, and twelve barrels of wine for her baths! Frederick William I. protected the industry of Prussia by imposing heavy duties upon all foreign products; he even went so far as to prohibit the people from wearing any but Prussian-made cloth, setting them the example himself. He also devoted much attention to agriculture, and when 17,000 Reformers were driven out of Upper Austria by the Archbishop of Salzburg, after an inhuman persecution, he not only furnished them with land, but supported them until they were settled in their new homes.

The organization of the Prussian army was intrusted to Prince Leopold of Dessau, who had distinguished himself at Turin under Prince Eugene. Although during the greater part of Frederick William's reign peace was preserved, the military force was steadily increased until it amounted to 84,000 men. The king had a singular mania for giant soldiers. Miserly as he was in other respects, he was ready to go to any expense to procure recruits seven feet high for his bodyguard. He not only purchased such, but allowed his agents to kidnap them, and despotically sent a number of German mechanics to Peter the Great in exchange for an equal number of Russian giants. For forty-three such tall soldiers he paid $43,000, one of them, who was unusually large, costing $9,000. The expense of keeping these guardsmen was proportionately great, and much of the king's time was spent in inspecting them. Sometimes he tried to paint their portraits, and if the likeness was not successful, an artist was employed to paint the man's face until it resembled the king's picture!

Frederick William's regular evening recreation was his "Tobacco Parliament," as he called it. Some of his ministers and generals, foreign ambassadors, and even ordinary citizens, were invited to smoke and drink beer with him in a plain room, where he sat upon a three-legged stool, and they upon wooden benches. Each was obliged to smoke, or at least to have a clay pipe in his mouth and appear to smoke. The most important affairs of state were discussed at these meetings, which were conducted with so little formality that no one was allowed to rise when the king entered the room. He was not so amiable upon his walks through the streets of Berlin or Potsdam. He always carried a heavy cane, which he would apply without mercy to the shoulders of any who seemed to be idle, no matter what his rank or station. Even his own household was not exempt from blows; and his son Frederick was scarcely treated better than any of his soldiers or workmen.

This manner of government was rude, but it was also systematic and vigorous, and the people upon whom it was exercised did not deteriorate in character, as was the case in almost all other parts of Germany. Austria, in spite of the pomp of the emperor's court, was in a state of moral and intellectual decline. Charles VI. was a man of little capacity, an instrument in the hands of the Jesuits, and the people whom he ruled gradually sank deeper in stupidity and ignorance. The strength of the House of Hapsburg was gradually transferred to the Bohemian, Hungarian, and Slavonic races which occupied the greater part of its territory. The industry of the country was left without encouragement; what little education was permitted was in the hands of the priests, and all real progress came to an end. But for this very reason Austria became the ideal of the German nobility, nine-tenths of whom were feudalists and sighed for the return of the Middle Ages. Hundreds of them took service under the emperor, either at court or in the army, and helped to preserve the external forms of his power.

In most of the other German states the condition of affairs was not much better. Bavaria, the Palatinate, and the three archbishops of Mayence, Treves, and Cologne were abject instruments in the hands of France. Hanover was governed by the interests of England, and Saxony by those of Poland. After George I. went to England the government of Hanover was exercised by a council of nobles, who kept up the court ceremonials just as if the elector were present. His portrait was placed in a chair, and they observed the same etiquette toward it as if his real self were there! In Würtemberg the duke, Eberhard Ludwig, so oppressed the people that many of them emigrated to America between the years 1717 and 1720, and settled in Pennsylvania. This was the first considerable German emigration to the New World.

In 1733 Germany—or rather the Emperor Charles VI.—became again involved in war. The Pragmatic Sanction was at the bottom of it. The endless diplomacy of Charles to insure the recognition of this decree led him into an alliance with Russia to place Augustus III. of Saxony on the throne of Poland. Louis XV. of France, who had married the daughter of the Polish king, Stanislas Lesczinsky, took the latter's part. Prussia was induced to join Austria and Russia, but the cautious and economical Frederick William I. withdrew from the alliance as soon as he found that the expense to him would be more than the advantage. The Polish diet was divided. The majority, influenced by France, elected Stanislas, who reached Warsaw in the disguise of a merchant and was crowned in September, 1733. The minority declared for Augustus III., in whose aid a Russian army was even then entering Poland.

France, in alliance with Spain and Sardinia, had already declared war against Germany. The plan of operations had evidently been prepared in advance, and was everywhere successful. One French army occupied Lorraine, another crossed the Rhine and captured Kehl (opposite Strasburg), and a third, under Marshal Villars, entered Lombardy. Naples and Sicily, powerless to resist, fell into the hands of Spain. Prince Eugene of Savoy, now more than seventy years of age, was sent to the Rhine with such troops as Austria, taken by surprise, was able to furnish. The other German states either sympathized with France or were indifferent to a quarrel which really did not concern them. Frederick William of Prussia finally sent 10,000 well-disciplined soldiers; but even with this aid Prince Eugene was unable to expel the French from

Lorraine. In Poland, however, the plans of France utterly failed. In June, 1734, King Stanislas fled in the disguise of a cattle dealer. The following year 10,000 Russians appeared on the Rhine, as allies of Austria, and Louis XV. found it prudent to negotiate for peace.

The Treaty of Vienna, concluded in October, 1735, put an end to the War of the Polish Succession. Francis of Lorraine, who was betrothed to Charles VI.'s daughter, Maria Theresa, was made Grand Duke of Tuscany, and Lorraine (now only a portion of the original territory, with Nancy as capital) was given to the ex-King Stanislas of Poland, with the condition that it should revert to France at his death. Spain received Naples and Sicily; Tortona and Novara were added to Sardinia, and Austria was induced to consent to all these losses by the recognition of the Pragmatic Sanction and the annexation of the duchies of Parma and Piacenza. Prussia got nothing; and Frederick William I., who had been expecting to add Jülich and Berg to his possessions on the Lower Rhine, was so exasperated that he entered into secret arrangements with France in order to carry out his end. The enmity of Austria and Prussia was now confirmed, and was destined to be the chief force in German politics until the Franco-Prussian War of 1870 settled the rivalry in favor of Prussia.

In 1736 Francis of Lorraine and Maria Theresa were married, and Prince Eugene of Savoy died, worn out with the hardships of his long and victorious career. The next year the Empress Anna of Russia persuaded Charles VI. to unite with her in a war against Turkey, her object being to get possession of Azov. By this unfortunate alliance Austria lost all which she had gained by the Treaty of Passorowitz twenty years before. There was no commander like Prince Eugene, her military strength had been weakened by useless and unsuccessful wars, and she was compelled to make peace in 1739 by yielding Belgrade and all her conquests in Servia and Wallachia to Turkey.

On May 31, 1740, Frederick William I. died, fifty-two years of age. He left behind him a state containing more that 50,000 square miles, and about 2,500,000 of inhabitants. The revenues of Prussia, which were two and a half millions of thalers on his accession to the throne, had increased to seven and a half millions annually, and there were nine millions in the treasury. Berlin had a population of nearly 100,000, and Stettin, Magdeburg, Memel, and other cities had been strongly fortified. An army of more than 80,000 men was perfectly organized and disciplined. There was a beginning of a system of instruction for the people, feudalism was almost entirely suppressed, and the charge of witchcraft (which since the fifteenth century had caused the execution of several hundred thousand victims throughout Germany) was expunged from the pages of the law. Although the land was almost wholly Protestant, there was entire religious freedom, and the Catholic subjects could complain of no violation of their rights.

On October 24, 1740, Charles VI. died, leaving a diminished realm, a disordered military organization, and a people so demoralized by the combined luxury and oppression of the government that for more than a century afterward all hope and energy and aspiration seemed to be crushed among them. The outward show and trappings of the empire remained with Austria, and kept alive the political superstitions of that large class of Germans who looked backward instead of forward; but the rude, half-developed strength which cuts loose from the past and busies itself with the practical work of its day and generation was rapidly creating a future for Prussia.

Frederick William I. was succeeded by his son, Frederick II., called Frederick the Great. Charles VI. was succeeded by his daughter, the Empress Maria Theresa. The former was twenty-eight, the latter twenty-three, years old.

Chapter XXXII

THE REIGN OF FREDERICK THE GREAT. 1740-1786

FEW royal princes ever had a more unfortunate childhood and youth than Frederick the Great. His mother, Sophia Dorothea of Hanover, a sister of George II. of England, was an amiable, mild-tempered woman, who was devotedly attached to him, but had no power to protect him from the violence of his hard and tyrannical father. As a boy his chief tastes were music and French literature, which he could only indulge by stealth. The king not only called him "idiot!" and "puppy!" when he found him occupied with a flute or a French book, but threatened him with personal chastisement. His education was chiefly received from a French tutor, and his taste was formed in the school of ideas which at that time ruled in France, and which was largely formed by Voltaire, whom Frederick during his boyhood greatly admired, and afterward made one of his chief correspondents and intimates. The influence of this is most clearly to be traced throughout his life.

His music became almost a passion with him, though it is doubtful whether any of the praises of his proficiency that have come down to us are more than the remains of the flatteries of the time. His compositions which were performed at his concerts, to which leading musicians were often invited, do not give any evidence of the genius claimed for him in this respect; but it is certain that he attained a considerable degree of mechanical skill in playing the flute. In after life his musical taste continued to influence him greatly, and the establishment of the opera at Berlin was chiefly due to him.

In 1728, when only sixteen years old, he accompanied his father on a visit to the court of Augustus the Strong, at Dresden, and was for a time led astray by the corrupt society into which he was there thrown. The wish of his mother, that he should marry the Princess Amelia, the daughter of George II., was thwarted by his father's dislike of England. Gradually the tyranny to which he was subjected by his father became intolerable, and in 1730, while accompanying his father on a journey to southern Germany, he determined to run away.

His accomplice was a young officer, Lieutenant von Katte, who had been his bosom friend for two or three years. A letter written by Frederick to the latter fell by accident into the hands of another officer of the same name, who sent it to the king, and the plot was thus discovered just before it was to have been put into execution. The king's rage when he heard that his own son had joined with certain officers to desert from the army knew no bounds. In his opinion military desertion was the worst crime a man could commit. Katte was arrested before he could escape, tried by court-martial, and sentenced to several years' imprisonment. Frederick William annulled the sentence and ordered him to be immediately executed. To make the deed more barbarous, it was done before the window of the cell in which Frederick was confined.

Frederick himself in prison was carefully watched, allowed no implements except a wooden spoon, lest he might commit suicide. A Bible and hymn-book were the only books permitted to him. The officer who had him in charge could only converse with him by means of a hole bored through the ceiling of his cell. The king insisted that he should be formally tried; but the court-martial, while deciding that "Colonel Fritz" was guilty, as an officer, asserted that it had no authority to condemn the crown prince. The king overruled the decision, and ordered his son to be executed. This course excited such horror and indignation among the officers that Frederick was pardoned, but not released from imprisonment until his spirit was broken and he had promised to obey his father in all things. For a year he was obliged to work as a clerk in the departments of the government, beginning with the lowest position and rising as he acquired practical knowledge. He did not appear at court until November, 1731, when his sister Wilhelmine was married to the Margrave of Bayreuth. The ceremony had already commenced when Frederick, dressed in a plain suit of gray, without any order or decorations, was discovered among the servants. The king pulled him forth and presented him to the queen with these words: "Here, Madam, our Fritz is back again!"

In 1732 Frederick was forced to marry the Princess Elizabeth of Brunswick-Bevern, whom he disliked, and with whom he lived but a short time. His father gave him the castle of Rheinsberg, near Potsdam, and there, for the first time, he enjoyed some independence. His leisure was devoted to philosophical studies, and to correspondence with Voltaire and other distinguished French authors. During the War of the Polish Succession he served for a short time under Prince Eugene of Savoy, but had no opportunity to test or develop his military talent. Until his father's death he seemed to be more of a poet and philosopher than anything else. Only the few who knew him intimately perceived that his mind was occupied with plans of government and conquest.

When Frederick William I. died the people rejoiced in the prospect of a just and peaceful rule. Frederick II. declared to his ministers, on receiving their oath of allegiance, that no distinction should be allowed between the interests of the country and the king, since they were identical; but if any conflict of the two should arise, the interests of the country must have the preference. Then he at once corrected the abuses of the game and recruiting laws, disbanded his father's bodyguard of giants, abolished torture in criminal cases, reformed the laws of marriage, and established a special ministry for commerce and manufactures. When he set out for Königsberg to receive the allegiance of Prussia proper, his whole court traveled in three carriages. On arriving, he dispensed with the ceremony of coronation, as being unnecessary, and then succeeded in establishing a much closer political union between Prussia and Brandenburg, which, in many respects, had been independent of each other up to that time.

The death of the Emperor Charles VI. was the signal for a general disturbance. Maria Theresa, as the events of her reign afterward proved, was a woman of strong, even heroic, character; stately, handsome, and winning in her personal appearance, and morally irreproachable. No Hapsburg emperor before her inherited the crown under such discouraging circumstances, and none could have maintained himself more bravely and firmly than she did. The ministers of Charles VI. flattered themselves that they would now have unlimited sway over the empire, but they were mistaken. Maria Theresa listened to their counsels, but decided for herself. Even her husband, Francis of Lorraine and Tuscany, was unable to influence her judgment. The Elector Charles Albert of Bavaria, whose grandmother was a Hapsburg, claimed the crown, and was supported by Louis XV. of France, who saw another opportunity of weakening Germany. The reigning archbishops on the Rhine were of course on the side of France. Poland and Saxony, united under Augustus III., at the same time laid claim to some territory along the northern frontier of Austria.

Frederick II. saw his opportunity, and was first in the field. His pretext was the right of Brandenburg to four principalities in Silesia, which had been relinquished to Austria under the pressure of circumstances. The real reason was, as he afterward confessed, his determination to strengthen Prussia by the acquisition of more territory. The kingdom was divided into so many portions, separated so widely from each other, that it could not become powerful and permanent unless they were united. He had secretly raised his military force to 100,000 men, and in December, 1740, he marched into Silesia, almost before Austria suspected his purpose. His army was kept under strict discipline; the people were neither plundered nor restricted in their religious worship, and the capital, Breslau, soon opened its gates. Several fortresses were taken during the winter, and in April, 1741, a decisive battle was fought at Mollwitz. The Austrian army had the advantage of numbers and its victory seemed so certain that Marshal Schwerin persuaded Frederick to leave the field; then, gathering together the remainder of his troops, he made a last and desperate charge which turned defeat into victory. All lower Silesia was now in the hands of the Prussians.

France, Spain, Bavaria, and Saxony immediately united against Austria. A French army crossed the Rhine, joined the Bavarian forces, and marched to Linz, on the Danube, where Charles Albert was proclaimed Archduke of Austria. Maria Theresa and her court fled to Presburg, where the Hungarian nobles were already convened, in the hope of recovering the rights they had lost under Leopold I. She was forced to grant most of their demands, after which she was crowned with the crown of St. Stephen, galloped up "the king's hill," and waved her sword toward the four quarters of the earth, with so much grace and spirit that the Hungarians were quite won to her side. Afterward, when she appeared before the diet in their national costume, with her son Joseph in her arms, and made an eloquent speech, setting forth the dangers which beset her, the nobles drew their sabers and shouted: "We will die for our queen, Maria Theresa!"

While the support of Hungary and Austria was thus secured, the combined German and French force did not advance upon Vienna, but marched to Prague, where Charles Albert was crowned King of Bohemia. This act was followed, in February, 1742, by his coronation in Frankfort as emperor, under the name of Charles VII. Before this took place Austria had been forced to make a secret treaty with Frederick II. The latter, however, declared that the conditions of it had been violated, and in the spring of 1742 suddenly renewed the war with Austria and marched into Bohemia. He was victorious in the first great battle. England then intervened, and persuaded Maria Theresa to make peace by yielding to Prussia both upper and lower Silesia and the principality of Glatz. Thus ended the First Silesian War, which added to Prussia a great province and more than a million subjects.

The most dangerous enemy of Austria being thus temporarily removed, the fortunes of Maria Theresa speedily changed, especially since England, Holland, and Hanover entered into an alliance to support her against France. George II. of England took the field in person, and was victorious over the French in the battle of Dettingen (not far from Frankfort), in June, 1743. After this Saxony joined the Austrian alliance, and the Landgrave of Hesse, who cared nothing for the war, but was willing to make money, sold an equal number of soldiers to France and to England. Frederick II. saw that France would not be able to stand long against such a coalition, and he knew that the success of Austria would probably be followed by an attempt to regain Silesia; therefore, regardless of appearances, he entered into a compact with France and the Emperor Charles VII., and prepared for another war.

In the summer of 1744 he marched into Bohemia with an army of 80,000 men, took Prague on September 16, and conquered the greater part of the country. But the Bohemians were hostile to him, the Hungarians rose again in defense of Austria, and an army under Charles of Lorraine, which was operating against the French in Alsatia, was recalled to resist his advance. He was forced to retreat in the dead of winter, leaving many cannon behind him, and losing a large number of soldiers on the way. On January 20, 1745, Charles VII. died, and his son, Max Joseph, gave up his pretensions to the imperial crown, on condition of having Bavaria (which Austria had meanwhile conquered) restored to him. France thereupon practically withdrew from the struggle, leaving Prussia in the lurch. Frederick stood alone, with Austria, Saxony, and Poland united against him, and a prospect of England and Russia being added to the number. The tables had turned, and he was very much in the condition of Maria Theresa four years before.

In May, 1745, Silesia was invaded with an army of 100,000 Austrians and Saxons. Frederick marched against them with a much smaller force, met them at Hohenfriedberg, and gave battle on June 4. He began with a furious charge of Prussian cavalry at dawn, and by nine o'clock the enemy was utterly routed, leaving 66 standards, 5000 dead and wounded, and 7000 prisoners. This victory produced a great effect throughout Europe. England intervened in favor of peace, and Frederick declared that he would only fight until the possession of Silesia was firmly guaranteed to him; but Maria Theresa (who hated Frederick intensely, as she had good reason to do) answered that she would sooner part with the clothes on her body than give up Silesia.

Frederick entered Bohemia with 18,000 men, and on September 30 was attacked, at a village called Soor, by a force of 40,000. Nevertheless he managed his cavalry so admirably that he gained the victory. Then, learning that the Saxons were preparing to invade Prussia in his rear, he garrisoned all the passes leading from Bohemia into Silesia, and marched into Saxony with his main force. The "Old Dessauer," as Prince Leopold was called, took Leipzig, and, pressing forward, won another great victory on December 15, at Kesselsdorf. Frederick, who arrived on the field at the close of the fight, embraced the old veteran in the sight of the army. The next day the Prussians took possession of Dresden. The capital was not damaged, but like the other cities of Saxony, was made to pay a heavy contribution. Peace was concluded with Austria ten days afterward. Prussia was confirmed in the possession of all Silesia and Glatz, and Frederick agreed to recognize Francis of Lorraine, Maria Theresa's husband, who had already been crowned emperor at Frankfort, as Francis I. Thus ended the Second Silesian War. Frederick was first called "the Great" on his return to Berlin, where he was received with boundless popular rejoicings.

The "War of the Austrian Succession," as it was called, lasted three years longer, but its character was changed. The field of operations was shifted to Italy and Flanders. In Flanders, Maurice of Saxony (better known as Marshal de Saxe), one of the many sons of Augustus the Strong, was signally successful. He conquered the greater part of the Austrian Netherlands for France. Meanwhile, in 1746, Austria, although she had regained much of her lost ground in northern Italy, formed an alliance with the Empress Elizabeth of Russia, who furnished an army of 40,000 men. The money of France was exhausted, and Louis XV. found it best to make peace, which was concluded at Aix-la-Chapelle in October, 1748. He gave up all the conquests which France had made during the war. Austria yielded Parma and Piacenza to Spain, a portion of Lombardy to Sardinia, and again confirmed Frederick the Great in the possession of Silesia.

After the Peace of Dresden, in 1745, Prussia enjoyed a rest of nearly eleven years. Frederick's first care was to heal the wounds which his two Silesian wars had made in the population and the prosperity of his people He called himself "the first servant of the state," and no civil officer under him labored half so earnestly and zealously. He was the very embodiment of the German *Pflicht,* or sense of duty. His whole reign was an illustration of a maxim which he sets forth in one of his essays: "The people are not there for the sake of the rulers, but the rulers for the sake of the people." He looked upon his kingdom as a landholder would look upon a large estate which must be carefully managed and cared for so that it should become productive and prosperous. Therefore Frederick insisted that all questions which required settlement, all changes necessary to be made, even the least infractions of the laws, should be referred directly to himself, so that his secretaries had much more to do than his ministers. While he claimed the absolute right to govern, he accepted all the responsibility which it brought upon him. He made himself acquainted with every village and landed estate in his kingdom, watched as far as possible over every official, and personally studied the operation of every reform. He rose at four or five o'clock, and labored at his desk for hours, reading the multitude of reports and letters of complaint or appeal, which came simply addressed "to the King." His evenings were usually spent in conversation with men of culture and intelligence, and in practice on his beloved flute. His literary tastes, however, remained French all his life. His many works were written in that language, he preferred to speak it, and he sneered at German literature at a time when authors like Lessing, Klopstock, Herder, and Goethe were gradually lifting it to its most glorious height.

His rough, practical common sense as a ruler is very well illustrated by his remarks upon the documents sent for his inspection, many of which are still preserved. On the back of the "Petition from the merchant Simon of Stettin, to be allowed to purchase an estate for 40,000 thalers," he wrote: "Forty thousand thalers invested in commerce will yield 8 per cent., in landed property only 4 per cent.; so this man does not understand his own business." On the "Petition from the city of Frankfort-on-Oder, against the quartering of troops upon them," he wrote: "Why, it cannot be otherwise. Do they think I can put the regiment into my pocket? But the barracks shall be rebuilt." And finally, on the "Petition of the Chamberlain, Baron Müller, for leave to visit the baths of Aix-la-Chapelle," he wrote: "What would he do there? He would gamble away the little money he has left, and come back like a beggar." The expenses of Frederick's own court were restricted to about one hundred thousand dollars a year, at a time when nearly every petty prince in Germany was spending from five to ten times that sum.

In the administration of justice and the establishment of entire religious liberty Prussia rapidly became a model which put to shame and disturbed most of the other German states. Frederick openly declared: "I mean that every man in my kingdom shall have the right to be saved in his own way." In Silesia, where the Protestants had been persecuted under Austria, the Catholics were now free and contented. This course gave him a great popularity outside of Prussia among the common people, and for the first time in two centuries the hope of better times began to revive among them. Frederick was as absolute a despot as any of his fellow-rulers of the day; but his was a despotism of intelligence, justice, and conscience, opposed to that of ignorance, bigotry, and selfishness.

Agriculture was favored in every possible way. Great tracts of marshy land which had been uninhabited were transformed into fertile and populous regions; canals, roads, and bridges were built, and new markets for produce established. The cultivation of the potato, up to that time unknown in Germany as an article of food, was forced upon the unwilling farmers. In return for all these advantages the people were heavily taxed, but not to such an extent as to impoverish them, as in Saxony and Austria. The army was not only kept up, but largely increased, for Frederick knew that the peace which Prussia enjoyed could not last long.

The clouds of war slowly gathered on the political horizon. The peace of Europe was broken by the quarrel between England and France, in 1755, in regard to the boundaries between Canada and the English colonies. This involved danger to Hanover, over which the kings of England ruled with the title of elector. To protect Hanover against French attacks England now proposed to Maria Theresa an alliance against France. The minister of the empress was at this time Count Kaunitz, who fully shared her hatred of Frederick II., and determined, with her, to use this opportunity to recover Silesia. She therefore refused England's proposition, and wrote a flattering letter to Madame de Pompadour, the favorite of Louis XV., to prepare the way for an alliance between Austria and France. At the same time secret negotiations were carried on with Elizabeth of Russia, who was mortally offended with Frederick II. on account of some disparaging remarks he had made about her. Louis XV., nevertheless, hesitated until Maria Theresa promised to give him the Austrian Netherlands in return for his assistance. Then the compact between the three great military powers of the Continent (Austria, Russia, and France) was concluded, and everything was quietly arranged for commencing the war against Prussia in the spring of 1757. So sure were they of success that they agreed beforehand on the manner in which the Prussian Kingdom should be cut up and divided among themselves and the other states.

Through his paid agents at the different courts, and especially through the Crown Prince Peter of Russia, who was one of his most enthusiastic admirers, Frederick was well informed of these plans. He saw that the coalition was too powerful to be defeated by diplomacy. His ruin was determined upon, and he could only prevent it by accepting war even against overwhelming odds. England was the only great power which could assist him; Austria's policy left her no alternative. England concluded an alliance with Prussia in January, 1756, but her assistance afterward was furnished in the shape of money rather than troops. The small states of Brunswick, Hesse-Cassel, and Saxe-Gotha were persuaded to join Prussia, but they added very little to Frederick's strength, because Bavaria and all the principalities along the Rhine were certain to go with France in a general German war. Thus was accomplished the "diplomatic revolution" by which England and Prussia stood arrayed against Austria, France, and Russia in the world-wide struggle known as the Seven Years' War (1756-1763).

Knowing when the combined movement against him was to be made, Frederick boldly determined to anticipate it. Disregarding the neutrality of Saxony, he crossed its frontier on August 29, 1756, with an army of nearly 70,000 men. Ten days afterward he entered Dresden, besieged the Saxon army of 17,000 in their fortified camp on the Elbe, and pushed a column forward into Bohemia. Maria Theresa collected her forces and sent an army of 70,000 in all haste against him. Frederick met them with 20,000 men at Lobositz, on October 1, and after hard fighting gained a victory by the use of the bayonet. He wrote to Marshal Schwerin: "Never have my Prussians performed such miracles of bravery since I had the honor to command them." The Saxons surrendered soon afterward, and Frederick went into winter quarters, secure against any further attack before the spring.

This was a severe check to the plans of the allied powers, and they made every effort to retrieve it by their preparations for the campaign of 1757. Sweden was induced to join them, and "the German Empire," through its almost forgotten diet, declared war against Prussia. All together raised an armed force of 430,000 men, while Frederick, with the greatest exertion, could barely raise 200,000. England sent him an utterly useless general, the Duke of Cumberland, but no soldiers. Frederick dispatched a part of his army to meet the Russians and Swedes, marched with the rest into Bohemia, and on May 6 won a decided but very bloody victory before the walls of Prague. The old hero, Schwerin, charging at the head of his troops, was slain, and the entire loss of the Prussians was 18,000 killed and wounded. But there was still a large Austrian army in Prague. The city was besieged with the utmost vigor for five weeks, and was on the very point of surrendering when Frederick heard that another Austrian army, commanded by Daun, was marching to its rescue.

He thereupon raised the siege, hastened onward, and met Daun at Kollin, near the Elbe, on June 18. He had 31,000 men and the Austrians 54,000. He prepared an excellent plan of battle, then deviated from it, and commenced the attack, against the advice of General Zieten, his chief commander. His haste and stubbornness nearly proved his ruin. He tried to retrieve the fortunes of the day by personally leading his soldiers against the Austrian batteries, but in vain; they were repulsed, with a loss of 14,000 dead and wounded. That evening Frederick was found alone, seated on a log, drawing figures in the sand with his cane. He shed tears on hearing of the slaughter of all his best guardsmen; then, after a long silence, said: "It is a day of sorrow for us, my children, but have patience, for all will yet be well."

The defeat at Kollin threw Frederick's plans into confusion. It was now necessary to give up Bohemia, and simply act on the defensive on Prussian soil. Here he was met by the news of fresh disasters. His other army had been defeated by a much superior Russian force, and the useless Duke of Cumberland had surrendered Hanover to the French. But the Russians had retreated, after their victory, instead of advancing, and Frederick's general, Lehwald, then easily repulsed the Swedes, who had invaded Pomerania. By this time a combined French and German army of 60,000 men, under Marshal Soubise, was approaching from the west, confident of an easy victory and comfortable winter quarters in Berlin. Frederick united his scattered and diminished forces. They only amounted to 22,000, and great was the amusement of the French when they learned that he meant to dispute their advance.

After some preliminary maneuvering the two armies approached each other, on November 5, at Rossbach, near the Saale, west of Leipzig. When Marshal Soubise saw the Prussian camp he said to his officers: "It is only a breakfast for us!" and ordered his forces to be spread out so as to cut off the retreat of the enemy. Frederick was at dinner when he received the news of the approaching attack. He immediately broke up his camp and withdrew his army to a range of low hills which concealed his movements.

The French, supposing that he was retreating, pressed forward with music and shouts of triumph; then, suddenly, Seidlitz, in accordance with Frederick's well-conceived plan, burst upon them with his 8000 cavalry, and immediately afterward Frederick's cannon began to play upon their ranks from his commanding position on the hills. The French were thrown into confusion by this surprise. Frederick and his brother, Prince Henry, led the infantry against them, and in an hour and a half from the commencement of the battle the French were flying from the field in the wildest panic, leaving everything behind them. Nine generals, 320 other officers, and 7000 men were made prisoners, and all the artillery, arms, and stores captured. The Prussian loss was only 91 dead and 274 wounded.

The remnant of the French army never halted until it reached the Rhine. All danger from the west was now at an end, and Frederick hastened toward Silesia, which had in the meantime been occupied by a powerful Austrian army under Charles of Lorraine. By making forced marches, in three weeks Frederick effected a junction near Breslau with his retreating Prussians, and found himself at the head of an army of about 32,000 men. Charles of Lorraine and Marshal Daun had united their forces, taken Breslau, and opposed him with a body of more than 80,000; but instead of awaiting his attack, they moved forward to meet him. Near the little town of Leuthen the two came together. Frederick summoned his generals, and addressed them in a stirring speech: "Against all the rules of military science," he said, "I am going to engage an army nearly three times greater than my own. We must beat the enemy, or all together make for ourselves graves before his batteries. This I mean, and thus will I act. Remember that you are Prussians. If one among you fears to share the last danger with me, he may resign now, without hearing a word of reproof from me."

The king's heroic courage was shared by his officers and soldiers. At dawn, on December 5, the troops sang a solemn hymn, after which shouts of "It is again the 5th!" and "Rossbach!" rang through the army. Frederick called General Zieten to him and said: "I am going to expose myself more than ordinarily to-day. Should I fall, cover my body with your cloak, and say nothing to anyone. The fight must go on and the enemy must be beaten." With his infantry in a new formation, unknown hitherto, he made a sudden oblique attack on the left flank of the Austrian army, while his cavalry engaged its right flank. Both attacks were so desperate that the Austrians struggled in vain to recover their ground. After several hours of hard fighting they gave way, then broke up and fled in disorder, losing more than 20,000 in killed, wounded, and prisoners. The Prussian loss was about 5000. The cold winter night came down on the battlefield, still covered with wounded and dying and resounding cries of suffering. All at once a Prussian grenadier began to sing a hymn: "Now let all hearts thank God"; the regiment nearest him presently joined, then the military bands, and soon the entire army united in the grand choral of thanksgiving. Thus gloriously for Prussia closed the second year of this remarkable war.

Frederick immediately took Breslau, with its garrison of 17,000 Austrians, and all of Silesia except the fortress of Schweidnitz. During the winter Maria Theresa made vigorous preparations for a renewal of the war, and urged Russia and France to make fresh exertions. The reputation which Frederick had gained, however, brought him also some assistance. After the victories of Rossbach and Leuthen there was so much popular enthusiasm for him in England that the government granted him a subsidy of four million thalers annually, and allowed him to appoint a commander for the troops of Hanover and the other allied states. Frederick selected Duke Ferdinand of Brunswick, who operated with him with so much skill and energy that by the summer of 1758 he had driven the French from all northern Germany.

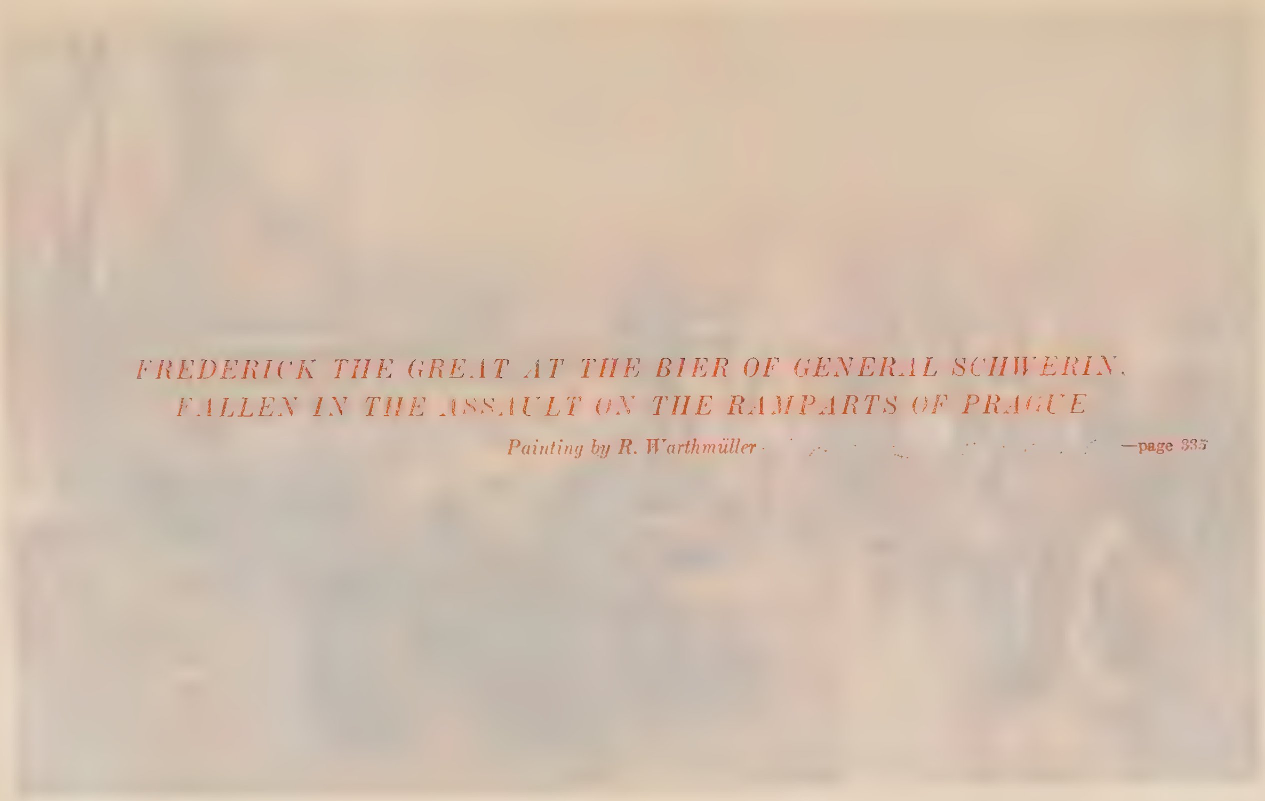
In the campaign of 1758 Frederick, as usual, resumed his work before the Austrians were ready. He took Schweidnitz, reëstablished his rule over Silesia, penetrated into Moravia, and laid siege to Olmütz. But the Austrian Marshal Laudon cut off his communications with Silesia and forced him to retreat across the frontier, where he established himself in a fortified camp near Landshut. The Russians by this time had conquered the whole of the duchy of Prussia, had invaded Pomerania, which they plundered and laid waste, and were approaching the River Oder. On receiving this news Frederick left Marshal Keith in command of his camp, took what troops could be spared and marched against his third enemy, whom he met on August 25, 1758, near the village of Zorndorf, where the Netze flows into the Oder. The battle lasted from nine in the morning until ten at night. Frederick had 32,000 men, mostly new recruits, the Russian General Fermor 50,000. The Prussian lines were repeatedly broken, but as often restored by the bravery of General Seidlitz, who finally won the battle by daring to disobey Frederick's orders. The latter sent word to him that he must answer for his disobedience with his head, but Seidlitz replied: "Tell the king he may have my head when the battle is over, but until then I must use it in his service." When late at night the Russians were defeated, leaving 20,000 dead upon the field—for the Prussians gave them no quarter—Frederick embraced Seidlitz, crying out: "I owe the victory to you!"

The three great powers had been successively repelled, but the strength of Austria was not yet broken. Marshal Daun marched into Saxony and besieged the fortified camp of Prince Henry, thus obliging Frederick to hasten to his rescue. The latter's confidence in himself had been so exalted by his victories that he and his entire army would have been lost but for the prudent watchfulness of Zieten. All except the latter and his hussars were quietly sleeping at Hochkirch, on the night of October 13, when the camp was suddenly attacked by Daun, in overwhelming force. The village was set on fire, the Prussian batteries captured, and a terrible fight ensued. Prince Francis of Brunswick and Marshal Keith were killed and Prince Maurice of Dessau severely wounded. The Prussians defended themselves heroically, but at nine o'clock on the morning of the 14th they were compelled to retreat, leaving all their artillery and camp equipage behind them. This was the last event of the campaign of 1758, and it was a bad omen for the following year.

Frederick tried to negotiate for peace, but in vain. The strength of his army was gone; his victories had been dearly bought with the loss of all his best regiments. Austria and Russia reinforced their armies and planned this time to unite in Silesia, while the French, who defeated the Duke of Brunswick in April, 1759, regained possession of Hanover. Frederick was obliged to divide his troops and send an army under General Wedel against the Russians, while he, with a very reduced force, attempted to check the Austrians in Silesia. Wedel was defeated, and the junction of his two enemies could no longer be prevented; they marched against him, 70,000 strong, and took up a position at Kunersdorf, opposite Frankfort-on-Oder. Frederick had but 48,000 men, after calling together almost the entire military strength of his kingdom, and many of these were raw recruits who had never smelled powder.

On August 12, 1759, after the good news arrived that Ferdinand of Brunswick had defeated the French at Minden, Frederick gave battle. At the end of six hours the Russian left wing gave way; then Frederick, against the advice of Seidlitz, ordered a charge upon the right wing, which occupied a very strong position and was supported by the Austrian army. Seidlitz twice refused to make the charge; and then when he yielded, was struck down and severely wounded, after his cavalry had been cut to pieces. Frederick himself led the troops to fresh slaughter, but all in vain. They fell in whole battalions before the terrible artillery fire, until 20,000 lay upon the field. The enemy charged in turn, and the Prussian army was scattered in all direction. For the moment Frederick's hitherto never-failing courage and energy were gone. He passed through the darkest gloom of despair. To his minister at Berlin he sent a despairing dispatch: "Of an army of 48,000 there are not at this moment 3000 left. The consequences of the battle will be worse than the battle itself. I have no more resources, and, not to hide the truth, I consider that all is lost. I shall not survive the ruin of my country. Farewell forever." But he soon plucked up his hopes and spirits at the good news that the Russian and Austrian commanders had fallen out with one another. Soltikov, the Russian refused to advance on Berlin, and fell back upon Silesia to rest his troops. He complained that he and the Russians had done all the fighting and did not receive enough support from Daun and the Austrians. Daun, meanwhile, marched into Saxony, took Dresden, which the Prussians had held up to that time, and made 12,000 prisoners. Thus ended this unfortunate year. Prussia was in such an exhausted condition that it seemed impossible to raise more men or more money to carry on the war. Frederick tried every means to break the alliance of his enemies, or to acquire new allies for himself, even appealing to Spain and Turkey, but without effect. In the spring of 1760 the armies of Austria, "the German Empire," Russia, and Sweden amounted to 280,000, to meet which he was barely able, by making every sacrifice, to raise 90,000. In Hanover Ferdinand of Brunswick had 75,000, opposed by a French army of 115,000.

Silesia was still the bone of contention, and it was planned that the Austrian and Russian armies should unite there, as before. Frederick was equally determined to prevent their junction, and to hold the province for himself. But he first sent Prince Henry and General Fouqué to Silesia, while he undertook to regain possession of Saxony. He bombarded Dresden furiously, without success, and was then called away by the news that Fouqué with 7000 men had been defeated and taken prisoner near Landshut. All Silesia was overrun by the Austrians, except Breslau, which was heroically defended by a small force. Marshal Laudon was in command, and as the Russians had not yet arrived, he effected a junction with Daun, who had followed Frederick from Saxony. On August 15, 1760, they attacked him at Liegnitz with a com-



FREDERICK THE GREAT AT THE BIER OF GENERAL SCHWERIN,
FALLEN IN THE ASSAULT ON THE RAMPARTS OF PRAGUE

Painting by R. Warthmüller —page 335

[illegible] fell [illegible] before the terr [illegible] the field. The [illegible] in all directions. [illegible] and en[illegible] despair. [illegible] sent a [illegible] despatch: "Of an [illegible] at this moment 3000 left. The consequ[illegible] will be worse than the battle itself. I have no [illegible] I consider that all is [illegible] country. Farewell forever."

[illegible] at the good news th[illegible] fallen out with one anoth[illegible] on Berlin, and fell back [illegible] that he and th[illegible]

[illegible] that

[illegible] the alliance of his enemi[illegible] for himself, even appealing to Spain [illegible] but without effect. In the spring of 1760 the [illegible] Austria, the German Empire, [illegible] to meet which he [illegible] making every sacrifice [illegible]. In [illegible] Ferdinand of Brunswick had [illegible] French army [illegible] 15,000.

[illegible] and it was planned [illegible] should unite there, as before. [illegible] was equally [illegible] prevent their junction, and [illegible] he first sent Prince Henry and [illegible] while he undertook to regain possession of Saxony. He bombarded Dresden furiously, without [illegible] and was then called away by the news that Fouqué [illegible] defeated and [illegible]

[illegible] he effected a junction with Daun, [illegible] from Saxony. On August 15, 1760, they [illegible] at Liegnitz with a com-

bined force of 95,000 men. Although he had but 35,000, he won such a splendid victory that the Russian army turned back on hearing of it, and in a short time Silesia, except the fortress of Glatz, was restored to Prussia.

Nevertheless, while Frederick was engaged in following up his victory, the Austrians and Russians came to an understanding, and moved suddenly upon Berlin—the Russians from the Oder, the Austrians and Saxons combined from Lusatia. The city defended itself for a few days, but surrendered on October 9. A contribution of 1,700,000 thalers was levied by the conquerors, the Saxons ravaged the royal palace at Charlottenburg, but the Russians and Austrians committed few depredations. Four days afterward the news that Frederick was hastening to the relief of Berlin compelled the enemy to leave. Without attempting to pursue them, Frederick turned and marched back to Silesia, where, on November 3, he met the Austrians, under Daun, at Torgau. This was one of the bloodiest battles of the Seven Years' War. The Prussian army was divided between Frederick and Zieten, the former undertaking to storm the Austrian position in front while the latter attacked their flank. But Frederick, either too impetuous or mistaken in the signals, moved too soon. A terrible day's fight followed, and when night came 10,000 of his soldiers, dead or wounded, lay upon the field. He sat all night in the village church, making plans for the morrow; then, in the early dawn, Zieten came and announced that he had been victorious on the Austrian flank, and they were in full retreat. After which, turning to his soldiers, Zieten cried: "Boys, hurrah for our king!—he has won the battle!" The men answered: "Hurrah for Fritz, our king, and hurrah for Father Zieten, too!" The Prussian loss was 13,000, the Austrian 20,000.

Although Prussia had been defended with such astonishing vigor and courage during the year 1760, the end of the campaign found her greatly weakened. The Austrians held Dresden and Glatz, two important strategic points, Russia and France were far from being exhausted, and every attempt of Frederick to strengthen himself by alliance—even with Turkey and with Cossack and Tartar chieftains—came to nothing. In October, 1760, George II. of England died, there was a change of ministry, and the four millions of thalers which Prussia had received for three years were cut off. The French, under Marshals Broglie and

Soubise, had been bravely met by Duke Ferdinand of Brunswick, but he was not strong enough to prevent them from quartering themselves for the winter in Cassel and Göttingen. Under these discouraging aspects the year 1761 opened.

The first events were fortunate. Duke Ferdinand moved against the French in February and drove them back nearly to the Rhine; the army of "the German Empire" was expelled from Thuringia by a small detachment of Prussians, and Prince Henry, Frederick's brother, maintained himself in Saxony against the much stronger Austrian army of Marshal Daun. These successes left Frederick free to act with all his remaining forces against the Austrians in Silesia, under Laudon, and their Russian allies who were marching through Poland to unite with them a third time. But their combined force was 140,000 men, his barely 55,000. By the most skillful military tactics, marching rapidly back and forth, threatening first one and then the other, he kept them asunder until the middle of August, when they effected a junction in spite of him. Then he entrenched himself so strongly in a fortified camp near Schweidnitz that they did not dare to attack him immediately. Marshal Laudon and the Russian commander, Buturlin, quarreled, in consequence of which a large part of the Russian army left and marched northward into Pomerania. Then Frederick would have given battle, but on October 1, Laudon took Schweidnitz by storm and so strengthened his position thereby that it would have been useless to attack him.

Frederick's prospects were darker than ever when the year 1761 came to a close. On December 16 the Swedes and Russians took the important fortress of Colberg, on the Baltic coast. Half Pomerania was in their hands, more than half of Silesia in the hands of the Austrians, Prince Henry was hard pressed in Saxony, and Ferdinand of Brunswick was barely able to hold back the French. On all sides the allied enemies were closing in upon Prussia, whose people could no longer furnish soldiers or pay taxes. For more than a year the country had been hanging on the verge of ruin, and while Frederick's true greatness had been illustrated in his unyielding courage, his unshaken energy, his determination never to give up, he was almost powerless to plan any further measures of defense. With four millions of people he had for six years fought powers which embraced eighty millions; but now half his territory was lost to him and the other half utterly exhausted.

Suddenly, in the darkest hour, light came. In January, 1762, Frederick's bitter enemy, the Empress Elizabeth of Russia, died, and was succeeded by Czar Peter III., who was one of his most devoted admirers. The first thing Peter did was to send back all the Prussian prisoners of war; an armistice was concluded, then a peace, and finally an alliance, by which the Russian troops in Pomerania and Silesia were transferred from the Austrian to the Prussian side. Sweden followed the example of Russia, and made peace, and the campaign of 1762 opened with renewed hopes for Prussia. In July, 1762, Peter III. was dethroned and murdered, whereupon his widow and successor, Catherine II., broke off the alliance with Frederick; but she finally agreed to maintain peace, and Frederick made use of the presence of the Russian troops who were now in his camp to win a decided victory over Daun, on July 21.

Austria was discouraged by this new turn of affairs; the war was conducted with less energy on the part of her generals, while the Prussians were everywhere animated with a fresh spirit. After a siege of several months Frederick took the fortress of Schweidnitz on October 9; on the 29th of the same month Prince Henry defeated the Austrians at Freiberg, in Saxony, and on November 1 Ferdinand of Brunswick drove the French out of Cassel. After this Frederick marched upon Dresden, while small detachments were sent into Bohemia and Franconia, where they levied contributions on the cities and villages and kept the country in a state of terror.

In the meantime negotiations for peace had been carried on between England and France. The preliminaries were settled at Fontainebleau on November 3, and, although the ministry of George III. would have willingly seen Prussia destroyed, Frederick's popularity was so great in England that the government was forced to stipulate that the French troops should be withdrawn from Germany. The "German Empire," represented by its superannuated diet at Ratisbon, became alarmed at its position and concluded an armistice with Prussia; so that, before the year closed, Austria was left alone to carry on the war. Maria Theresa's personal hatred of Frederick, which had been the motive power in the combination against him, had not been gratified by his ruin. She could only purchase peace with him, after all his losses and dangers, by giving up Silesia forever. It was a bitter pill for her to swallow, but there was no alternative; she consented, with rage and humiliation in her heart. On February 15, 1763, peace was signed at Hubertsburg, a little hunting-castle near Leipzig, and the Seven Year's War was over.

Frederick was now called "the Great" throughout Europe, and Prussia was henceforth ranked among the "Five Great Powers," the others being England, France, Austria, and Russia. His first duty, as after the Second Silesian War, was to raise the kingdom from its weak and wasted condition. He distributed among the farmers the supplies of grain which had been hoarded up for the army, gave them as many artillery and cavalry horses as could be spared, practiced the most rigid economy in the expenses of the government, and bestowed all that could be saved upon the regions which had most suffered. The nobles derived the greatest advantage from this support, for he considered them the main pillar of his state, and took all his officers from their ranks. In order to be prepared for any new emergency, he kept up his army, and finally doubled it, at a great cost; but as he used only one-sixth of his own income and gave the rest toward supporting this burden, the people, although often oppressed by his system of taxation, did not openly complain.

Frederick continued to be sole and arbitrary ruler. He was unwilling to grant any participation in the government to the different classes of the people, but demanded that everything should be trusted to his own "sense of duty." Since the people did honor and trust him,—since every day illustrated his desire to be just toward all, and his own personal devotion to the interests of the kingdom, his policy was accepted. He never reflected that the spirit of complete submission which he was inculcating weakened the spirit of the people, and might prove to be the ruin of Prussia if the royal power should fall into base or ignorant hands. In fact, the material development of the country was seriously hindered by his admiration of everything French. He introduced a form of taxation borrowed from France, appointed French officials, who oppressed the people, granted monopolies to manufacturers, prohibited the exportation of raw material, and in other ways damaged the interests of Prussia by trying to force a rapid growth. Frederick the Great, like all his contemporaries, was a thorough believer in the mercantile system, in the value of high protective tariffs, and in other economic theories, whose falsity was not clearly shown until Adam Smith published his "Wealth of Nations," in 1776.

One other event, of a peaceful yet none the less of a violent character, marks Frederick's reign. Within a year after the signing of the Peace of Hubertsburg Augustus III. of Poland died, and Catherine of Russia persuaded the Polish nobles to elect Prince Poniatowsky, her favorite, as his successor. She also made a treaty with Frederick the Great in which they guaranteed each other's possessions and agreed to pursue a common policy toward Poland, especially to keep Poland weak and to prevent the Poles from carrying out any of the much needed reforms in Poland. They also induced Poniatowsky to grant equal rights to the Protestant sects. This brought on a civil war in Poland, as the Catholics were in a majority. A long series of diplomatic negotiations followed, in which Prussia, Austria, and indirectly France, were involved. Finally, on August 5, 1772, Frederick the Great, Catherine II., and Maria Theresa (the latter most unwillingly) united in taking possession of about one-third of the kingdom of Poland, containing 100,000 square miles and 4,500,000 inhabitants, and dividing it among themselves. Prussia received the territory between Pomerania and the former duchy of Prussia, except only the cities of Dantzig and Thorn, with about 700,000 inhabitants. This united together the eastern and central possessions of Frederick the Great. One could now go from Berlin to Königsberg without leaving the dominions of the King of Prussia. This was also the region lost to Germany in 1466, when the incapable Emperor Frederick III. failed to assist the German Order. Its population was still mostly German, and consequently scarcely felt the annexation as a wrong; yet this does not change the character of the act.

The last years of Frederick the Great were peaceful. He lived to see the American colonies independent of England, and was one of the first European rulers to make a commercial treaty with the new republic in the West.[1] Frederick outlived Voltaire and Maria Theresa and preserved to the last his habits of industry and constant supervision of all affairs. Like his father, he was fond of walking or riding through the parks and streets of Berlin and Potsdam, talking familiarly with the people and now and then using his cane upon an idler. His court was Spartan in its simplicity, and nothing prevented the people from coming personally to him with their complaints. On one occasion, in the streets of Potsdam, he met a company of schoolboys, and roughly addressed them with: "Boys, what are you doing here? Be off to your school!" One of the boldest answered: "Oh, you are king, are you, and don't know that there is no school to-day!" Frederick laughed heartily, dropped his uplifted cane, and gave the urchins a piece of money that they might better enjoy their holiday. The windmill at Potsdam, which stood on some ground he wanted for his park, but could not get because the miller would not sell and defied him to take it arbitrarily, stands to this day as a token of his respect for the rights of the poor man.

---

[1] The story that Frederick had such a great interest in George Washington that he sent him a sword upon which was inscribed, "From the oldest general in the world to the greatest," is a pure myth now completely exploded. See Moncure D. Conway in *The Century Magazine,* xiv., 945.

When Frederick died, on August 17, 1786, at the age of seventy-four, he left a kingdom of 6,000,000 inhabitants, an army of more than 200,000 men, and a sum of 72,000,000 thalers in the treasury. But, what was of far more consequence to Germany, he left behind him an example of patriotism, order, economy, and personal duty which was already followed by other German princes, and an example of resistance to foreign interference which restored the pride and revived the hopes of the German people.

Chapter XXXIII

MARIA THERESA AND JOSEPH II. 1740-1790

IN the Empress Maria Theresa, Frederick the Great had an enemy whom he was bound to respect. Since the death of Maximilian II., in 1576, Austria had had no male ruler so prudent, just, and energetic as this woman. One of her first acts was to imitate the military organization of Prussia. Then she endeavored to restore the finances of the country, which had been sadly shattered by the luxury of her predecessors. Her position during the two Silesian wars and the Seven Years' War was almost the same as that of her opponent. She fought to recover territory part of which had been ceded to Austria and part of which she had held by virtue of unsettled claims. The only difference was that the very existence of Austria did not depend on the result, as was the case with Prussia.

Maria Theresa, like all the Hapsburgs after Ferdinand I., had grown up under the influence of the Jesuits. She effected a complete reorganization of the government, establishing special departments of justice, industry, and commerce. She sought to develop the resources of the country, abolished torture, introduced a new criminal code—in short, she neglected scarcely any important interests of the people, except their education and their religious freedom. Nevertheless, she was always jealous of the claims of Rome, and prevented, as far as she was able, the immediate dependence of the Catholic clergy upon the Pope.

In 1765 her husband, Francis I. (of Lorraine and Tuscany), suddenly died, and was succeeded, as German emperor, by her eldest son, Joseph II., who was then twenty-four years of age. He was an earnest, noble-hearted, aspiring man, who had already taken his mother's enemy, Frederick the Great, as his model for a ruler. Maria Theresa, therefore, kept the government of the Austrian dominions in her own hands, and the title of "emperor" was not much more than an empty dignity while she lived. In August, 1769, Joseph had an interview with Frederick at Neisse, in Silesia, and told him outright that Austria had given up all hopes of ever recovering Silesia. Frederick returned the visit, at Neustadt, in Moravia, the following year. At these meetings the admiration of each for the other was much increased; perhaps also they discussed the proposed partition of Poland, and Joseph showed that he was not averse to the project. Nevertheless, after the treaty had been formally drawn up and laid before Maria Theresa for her signature, she added these words: "Long after I am dead the effects of this violation of all which has hitherto been considered right and holy will be made manifest." Joseph, with all his liberal ideas, had no such scruples of conscience. He was easily controlled by Frederick the Great, who, notwithstanding, never entirely trusted him.

In 1777 a new trouble arose which for two years held Germany on the brink of internal war. The Elector Max Joseph of Bavaria, the last of the House of Wittelsbach in a direct line, died without leaving brother or son, and the next heir was the Elector Charles Theodore of the Palatinate. The latter was persuaded by Joseph II. to give up about half of Bavaria to Austria, and Austrian troops immediately took possession of the territory. This proceeding created great alarm among the German princes, who looked upon it as the beginning of an attempt to extend the Austrian sway over all the other states. Another heir to Bavaria, Duke Charles of Zweibrücken (a little principality on the French frontier), was brought forward and presented by Frederick the Great, who, in order to support him, sent two armies into the field. Saxony and some of the smaller states took the same side; even Maria Theresa desired peace, but Joseph II. persisted in his plans until both France and Russia intervened. The matter was finally settled in May, 1779, by giving Bavaria to the Elector Charles Theodore, and annexing to Austria a strip of territory along the River Inn containing about 900 square miles and 139,000 inhabitants.

Maria Theresa had long been ill of an incurable dropsy, and on November 29, 1780, she died, in the sixty-fourth year of her age. A few days before her death she had herself lowered by ropes and pulleys into the vault where the coffin of Francis I. reposed. On being drawn up again, one of the ropes parted, whereupon she exclaimed: "He wishes to keep me with him, and I shall soon come!" She wrote in her prayer-book that in regard to matters of justice, the church, the education of her children, and her obligations toward the different orders of her people, she found little cause for self-reproach; but that she had been a sinner in making war from motives of pride, envy, and anger, and in her speech had shown too little charity for others. She left Austria in a condition of order and material prosperity such as the country had not known for centuries.

When Frederick the Great heard of her death he said to one of his ministers: "Maria Theresa is dead; now there will be a new order of things!" He evidently believed that Joseph II. would set about indulging his restless ambition for conquest. But the latter kept the peace, and devoted himself to the interests of Austria, establishing, indeed, a new and most astonishing order of things, but of a totally different nature from what Frederick had expected. Joseph II. was filled with the new ideas of human rights which already agitated Europe. The short but illustrious history of the Corsican republic, the foundation of the new nation of the United States of America, the works of French authors advocating democracy in society and politics, were beginning to exercise a powerful influence in Germany, not so much among the people as among the highly educated classes. Thus at the very moment when Frederick and Maria Theresa were exercising the most absolute form of despotism, and the smaller rulers were doing their best to imitate them, the most radical theories of republicanism were beginning to be openly discussed, and the great revolution which they occasioned was only a few years off.

Joseph II. was scarcely less despotic in his habits of government than Frederick the Great, and he used his power to force new liberties upon a people who were not intelligent enough to understand them. He stands almost alone among monarchs as an example of a revolutionist upon the throne, not only granting far more than was ever demanded of his predecessors, but compelling his people to accept rights which they hardly knew how to use. He determined to transform Austria, by a few bold measures, into a state which should embody all the progressive ideas of the day, and be a model for the world. The plan was high and noble, but he failed because he did not perceive that the condition of a people cannot be so totally changed without a wise and gradual preparation for it.

He began by reforming the entire civil service of Austria; but, as he took the reform into his own hands and had little practical knowledge of the position and duties of the officials, many of the changes operated injuriously. In regard to taxation, industry, and commerce he followed the theories of French writers, which, in many respects, did not apply to the state of things in Austria. He abolished the penalty of death, put an end to serfdom among the peasantry, cut down the privileges of the nobles, and tried, for a short time, the experiment of a free press. His boldest measure was in regard to the church, which he endeavored to make wholly independent of Rome. He openly declared that the priests were "the most dangerous and most useless class in every country." He suppressed seven hundred monasteries and turned them into schools or asylums, granted the Protestants freedom of worship and all rights enjoyed by Catholics, and continued his work in so sweeping a manner that the Pope, Pius VI., hastened to Vienna in 1782, in the greatest alarm, hoping to restore the influence of the church. Joseph II. received him with external politeness, but had him carefully watched and allowed no one to visit him without his own express permission. After a stay of four weeks, during which he did not obtain a single concession of any importance, the Pope returned to Rome.

Not content with what he had accomplished, Joseph now went further. He gave equal rights to Jews and members of the Greek Church, ordered German hymns to be sung in the Catholic churches and the German Bible to be read, and prohibited pilgrimages and religious processions. These measures gave the priesthood the means of alarming the ignorant people, who were easily persuaded that the emperor intended to abolish the Christian religion. They became suspicious and hostile toward the one man who was defying the church and the nobles in his efforts to help the populace. Only the few who came into direct contact with him were able to appreciate his sincerity and goodness. He was fond of going about alone, dressed so simply that few recognized him, and almost as many stories of his intercourse with the lower classes are told of him in Austria as of Frederick the Great in Prussia. On one occasion he attended a poor sick woman whose daughter took him for a physician; on another he took the plow from the hands of a peasant and plowed a few furrows around the field. Though he was one of the most enlightened men of his age, and sincerely tried to benefit his people, his reforms were too radical, and usually created great opposition among the very classes they were intended to benefit. Frederick said sarcastically of him that he failed in almost everything he undertook because he always took the second step before he had taken the first. If his reign had been longer the Austrian people would have learned to trust him, and many of his reforms might have become permanent; he was better understood and loved after his death than during his life.

One circumstance must be mentioned in explanation of the sudden and sweeping character of Joseph II.'s measures toward the church. The Jesuits, by their intrigues and the demoralizing influence which they exercised, had made themselves hated in all Catholic countries, and were tolerated only in Bavaria and Austria. France, Spain, Naples, and Portugal, one after the other, banished the order, and Pope Clement XIV. was finally induced, in 1773, to dissolve its connection with the Church of Rome. The Jesuits were then compelled to leave Austria, and for a time they found refuge only in Russia and Prussia, where they were employed by the governments as teachers. Their expulsion was the sign of a new life for the schools and universities, and Joseph II. evidently supposed that the Church of Rome itself had made a step in advance. The Archbishop of Mayence and the Bishop of Treves were noted liberals; the latter even favored a reformation in the Catholic Church, and the emperor had reason to believe that he would receive at least a moral support throughout Germany. He neither perceived the thorough demoralization which two centuries of Jesuit rule had produced in Austria nor the settled determination of the Papal power to restore the order as soon as circumstances would permit.

Joseph II.'s last years were disastrous to all his plans. In Flanders, which was still a dependency of Austria, the priests incited the people to revolt; in Hungary the nobles were bitterly hostile to him on account of the abolition of serfdom; and an alliance with Catherine II. of Russia against Turkey, into which he entered in 1788—chiefly, it seems, in the hope of achieving military renown—was in every way unfortunate. At the head of an army of 200,000 men he marched against Belgrade, but was repelled by the Turks, and finally returned to Vienna with the seeds of a fatal fever in his frame. Russia made peace with Turkey before the fortunes of war could be retrieved; Flanders declared itself independent of Austria, and a revolution in Hungary was only prevented by his taking back most of the decrees which had been issued for the emancipation of the people. Disappointed and hopeless, Joseph II. succumbed to the fever which hung upon him. He died on February 20, 1790, only forty-nine years of age. He ordered these words to be engraved upon his tombstone: "Here lies a prince whose intentions were pure, but who had the misfortune to see all his plans shattered!" History has done justice to his character, and the people whom he tried to help learned to appreciate his efforts when it was too late.

The condition of Germany, from the end of the Seven Years' War to the close of the eighteenth century, shows a remarkable progress, when we contrast it with the first half of the century. The stern, heroic character of Frederick the Great, the strong, humane aspirations of Joseph II., and the rapid growth of democratic ideas all over the world affected at last many of the smaller German states. Their imitation of the pomp and state of Louis XIV., which they had practiced for nearly a hundred years, came to an end. The princes were now possessed with the idea of "an enlightened despotism"—that is, while retaining their absolute power, they endeavored to exercise it for the good of the people. There were some dark exceptions to this general change for the better. The rulers of Hesse-Cassel and Würtemberg, for example, sold whole regiments of their subjects to England, to be used against the American colonies in the War of Independence. Although many of these soldiers remained in the United States, and encouraged, by their satisfaction with their new homes, the later German emigration to America, the princes who sold them covered their own memories with infamy, and deservedly so.

There was a remarkable movement about the same time among the Catholic archbishops, who were also temporal rulers, in Germany. The dominions of these priestly princes, especially along the Rhine, had been wretchedly governed. There were about 1000 inhabitants, 50 of whom were priests and 260 beggars, to every twenty-two square miles! But by a singular coincidence the chief Catholic archbishops were at this time men of intelligence and humane aspirations, who did their best to remedy the misrule of their predecessors. In the year 1786 the archbishops of Mayence, Treves, Cologne, and Salzburg, came together at Ems and agreed upon a plan for founding a national German-Catholic Church independent of Rome. The priests, in their ignorance and bigotry, opposed the movement, and even Joseph II., who had planned the very same thing for Austria, most inconsistently refused to favor it. The plan, therefore, failed.

It must be admitted, as an apology for the theory of "an enlightened despotism," that there was no representative government in Europe at the time where there was greater justice and order than in Prussia or in Austria under Joseph II. The German Empire had become a mere mockery; its perpetual diet at Ratisbon was little more than a farce. Poland, Holland, and Sweden, where there were legislative assemblies, were in a most unfortunate condition. The Swiss republic was far from being republican, and even England, under George III., did not present a fortunate model of parliamentary government. The United States of America were too far off and too little known to exercise much influence. Some of the smaller German states, which were despotisms in the hands of wise and humane rulers, thus played a most beneficent part in protecting, instructing, and elevating the people.

Baden, Brunswick, Anhalt-Dessau, Holstein, Saxe-Gotha, and especially Saxe-Weimar, became cradles of science and literature. Charles Augustus, of the last-named state, called Herder, Wieland, Goethe, Schiller, and other illustrious authors to his court, and created such a distinguished circle in letters and the arts that Weimar was named "the German Athens." The works of these great men, who had been preceded by Lessing and Klopstock, gave an immense impetus to the intellectual development of Germany. It was the first great advance made by the people since the days of Luther, and its effect extended gradually to the courts of less intelligent and humane princes. Frederick Augustus of Saxony refrained from imitating his dissolute and tyrannical ancestors, and his land began to recover from its long sufferings. As for the scores of petty states which contained—as was ironically said—"twelve subjects and one Jew," and were not much larger than an average Illinois farm, they were mostly despotic and ridiculous; but they were too weak to impede the general march of progress. Among the greater states, only Bavaria remained in the background. The elector held fast to all his religious prejudices and kept his people in ignorance.

Chapter XXXIV

THE END OF THE GERMAN EMPIRE. 1790-1806

THE mantles of both Frederick the Great and Joseph II. fell upon incompetent successors at a time when all Europe was agitated by the beginning of the French Revolution, and when, therefore, the greatest political wisdom was required of the rulers of Germany. It was a crisis the like of which never before occurred in the history of the world, and probably never will occur again; for, at the time when it came, the people enjoyed fewer rights than they had possessed during the Middle Ages, and the monarchs exercised more power than they had claimed for at least fifteen hundred years before, while general intelligence and the knowledge of human rights were increasing everywhere. The fabrics of society and government were ages behind the demands of the time; a change was inevitable, and because no preparation had been made, it came with violence.

Frederick the Great was succeeded by his nephew, Frederick William II., whom, with unaccountable neglect, he had not instructed in the duties of government. The latter, nevertheless, began with changes which gave him a great popularity. He abolished the French system of collecting duties, the monopolies which were burdensome to the people, and lightened the weight of their taxes. But, by unnecessary interference in the affairs of Holland (because his sister was the wife of William V. of Orange), he spent all the surplus which Frederick had left in the Prussian treasury; he was weak, dissolute, and fickle in his character; he introduced the most rigid measures in regard to the press and religious worship, and soon taught the people the difference between a bigoted and narrow-minded and an intelligent and conscientious king.

Joseph II. was succeeded by his brother, Leopold II., who for twenty-five years had been Grand Duke of Tuscany, where he had governed with great mildness and prudence. His policy had been somewhat similar to that of Joseph II., but characterized by greater caution and moderation. When he took the crown of Austria, and immediately afterward that of the German Empire, he materially changed his plan of government. He was not rigidly oppressive, but he checked the evidence of a freer development among the people which Joseph II. had fostered. He limited at once the pretensions of Austria, cultivated friendly relations with Prussia, which was then inclined to support the Austrian Netherlands in their revolt, and took steps to conclude peace with Turkey. He succeeded, also, in reconciling the Hungarians to the Hapsburg rule, and might possibly have given a fortunate turn to the destinies of Austria if he had lived long enough. But he died on March 1, 1792, after a reign of exactly two years, and was succeeded by his son, Francis II., who was elected Emperor of Germany on July 5, in Frankfort.

By this time the great changes which had taken place in France began to agitate all Europe. The French National Assembly very soon disregarded the provisions of the Peace of Westphalia of 1648, which had ceded to France only the possessions of Austria in Alsatia, allowing various towns and districts on the west bank of the Upper Rhine to be held by German princes. The entire authority over these scattered possessions was now claimed by France, and neither Prussia, under Frederick William II., nor Austria under Leopold II., resisted the act otherwise than by a protest which had no effect. Although the French queen, Marie Antoinette, was Leopold II.'s sister, his policy was to preserve peace with the revolutionary party which controlled France. Frederick William's minister, Hertzberg, pursued the same policy, but so much against the will of the king, who was determined to defend the cause of absolute monarchy by trying to rescue Louis XVI. from his increasing dangers, that before the close of 1791 Hertzberg was dismissed from office. Then Frederick William endeavored to create a "holy alliance" of Prussia, Austria, Russia, and Sweden against France, but only succeeded far enough to provoke a bitter feeling of hostility to Germany in the French National Assembly.

The nobles who had been driven out of France by the Revolution were welcomed by the archbishops of Mayence and Treves, and the rulers of smaller states along the Rhine, who allowed them to plot a counter-revolution. An angry diplomatic intercourse between France and Austria followed, and in April, 1792, the former country declared war against "the King of Bohemia and Hungary," as Francis II. was styled by the French Assembly. In fact, war was inevitable; for the monarchs of Europe were simply waiting for a good chance to intervene and crush the republican movement in France, which, on its side, could only establish itself through military successes. Although neither party was prepared for the struggle, the energy and enthusiasm of the new men who governed France gained an advantage, at the start, over the lumbering slowness of the German governments. It was not the latter, this time, but their enemy who profited by the example of Frederick the Great.

Prussia and Austria, supported by some, but not by all, of the smaller states, raised two armies, one of 110,000 men under the Duke of Brunswick, which was to march through Belgium to Paris, while the other, 50,000 strong, was to take possession of Alsatia. The movement of the former was changed, and then delayed by differences of opinion among the royal and ducal commanders. It started from Mayence and consumed three weeks in marching to the French frontier, only ninety miles distant. Longwy and Verdun were taken without much difficulty, and then the advance ceased. The French under Dumouriez and Kellermann united their forces, held the Germans in check at Valmy, on September 20, 1792, and then compelled them to retrace their steps toward the Rhine. While the Prussians were retreating through storms of rain, their ranks thinned by disease, Dumouriez wheeled upon Flanders, met the Austrian army at Jemappes, and gained such a decided victory that by the end of the year all Belgium, and even the city of Aix-la-Chapelle, fell into the hands of the French.

At the same time another French army, under General Custine, marched to the Rhine, took Speyer, Worms, and finally Mayence, which city was made the headquarters of a republican movement intended to influence Germany. These successes were followed, on January 21, 1793, by the execution of Louis XVI., and on October 16 of Marie Antoinette—acts which alarmed every reigning family in Europe and provoked the most intense enmity toward the French Republic. An immediate alliance—called the First Coalition—was made by England, Holland, Prussia, Austria, "the German Empire," Sardinia, Naples, and Spain, against France. Only Catherine II. of Russia declined to join, not because she did not favor the design of crushing France, but because she would thus be left free to carry out her plans of aggrandizement at the expense of Turkey and Poland.

The greater part of the year 1793 was on the whole favorable to the allied powers. An Austrian victory at Neerwinden, on March 18, compelled the French to evacuate Belgium. In July the Prussians reconquered Mayence and then advanced into Alsatia. A combined English and Spanish fleet took possession of Toulon. But there was no unity of action among the enemies of France; even the German successes were soon neutralized by the mutual jealousy and mistrust of Prussia and Austria, and the war became more and more unpopular. Toward the close of the year the French armies were again victorious in Flanders and along the Rhine. Their generals had discovered that the rapid movements and the rash, impetuous assaults of their new troops were very effectual against the old, deliberate, scientific tactics of the Germans. Spain, Holland, and Sardinia proved to be almost useless as allies, and the strength of the coalition was reduced to England, Prussia, and Austria.

In 1794 a fresh attempt was made. Prussia furnished 50,000 men, who were paid by England, and were hardly less mercenaries than the troops sold by Hesse-Cassel twenty years before. In June the French under Jourdan were victorious at Fleurus, and Austria decided to give up Belgium. The Prussians gained some advantages in Alsatia, but showed no desire to carry on the war as the hirelings of another country. Frederick William II. and Francis II. were equally suspicious of each other, equally weak and vacillating, divided between their desire of overturning the French republic on the one side and securing new conquests of Polish territory on the other. Thus the war was prosecuted in the most languid and inefficient manner, and by the end of the year the French were masters of all the territory west of the Rhine from Alsatia to the sea. During the following winter they assisted in overturning the former government of Holland, where a new "Batavian Republic" was established. Frederick William II. thereupon determined to withdraw from the coalition, and make a separate peace with France. His minister, Hardenberg, concluded a treaty at Basel, on April 5, 1795, by which Cleves and other Prussian territory west of the Lower Rhine were relinquished to France, and all of Germany north of a line of demarcation, drawn from the River Main eastward to Silesia, was declared to be in a state of neutrality during the war which France still continued to wage with Austria.

One cause of Prussia's change of policy seems to have been her fear that Russia would absorb the whole of Poland. This was probably the intention of Catherine II., for she had vigorously encouraged the war between Germany and France, while declining to take part in it. The Poles themselves, now more divided than ever, soon furnished her with a pretext for interference. They had adopted an hereditary instead of an elective monarchy, together with a constitution similar to that of France; but a portion of the nobility rose in arms against these changes, and were supported by Russia. Then Frederick William II. insisted on being admitted as a partner in the business of interference, and Catherine II. reluctantly consented. In January, 1793, the two powers agreed to divide a large portion of Polish territory between them, Austria taking no active part in the matter. Prussia received the cities of Thorn and Dantzig, the provinces of Posen, Gnesen, and Kalisch and other territory, amounting to more than 20,000 square miles, with 1,000,000 inhabitants. The only resistance made to the entrance of the Russian army into Poland was headed by Kosciusko, one of the heroes of the American War of Independence. Although defeated at Dubienka, where he fought with 4000 men against 16,000, the hopes of the Polish patriots centered upon him, and when they rose in 1794 to prevent the approaching destruction of their country, they made him dictator. Russia was engaged in a war with Turkey, and had not troops enough to quell the insurrection, so Prussia was called upon to furnish her share. In June, 1794, Frederick William himself marched to Warsaw, where a Russian army arrived about the same time. The city was besieged, but not attacked, owing to quarrels and differences of opinion among the commanders. At the end of three months the king got tired and went back to Berlin; several insignificant battles were fought, in which the Poles had the greater advantage, but nothing decisive happened until the end of October, when the Russian General Suvarov arrived, after a forced march from the seat of war on the Danube.

He first defeated Kosciusko, who was taken prisoner, and then marched upon Warsaw. On November 4 the suburb of Praga was taken by storm, with terrible slaughter, and three days afterward Warsaw fell. This was the end of Poland as an independent nation. Although Austria had taken no part in the war, she now negotiated for a share in the third and last partition, which had been decided upon by Russia and Prussia, even before the Polish revolt furnished the pretext for it. Catherine II. favored the Austrian claims, and even concluded a secret agreement with Francis II., without consulting Prussia. When this had been made known, in August, 1795, Prussia protested violently against it, but without effect. Russia took more than half the remaining territory, Austria nearly one-quarter, and Prussia received about 20,000 square miles more, including the city of Warsaw.

After the Treaty of Basel, which secured neutrality to the northern half of Germany, Catherine II., victorious over Turkey and having nothing more to do in Poland, united with England and Austria against France. It was agreed that Russia should send both an army and a fleet, Austria raise 200,000 men, and England contribute $20,000,000, annually toward the expenses of the war. During the summer of 1795, however, little was done. The French still held everything west of the Rhine, and the Austrians watched them from the opposite bank. The strength of both was nearly equal. Suddenly, in September, the French crossed the river, took Düsseldorf and Mannheim, with immense quantities of military stores, and completely laid waste the country in the neighborhood of these two cities, treating the people with the most inhuman barbarity. Then the Austrians rallied, repulsed the French in their turn, and before winter recovered possession of nearly all the western bank.

In January, 1796, an armistice was declared. Spain and Sardinia had already made peace with France, and Austria showed signs of becoming weary of the war. The French Republic, however, found itself greatly strengthened by its military successes. Its minister of war, Carnot, and its ambitious young generals, Bonaparte, Moreau, and Massena, were winning fame and power by the continuance of hostilities, and the system of making the conquered territory pay all the expenses of the war (in some cases much more) was a great advantage to the French national treasury. Thus the war, undertaken by the coalition for the destruction of the French Republic, had only strengthened the latter, which was in the best condition for continuing it at a time when the allies (except, perhaps, England) were discouraged and ready for peace.

The campaign of 1796 was most disastrous to Austria. France had an army under Jourdan on the Lower Rhine, another under Moreau—who had replaced General Pichegru—on the Upper Rhine, and a third under Bonaparte in Italy. Bonaparte led his army from Nice toward Genoa, along the shore of the Mediterranean. Then he suddenly marched northward across the Alps where they are lower, defeated the Sardinians and forced them to make peace, and then without fear for his rear and line of communication, was ready to face the Austrians. As his army looked down into the rich valley of the Po, clothed in April green, Bonaparte addressed his soldiers: "Soldiers, you are naked, badly fed. I wish to lead you among the most fertile plains of the world. Rich provinces, great towns, will be in your power; there you will find honor and glory and riches. Soldiers of Italy, can you be found lacking in honor, courage, or constancy?" He promised them he would give them Milan in four weeks, and he kept his word. Plunder and victory heightened their faith in his splendid military genius. He advanced with irresistible energy, passing the Po and the Adda at Lodi. He overthrew the venerable Venetian republic, and formed new republican states out of the old Italian duchies. The Austrians he drove everywhere before him. By the end of the year 1796 they held only the strong fortress of Mantua.

The French armies on the Rhine were opposed by an Austrian army of equal strength, commanded by the Archduke Charles, a general of considerable talent, but still governed by the military ideas of a former generation. Instead of attacking, he waited to be attacked; but neither Jourdan nor Moreau allowed him to wait long. The former took possession of the eastern bank of the Lower Rhine. When the archduke marched against him Moreau crossed into Baden and seized the passes of the Black Forest. Then the archduke, having compelled Jourdan to fall back, met the latter and was defeated. Jourdan returned a second time, Moreau advanced, and all Baden, Würtemberg, Franconia, and the greater part of Bavaria fell into the hands of the French. These states not only submitted without resistance, but used every exertion to pay enormous contributions to their conquerors. One-fourth of what they gave would have prevented the invasion, and changed the subsequent fate of Germany. Frankfort paid ten millions of florins, Nuremberg three, Bavaria ten, and the other cities and principalities in proportion, besides furnishing enormous quantities of supplies to the French troops. All these countries purchased the neutrality of France by allowing free passage to the latter, and agreeing further to pay heavy monthly contributions toward the expenses of the war. Even Saxony, which had not been invaded, joined in this agreement.

Toward the end of summer the archduke twice defeated Jourdan and forced him to retreat across the Rhine. This rendered Moreau's position in Bavaria untenable. Closely followed by the Austrians, he accomplished without loss that famous retreat through the Black Forest which is considered a greater achievement than many victories in the annals of war. Thus, at the close of the year 1796, all Germany east of the Rhine, plundered, impoverished, and demoralized, was again free from the French. This defeated Bonaparte's plan, which had been to advance from Italy through the Tyrol, effect a junction with Moreau in Bavaria, and then march upon Vienna. Nevertheless, he determined to carry out his portion of it, regardless of the fortunes of the other French armies, and of the contrary orders which the home government sent to him. On February 2, 1797, Mantua surrendered; the Archduke Charles, who had been sent against him, was defeated, and Bonaparte followed with such daring and vigor that by the middle of April he had reached the little town of Leoben, in Styria, only a few days' march from Vienna. Although he had less than 50,000 men, while the archduke still had about 25,000, and the Austrians, Styrians, and Tyrolese, now thoroughly aroused, demanded weapons and leaders, Francis II., instead of encouraging their patriotism and boldly undertaking a movement which might have cut off Bonaparte, began to negotiate for peace. Of course the conqueror dictated his own terms. The preliminaries were settled at once, an armistice followed, and on October 17, 1797, peace was concluded at Campo Formio.

Austria gave Lombardy and Belgium to France, to both of which countries she had a tolerable claim; but she also gave all the territory west of the Rhine, which she had no right to do, even under the constitution of the superannuated "German Empire." On the other hand, Bonaparte gave to Austria Dalmatia, Istria, and nearly all the territory of the Republic of Venice, to which he had not the shadow of a right. He had already conquered and suppressed the Republic of Genoa, so that these two old and illustrious states vanished from the map of Europe only two years after Poland.

Nevertheless, the illusion of a German Empire was kept up, so far as the form was concerned. A congress of all the states was called to meet at Rastatt, in Baden, and confirm the Treaty of Campo Formio. But France had become arrogant through her astonishing success, and in May, 1798, her ambassadors suddenly demanded a number of new concessions, including the annexation of points east of the Rhine, the leveling of the fortress of Ehrenbreitstein, opposite Coblentz, and the possession of the islands at the mouth of the river. At this time Bonaparte was absent on his expedition to Egypt, and only England, chiefly by means of her navy, was carrying on the war with France. The new demands made at the Congress of Rastatt not only prolonged the negotiations, but provoked throughout Europe the idea of another coalition against the French Republic. The year 1798, however, came to an end without any further action, except such as was secretly plotted at various courts.

Early in 1799 the Second Coalition was formed between England, Russia (where Paul I. had succeeded Catherine II. in 1796), Austria, Naples, and Turkey. Spain and Prussia still adhered to the Treaty of Basel of 1795 and refused to join. An Austrian army under the archduke defeated Jourdan in March, while another, supported by Naples, was successful against the French in Italy. Meanwhile the congress continued to sit at Rastatt, in the foolish hope of making peace after war had again begun. The approach of the Austrian troops finally dissolved it; but the two French ambassadors, who left for France on the evening of April 28, were waylaid and murdered near the city by some Austrian hussars. No investigation of this outrage was ever published; the general belief is that the court of Vienna was responsible for it. The act was as mad as it was infamous, for it stirred the entire French people into fury against Germany.

In the spring of 1799 a Russian army commanded by Suvarov arrived in Italy, and in a short time completed the work begun by the Austrians. The Roman Republic was overthrown and Pope Pius VII. restored; all northern Italy, except Genoa, was taken from the French, and then, finding his movements hampered by the jealousy of the Austrian generals, Suvarov crossed the St. Gothard with his army, fighting his way through the terrific gorges of the Alps. To avoid the French General Massena, who had been victorious at Zurich, he was compelled to choose the most lofty and difficult passes, and his march over them was a marvel of daring and endurance. This was the end of his campaign, for the Emperor Paul, suspicious of Austria and becoming more friendly to France, soon afterward recalled him and his troops. During the campaign of this year the English army under the Duke of York had miserably failed in the Netherlands, but the archduke, although no important battle was fought, held the French thoroughly in check along the frontier of the Rhine.

The end of the year, and of the century, brought a great change in the destinies of France. Bonaparte had returned from Egypt, and on November 9 (the "18th Brumaire") by a *coup d'état* backed by an armed force and supported by his personal popularity and reputation, he overthrew the government of the "Directory," and established the Consulate in the place of the republic, with himself as First Consul for ten years. Being now practically dictator, he took matters into his own hands, and his first measure was to propose peace to the coalition, on the basis of the Treaty of Campo Formio. This was rejected by England and Austria, who stubbornly believed that the fortune of the war was at last turning to their side. In Prussia, Frederick William II. had died in November, 1797, and was succeeded by his son, Frederick William III., who was a man of excellent personal qualities, but without either energy, ambitions, or clear intelligence. Bonaparte's policy was simply to keep Prussia neutral, and he found no difficulty in maintaining the peace which had been concluded at Basel five years before. England chiefly took part in the war by means of her navy, and by contributions of money, so that France, with the best generals in the world and soldiers flushed with victory, was only called upon to meet Austria in the field.

At this crisis the Archduke Charles, Austria's single good general, threw up his command on account of the interference of the court of Vienna with his plans. His place was filled by the Archduke John, a boy of nineteen, under whom was an army of 100,000 men, scattered in a long line from the Alps to Frankfort. Moreau easily broke through this barrier, overran Baden and Würtemberg, and was only arrested for a short time by the fortifications of Ulm. While these events were occurring, another Austrian army under Melas besieged Massena in Genoa. Bonaparte collected a new force with such rapidity and secrecy that his plan was not discovered, made a heroic march over the St. Bernard Pass of the Alps in May, and came down upon Italy like an avalanche. Genoa, thousands of whose citizens perished with hunger during the siege, had already surrendered to the Austrians; but when the latter turned to repel Bonaparte they were cut to pieces on the field of Marengo, on June 14, 1800. This magnificent victory gave all northern Italy, as far as the River Mincio, into the hands of the French.

Again Bonaparte offered peace to Austria, on the same basis as before. An armistice was concluded, and Francis II. made signs of accepting the offer of peace, but only that he might quietly recruit his armies. When, therefore, the armistice expired, on November 25, Moreau immediately advanced to attack the new Austrian army of nearly 90,000 men which occupied a position along the River Inn. On December 3 the two met at Hohenlinden, and the French, after a bloody struggle, were completely victorious. There was now, apparently, nothing to prevent Moreau from marching upon Vienna, and the Archduke Charles, who had been sent in all haste to take command of the demoralized Austrians, was compelled to ask for an armistice upon terms very humiliating to the Hapsburg pride.

After all its haughtiness and incompetency, the court of Vienna gratefully accepted such terms as it could get. Francis II. sent one of his ministers, Coblenzl, who met Joseph Bonaparte at Lunéville (in Lorraine), and there, on February 9, 1801, peace was concluded. Its chief provisions were those of the Treaty of Campo Formio: all the territory west of the Rhine, from Basel to the sea, was given to France, together with all northern Italy west of the Adige. The Duke of Modena received part of Baden, and the Duke of Tuscany Salzburg. Other temporal princes of Germany, who lost part or the whole of their territory by the treaty, were compensated by secularizing the dominions of the ecclesiastical rulers, and dividing them among the former. Thus the states governed by archbishops, bishops, abbots, or other clerical dignitaries, nearly one hundred in number, were abolished at one blow, and what little was left of the fabric of the old German Empire fell to pieces. The division of all this territory among the other states gave rise to new difficulties and disputes, which were not settled for two years longer. The diet appointed a special commission to arrange the matter; but inasmuch as Bonaparte, through his minister, Talleyrand, and Alexander I. of Russia (the Emperor Paul having met with a violent death in 1801), intrigued in every possible way to enlarge the smaller German states and prevent the increase of Austria, the final arrangements were made quite as much by the two foreign powers as by the commission of the German diet.

On April 27, 1803, the decree of secularization and partition was issued, changing the map of Germany. Only six free cities were left out of fifty-two—Frankfort, Hamburg, Bremen, Lübeck, Nuremberg, and Augsburg. Prussia received three bishoprics (Hildesheim, Münster, and Paderborn) and a number of abbeys and cities, including Erfurt, a total amounting to four times as much as she had lost on the left bank of the Rhine. Baden was increased to double its former size by the remains of the Palatinate (including Heidelberg and Mannheim), the city of Constance, and a number of abbeys and monasteries. A part of Franconia, with Würzburg and Bamberg, was added to Bavaria. Würtemberg, Hesse-Darmstadt, and Nassau were much enlarged, and most of the other states received smaller additions. At the same time the rulers of Baden, Würtemberg, Hesse-Cassel, and Salzburg were dignified by the new title of "electors"—when they never would be called upon to elect another German emperor!

An impartial study of these events will show that they were caused by the indifference of Prussia to the general interests of Germany, and the utter lack of the commonest political wisdom in Francis II. of Austria and his ministers. The war with France was wantonly undertaken, in the first place; it was then continued with stupid obstinacy after two offers of peace. But except the loss of the left bank of the Rhine, with more than three millions of German inhabitants, Germany, though humiliated, was not yet seriously damaged. The complete overthrow of church authority, the extinction of a multitude of petty states, and the abolition of the special privileges of nearly a thousand "imperial" noble families was an immense gain to the whole country. The influence which Bonaparte exercised in the partition of 1803, though made solely with a view to the political interests of France, produced some very beneficial changes in Germany. In regard to religion, the chief electors were now equally divided, five being Catholic and five Protestant; while the diet of princes, instead of having a Catholic majority of twelve, as heretofore, acquired a Protestant majority of twenty-two.

France was now the ruling power on the Continent of Europe.

Prussia preserved a timid neutrality, Austria was powerless, the new republics in Holland, Switzerland, and Italy were wholly subjected to French influence, Spain, Denmark, and Russia were friendly, and even England, after the overthrow of Pitt's ministry, was persuaded to make peace with Bonaparte in 1802. The same year the latter had himself declared First Consul for life, and became absolute master of the destinies of France. A new quarrel with England soon broke out, and this gave him a pretext for sending General Mortier with 12,000 men to seize Hanover and occupy it. Neither the Hanoverians nor any of the Germans seriously tried by force of arms to prevent this unwarranted occupation. The French troops overran the country easily in a few days, and plundered to the amount of twenty-six million thalers. Prussia and the other German states quietly looked on and did nothing.

In March, 1804, the First Consul sent a force across the Rhine into Baden, seized the Duke d'Enghien, a fugitive Bourbon prince, carried him into France, and there had him shot. This outrage provoked a general cry of indignation throughout Europe, and strengthened the growing feeling that no faith could be placed in a ruler who would thus kidnap a prince from neutral territory and then murder an innocent man. Two months afterward, on May 18, Bonaparte assumed the title of Napoleon, Emperor of the French. The Italian republics were changed into a kingdom of Italy, and that period of arrogant and selfish personal government commenced which brought monarchs and nations to his feet, and finally made him a fugitive and a prisoner. On August 11, 1804, Francis II. imitated him, by taking the title of "Emperor of Austria," in order to preserve his existing rank, whatever changes might afterward come.

England, Austria, and Russia were now more than ever determined to cripple the increasing power of Napoleon. Much time was spent in endeavoring to persuade Prussia to join the movement, but Frederick William III. not only refused, but sent an army to prevent the Russian troops from crossing Prussian territory, on their way to join the Austrians. By the summer of 1805 the Third Coalition, composed of the three powers already named and Sweden, was formed, and a plan adopted for bringing nearly 400,000 soldiers into the field against France. Although the secret had been well kept, it was revealed before the coalition was quite prepared, and Napoleon was ready for the emergency. He had collected an army of 200,000 men at Boulogne for the invasion of England; giving up the latter design, he marched rapidly into southern Germany, procured the alliance of Baden, Würtemberg, and Bavaria, with 40,000 more troops, and thus gained the first advantage before the Russian and Austrian armies had united.

The fortress of Ulm, held by the Austrian General Mack, with 25,000 men, surrendered on October 17. The French pressed forward, overcame the opposition of a portion of the allied armies along the Danube, and on November 13 entered Vienna. Francis II. and his family had fled to Presburg. The Archduke Charles hastening from Italy, was in Styria with a small force, and a combined Russian and Austrian army of nearly 100,000 men was in Moravia. Prussia threatened to join the coalition, because the neutrality of her territory had been violated by Bernadotte, in marching from Hanover to join Napoleon. The allies, although surprised and disgracefully defeated, were far from appreciating the courage and skill of their enemy, and still believed they could overcome him. Napoleon pretended to avoid a battle and thereby drew them on to meet him in the field. On December 2 at Austerlitz, the "Battle of the Three Emperors" (as the Germans call it) occurred, and by the close of that day the allies had lost 15,000 killed and wounded, 20,000 prisoners, and 200 cannon.

Two days after the battle Francis II. came personally to Napoleon and begged for an armistice, which was granted. The victorious Emperor of the French took up his quarters in the palace of the Hapsburgs, at Schönbrunn, as a conqueror, and waited for the conclusion of a treaty of peace, which was signed at Presburg on December 26, 1805. Austria was forced to give up Venice to France, Tyrol to Bavaria, and some smaller territory to Baden and Würtemberg; to accept the policy of France in Italy, Holland, and Switzerland, and to recognize Bavaria and Würtemberg as independent kingdoms of Napoleon's creation. All that she received in return was the archbishopric of Salzburg. She also agreed to pay fifty millions of francs to France, and to permit the formation of a new confederation of the smaller German states, which should be placed under the protectorship of Napoleon. The latter lost no time in carrying out his plan. By July, 1806, the *Rheinbund* (Confederation of the Rhine) was entered into by seventeen states, which formed, in combination, a third power, independent of either Austria or Prussia.

Immediately afterward, on August 6, 1806, Francis II. laid down his title of "Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire of the German Nation," and the political corpse, long since dead, was finally buried. Just a thousand years had elapsed since the time of Charlemagne. The power and influence of the empire had reached their culmination under the Hohenstaufens, but even then the smaller rulers were undermining its foundations. It existed for a few centuries longer as a system which was one-fourth fact and three-fourths tradition. During the Thirty Years' War it practically perished, and the Hapsburgs, after that, only wore the ornaments and trappings it left behind. The German people were never further from being a nation than at the commencement of this century; but most of them still clung to the superstition of an empire, until the compulsory act of Francis II. showed them, at last, that there was none.

PART V

THE NEW EMPIRE—ITS RISE, POWER AND DEFEAT. 1806-1918

Chapter XXXV

GERMANY UNDER NAPOLEON. 1806-1814

AFTER the Peace of Presburg there was nothing to prevent Napoleon from carrying out his plan of dividing the greater part of Europe among the members of his own family and among the marshals of his armies. He gave the kingdom of Naples to his brother Joseph; appointed his stepson, Eugene Beauharnais, viceroy of Italy, and married him to the daughter of Maximilian I. (formerly elector, now king) of Bavaria; made a kingdom of Holland, and gave it to his brother Louis; gave the duchy of Jülich, Cleves, and Berg to Murat, and married Stephanie Beauharnais, the niece of the Empress Josephine, to the son of the Grand Duke of Baden. There was no longer any thought of disputing his will in any of the smaller German states, the princes were as submissive as he could have desired, and the people had too long been powerless to dream of resistance.

The Confederation of the Rhine, therefore, was constructed just as France desired. Bavaria, Würtemberg, Baden, Hesse-Darmstadt, and Nassau united with twelve small principalities—the whole embracing a population of thirteen millions—in a confederation, which accepted Napoleon as protector and agreed to maintain an army of 63,000 men, at the disposal of France. This arrangement divided the German Empire into three parts, one of which (Austria) had just been conquered, while another (Prussia) had lost all its former prestige by its weak and cowardly policy. Napoleon was now the recognized master of the third portion, the action of which was regulated by a diet held at Frankfort. In order to make the union simpler and more manageable, all the independent countships and baronies within its limits were abolished, and the seventeen states were thus increased by an aggregate territory of about 12,000 square miles. Bavaria took possession, without more ado, of the free cities of Nuremberg and Augsburg.

Prussia by this time had agreed with Napoleon to give up Anspach and Bayreuth to Bavaria, and receive Hanover instead.

This provoked the enmity of England, the only remaining nation which was friendly to Prussia. The French armies were still quartered in southern Germany, violating at will not only the laws of the land, but the laws of nations. A bookseller named Palm, in Nuremberg, who had in his possession some pamphlets opposing Napoleon's schemes, was seized by order of the latter, tried by court-martial, and shot. This brutal and despotic act was not at once resented by the German princes, but it aroused the slumbering spirit of the people. The Prussians, especially, began to grow very impatient of their pusillanimous government; but Frederick William III. did nothing, until in August, 1806, he discovered that Napoleon was trying to purchase peace with England and Russia by offering Hanover to the former and Prussian Poland to the latter. Then he decided for war, at the very time when he was compelled to meet the victorious power of France alone!

Napoleon, as usual, was on the march before his enemy was even properly organized. He was already in Franconia, and in a few days stood at the head of an army of 200,000 men, part of whom were furnished by the Confederation of the Rhine. Prussia, assisted only by Saxony and Weimar, had 150,000, commanded by Prince Hohenlohe and the Duke of Brunswick, who hardly reached the bases of the Thuringian Mountains when they were met by the French and hurled back. On the tableland near Jena and Auerstädt a double battle was fought on October 14, 1806. At Jena Napoleon simply crushed and scattered to the winds the army of Prince Hohenlohe. At Auerstädt Marshal Davout, after some heavy fighting, defeated the Duke of Brunswick, who was mortally wounded. Then followed a season of panic and cowardice which now seems incredible. The French overwhelmed Prussia, and almost every defense fell without resistance as they approached. The strong fortress of Erfurt, with 14,000 men, surrendered the day after the battle of Jena; the still stronger fortress city of Magdeburg, with 24,000 men, opened its gates before a gun was fired! Spandau capitulated as soon as asked, on October 24, and Davout entered Berlin the same day. Only General Blücher, more than sixty years old, cut his way through the French with 10,000 men, and for a time gallantly held them at bay in Lübeck; and the young officers, Gneisenau and Schill, kept the fortress of Colberg, on the Baltic, where they were steadily besieged until the war was over.

When Napoleon entered Berlin in triumph, on November 27, he found nearly the whole population completely cowed and ready to acknowledge his authority. Seven ministers of the Prussian Government took the oath of allegiance to him, and agreed at once to give up all of the kingdom west of the Elbe for the sake of peace! Frederick William III., who had fled to Königsberg, refused to confirm their action, and entered into an alliance with Alexander I. of Russia to continue the war. Napoleon, meanwhile, had made peace with Saxony, which, after paying heavy contributions and joining the Confederation of the Rhine, was raised by him to the rank of a kingdom. At the same time he encouraged a revolt in Prussian Poland, got possession of Silesia, and kept Austria neutral by skillful diplomacy.

Pressing eastward during the winter, the French army, 140,000 strong, met the Russians and Prussians on February 8, 1807, in the murderous battle of Eylau, after which, because its result was undecided, Napoleon concluded a truce of several months. Frederick William appointed a new ministry, with the fearless and patriotic statesmen, Hardenberg and Stein, who formed a fresh alliance with Russia, which was soon joined by England and Sweden. Nevertheless, it was almost impossible to reinforce the Prussian army, and Alexander I. made no great exertions to increase the Russian, while Napoleon, with all Prussia in his rear, was constantly receiving fresh troops. Early in June he resumed hostilities, and on the 14th, with a much superior force, so completely defeated the allies in the battle of Friedland that they were driven over the River Memel into Russian territory.

The Russians immediately concluded an armistice. Napoleon had a spectacular interview with Alexander I. on a raft in the River Memel, at Tilsit, and acquired such an immediate influence over the enthusiastic, fantastic nature of the czar that he became a friend and practically an ally. The next day there was another interview, at which Frederick William III. was also present; his wife, the beautiful Queen Louise, a woman of noble and heroic character, whom Napoleon had vilely slandered, was persuaded to accompany him, but only subjected herself to new humiliation. Her entreaties that Prussia might be spared were rudely rejected by Napoleon. He caused the patriotic Hardenberg to be dismissed from the Prussian ministry, and gave his successor a completed document, to be signed without discussion.

By this Peace of Tilsit (July, 1807) Prussia lost very nearly the half of her territory. Her population was diminished from 9,743,000 to 4,938,000. A new "Grand Duchy of Warsaw" was formed by Napoleon out of her Polish acquisitions. The contributions which had been levied and which Prussia was still forced to pay amounted to a total sum of three hundred million thalers, and she was obliged to maintain a French army in her diminished territory until the last farthing should be paid over. Russia, on the other hand, lost nothing, but received a part of Polish Prussia. A new kingdom of Westphalia was formed out of Brunswick and parts of Prussia and Hanover, and Napoleon's brother, Jerome, was made king. In America Jerome had married an American lady, Miss Elizabeth Patterson of Baltimore, but he was now compelled to renounce her, and marry the daughter of the new King of Würtemberg, although, as a Catholic, he could not do this without a special dispensation from the Pope, and Pius VII. refused to give one. Thus he became a bigamist, according to the laws of the Roman Church. Jerome was a weak and licentious individual and was heartily hated by his two millions of German subjects during his six years' rule in Cassel.

Frederick William III. was at last stung by his misfortunes into the adoption of another and manlier policy. He called Stein to the head of his ministry and allowed him to introduce reforms for the purpose of assisting, strengthening, and developing the character of the people. But 150,000 French troops still fed like locusts upon the substance of Prussia, and there was an immense amount of poverty and suffering. The French commanders plundered outrageously and acted with shameless brutality. But this was not the end of the degradation. Napoleon, at the climax of his power, having (without exaggeration) the whole Continent of Europe under his feet, demanded that Prussia should join the Confederation of the Rhine, reduce her standing army to 42,000 men, and, in case of necessity, furnish France with troops against Austria. The temporary courage of the king melted away. He signed a treaty on September 8, 1808, without the knowledge of Stein, granting nearly everything Napoleon claimed—thus compelling the patriotic statesman to resign, and making what was left of Prussia tributary to the designs of France.

Napoleon then held a so-called congress at Erfurt, at which all the German rulers except the Emperor of Austria were present, but the decisions were made by himself, with the connivance of Alexander I. of Russia. The latter received Finland and the Danubian principalities. Napoleon simply carried out his own personal policy. He made his brother Joseph king of Spain, gave Naples to his brother-in-law, Murat, and soon afterward annexed the States of the Church, in Italy, to France, abolishing the temporal sovereignty of the Pope. Every one of the smaller German states had already joined the Confederation of the Rhine, and the diet by which they were governed abjectly obeyed his will. Princes, nobles, officials, and authors vied with each other in doing homage to him. Even the battles of Jena and Friedland were celebrated by popular festivals in the capitals of the other states. The people of southern Germany, especially, rejoiced over the shame and suffering of their brethren in the north. Ninety German authors dedicated books to Napoleon, and the newspapers became contemptible in their servile praises of his rule.

Austria, always energetic at the wrong time and weak when energy was necessary, prepared for war, relying on the help of Prussia and possibly of Russia. Napoleon had been called to Spain, where a part of the people, supported by Wellington, with an English force, in Portugal, was making a gallant resistance to the French rule. A few patriotic and courageous men all over Germany began to consult together concerning the best means for the liberation of the country. The Prussian ex-minister, Baron Stein, the philosopher Fichte, the statesman and poet Arndt, the generals Gneisenau and Scharnhorst, the historian Niebuhr, and also the Austrian minister, Count Stadion, used every effort to increase and extend this movement; but there was no German prince, except the young Duke of Brunswick, ready or willing to act.

The Tyrolese, who are still the most Austrian of Austrians, and the most Catholic of Catholics, organized a revolt against the French-Bavarian rule early in 1809. This was the first purely popular movement in Germany which had occurred since the revolt of the Austrian peasants against Ferdinand II. nearly two hundred years before. The Tyrolese leaders were Andreas Hofer, a hunter named Speckbacher, and a monk named Haspinger; their troops were peasants and mountaineers. The plot was so well organized that the Alps were speedily cleared of the enemy, and on April 13 Hofer captured Innsbruck, which he held for Austria. When the French and Bavarian troops entered the mountain passes they were picked off by skillful riflemen or crushed by rocks and trees rolled down upon them. The daring of the Tyrolese produced a stirring effect throughout Austria. For the first time the people came forward as volunteers to be enrolled in the army, and the Archduke Charles in a short time had a force of 300,000 men at his disposal.

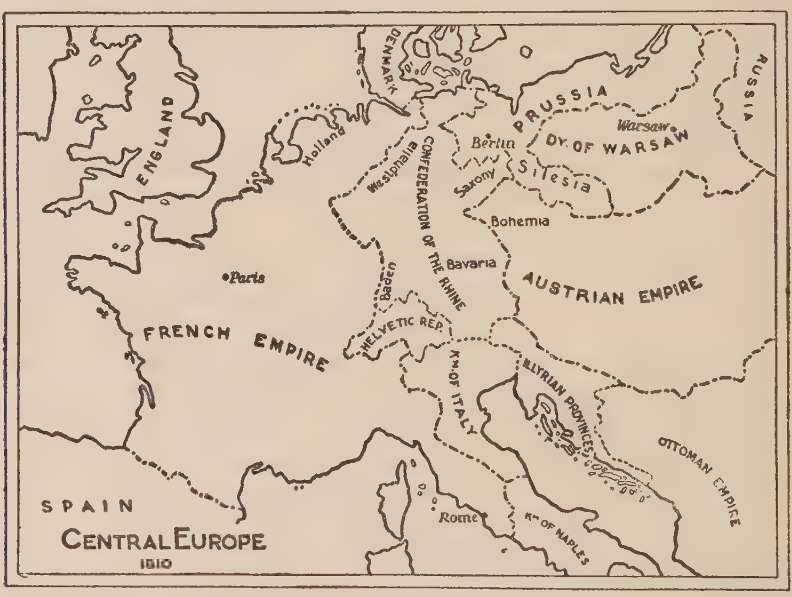
Napoleon returned from Spain at the first news of the impending war. As the Confederation of the Rhine did not dream of disobedience, as Prussia was crippled, and the sentimental friendship of Alexander I. had not yet grown cold, he raised an army of 180,000 men and entered Bavaria by April 9. The archduke was not prepared. His large force had been divided and stationed according to a plan which might have been very successful if Napoleon had been willing to respect it. He lost three battles in succession; the last, at Eckmühl on April 22, obliging him to give up Ratisbon and retreat into Bohemia. The second Austrian army, which had been victorious over the Viceroy Eugene in Italy, was instantly recalled, but it was too late; there were only 30,000 men on the southern bank of the Danube, between the French and Vienna.

The movement in Tyrol was imitated in Prussia by Major Schill, one of the defenders of Colberg in 1807. His heroism had given him great popularity, and he was untiring in his efforts to incite the people to revolt. The secret association of patriotic men, already referred to, which was called the *Tugendbund,* or "League of Virtue," encouraged him so far as it was able; and when he entered Berlin at the head of four squadrons of hussars, immediately after the news of Hofer's success, he was received with such enthusiasm that he imagined the moment had come for arousing Prussia. Marching out of the city, as if for the usual cavalry exercise, he addressed his troops in a fiery speech, revealed to them his plans and inspired them with equal confidence. With his little band he took Halle, besieged Bernburg, was victorious in a number of small battles against the increasing forces of the French, but at the end of a month was compelled to retreat to Stralsund. The city was stormed, and he fell in resisting the assault; the French captured and shot twelve of his officers. The fame of his exploits helped to fire the German heart; the courage of the people returned, and they began to grow restless and indignant under their shame.

By May 13 Napoleon had entered Vienna and taken up his quarters in the palace of Schönbrunn. The Archduke Charles was at the same time rapidly approaching with an army of 75,000 men, and Napoleon, who had 90,000, hastened to throw a bridge across the Danube, below the city, in order to meet him before he could be reinforced. On the 21st, however, the archduke began the attack before the whole French army had crossed, and the desperate battle of Aspern followed. After two days of bloody fighting the French fell back upon the Island of Lobau, and their bridge was destroyed. This was Napoleon's first defeat in Germany, but it was dearly purchased: the loss on each side was about 24,000. Napoleon issued flaming bulletins of victory which deceived the German people for a time, meanwhile ordering new troops to be forwarded with all possible haste. He deceived the archduke by a heavy cannonade, rapidly constructed six bridges farther down the river, crossed with his whole army, and July 6 fought the battle of Wagram, which ended with the defeat and retreat of the Austrians.

An armistice followed, and the war was concluded on October 14 by the Peace of Vienna. Francis I. was compelled to give up Salzburg and some adjoining territory to Bavaria; Galicia to Russia and the grand duchy of Warsaw; and Carniola, Croatia, and Dalmatia with Trieste to the kingdom of Italy—a total loss of 3,500,000 of population. He further agreed to pay a contribution of eighty-five millions of francs to France, and was persuaded, shortly afterward, to give the hand of his daughter, Maria Louisa, to Napoleon, who had meanwhile divorced himself from Empress Josephine. The Tyrolese, who had been encouraged by promises of help from Vienna, refused to believe that they were betrayed and given up. Hofer continued his struggle with success after the conclusion of peace, until near the close of the year, when the French and Bavarians returned in force, and the movement was crushed. He hid for two months among the mountains, then was betrayed by a monk, captured, and carried in chains to Mantua. Here he was tried by a French court-martial and shot on February 20, 1810. Francis II. might have saved his life, but he made no attempt to do it. Thus, in north and south, Schill and Hofer perished, unsustained by their kings; yet their deeds remained as an inspiration to the whole German people.

During the summer of 1809 the Duke of Brunswick, whose land Napoleon had added to Jerome's kingdom of Westphalia, made a daring attempt to drive the French from northern Germany. He had joined a small Austrian army, sent to operate in Saxony, and when it was recalled after the battle of Eckmühl he made a desperate effort to reconquer Brunswick with a force of only 2000 volunteers. The latter dressed in black and wore a skull and crossbones on their caps. The duke took Halberstadt, reached Brunswick, then cut his way through the German-French forces closing in upon him, and came to the shore of the North Sea, where, it was expected, an English army would land. He and his troops escaped in small vessels. The English, 40,000 strong, landed on the island of Walcheren (on the coast of Belgium), where they lay idle until driven home by sickness.



For three years after the Peace of Vienna Napoleon was all-powerful in Germany. He was married to Maria Louisa on April 2, 1810; his son, the King of Rome, was born the following March, and Austria, where Metternich was now minister instead of Count Stadion, followed the policy of France. All Germany accepted the "Continental Blockade," which cut off its commerce with England. The standing armies of Austria and Prussia were reduced to one-fourth of their ordinary strength; the King of

Prussia, who had lived for two years in Königsberg, was ordered to return to Berlin, and the French ministers at all the smaller courts became the practical rulers of the states. In 1810 the kingdom of Holland was taken from Louis Bonaparte and annexed to the French Empire; then northern Germany, with Bremen, Hamburg, and Lübeck, was annexed in like manner, and the same fate was evidently intended for the states of the Confederation of the Rhine, if the despotic selfishness of Napoleon had not put an end to his marvelous success. The King of Prussia was next compelled to suppress the "League of Virtue." Germany was filled with French spies (many of them native Germans), and every expression of patriotic sentiment was reported as treason to France.

In the territory of the Confederation of the Rhine there was, however, very little real patriotism among the people. In Austria the people were still kept down by the iron rule of the Hapsburgs. Only in the smaller Saxon duchies, and in Prussia, the idea of resistance was fostered, though in spite of Frederick William III Indeed, the temporary removal of the king was for a while secretly advocated. Hardenberg and Scharnhorst did their utmost to prepare the people for the struggle which they knew would come. The former introduced new laws, based on the principle of the equality of all citizens before the law, their equal right to development, protection, and official service. Scharnhorst, the son of a peasant, trained the people for military duty, in defiance of France; he kept the number of soldiers at 42,000, in accordance with the treaty, but as fast as they were well-drilled he sent them home and put fresh recruits in their place. In this manner he gradually prepared 150,000 men for the army.

Alexander I. of Russia had by this time lost his sentimental friendship for Napoleon. The seizure by the latter of the territory of the Duke of Oldenburg, who was his near relation, greatly offended him. He grew tired of submitting to the Continental Blockade, and in 1811 adopted commercial laws which amounted to its abandonment. Then Napoleon showed his own overwhelming arrogance; and his course once more illustrated the abject condition of Germany. Every ruler saw that a great war was coming, and had nearly a year's time for decision; but all submitted! Early in 1812 the colossal plan was put into action. Prussia agreed to furnish 20,000 soldiers, Austria 30,000, and the Confederation of the Rhine, which comprised the rest of Germany, was called upon for 150,000. France furnished more than 300,000, and this enormous military force was set in motion against Russia, which was at the time unable to raise half that number of troops. In May Napoleon and Maria Louisa held a grand court in Dresden, which a crowd of reigning princes attended, and where even Francis I. and Frederick William III. were treated rather as vassals than as equals. This was the climax of Napoleon's success. Regardless of distance, climate, lack of supplies, and all the other impediments to his will, he pushed forward with an army greater than Europe had seen since the days of Attila, but from which only one man, horse, and cannon out of every ten returned.

After holding a grand review on the battlefield of Friedland, he crossed the Niemen and entered Russia on June 24, 1812, met the Russians in battle at Smolensk on August 16-17, and after great losses continued his march toward Moscow through a country which had been purposely laid waste, and where great numbers of his soldiers perished from hunger and fatigue. On September 7 the Russian army of 120,000 men met him on the field of Borodino, where occurred the most desperate battle of all his wars. At the close of the fight 80,000 dead and wounded (about an equal number on each side) lay upon the plain. The Russians retreated, repulsed but not conquered, and on September 14 Napoleon entered Moscow. The city was deserted by its inhabitants. All goods and treasures which could be speedily removed had been taken away, and the next evening flames broke out in a number of places. The conflagration spread so that within a week four-fifths of the city was destroyed. Napoleon was forced to leave the Kremlin and escape through burning streets; and thus the French army was left without winter quarters and provisions.

After offering terms of peace in vain, and losing a month of precious time in waiting, nothing was left for Napoleon but to commence his disastrous retreat. Cut off from the warmer southern route by the Russians on October 24, his army, diminishing day by day, endured all the horrors of the northern winter, and lost so many in the fearful passage of the Beresina and from the constant attacks of the Cossacks, that not more than 30,000 men, famished, frozen, and mostly without arms, crossed the Prussian frontier about the middle of December. After reaching Wilna, Napoleon had hurried on alone, in advance. His passage through Germany was like a flight, and he was safe in Paris before the terrible failure of his campaign was generally known throughout Europe.

When Frederick William III. agreed to furnish 20,000 troops to France, his best generals—Blücher, Scharnhorst, Gneisenau—and three hundred officers resigned. The command of the Prussian contingent was given to General York, who was sent to Riga during the march to Moscow, and escaped the horrors of the retreat. When the fate of the campaign was decided, he left the French with his remaining 17,000 Prussian soldiers, concluded a treaty of neutrality with the Russian General Diebitsch, called an assembly of the people together in Königsberg, and boldly ordered that all men capable of bearing arms should be mustered into the army. Frederick William, in Berlin, disavowed this act, but the Prussian people were ready for it. The excitement became so great that the men who had influence with the king were so urgent that he should take a hand of open resistance to France that the hesitating Frederick William at last gave way. His court was removed to Breslau and an alliance was entered into with Alexander I., by which the czar agreed to continue in arms against Napoleon until Prussia should have regained her former possessions or their equivalent. Finally, on March 17, 1813, the King of Prussia issued the famous proclamations "To my People" and "To my Army," in which with stirring words he voiced the growing patriotism and called upon them to choose between victory and ruin. The measures which York had adopted were proclaimed for all Prussia, and the patriotic schemes of Stein and Hardenberg, so long thwarted by the king's weakness, were thus suddenly carried into action.

The effect was astonishing, when we consider how little real liberty the people had enjoyed. But they had been educated in patriotic sentiments by another power than the government. For years the works of the great German authors had become familiar to them. Klopstock taught them to be proud of their race and name. Schiller taught them resistance to oppression. Arndt and Körner gave them songs which stirred them more than the sound of drum and trumpet, and thousands of high-hearted young men mingled with them and inspired them with new courage and new hopes. Within five months Prussia had 270,000 soldiers under arms, part of whom were organized to repel the coming armies of Napoleon, while the remainder undertook the siege of the many Prussian fortresses which were still garrisoned by the French. All classes of the people took part in this uprising. The professors followed the students, the educated men stood side by side with the peasants, mothers gave their only sons, and the women sent all their gold and jewels to the treasury and wore ornaments of iron. The young poet, Theodor Körner, not only aroused the people with his fiery songs, but fought in the "free corps" of Lützow, and finally gave his life for his country. The *Turner,* or gymnasts, inspired by their teacher Jahn, went as a body into the ranks, and even many women disguised themselves and enlisted as soldiers.

With the exception of Mecklenburg and Dessau, the states of the Confederation of the Rhine still held to France. Saxony and Bavaria especially distinguished themselves by their abject fidelity to Napoleon. Austria remained neutral, and whatever influence she exercised was against Prussia. But Sweden, under the Crown Prince Bernadotte (Napoleon's former marshal) joined the movement, with the condition of obtaining Norway in case of success. The operations were delayed by the slowness of the Russians and the disagreement, or perhaps jealousy, of the various generals. Napoleon made good use of the time to prepare himself for the coming struggle. Although France was already exhausted, he enforced a merciless conscription, taking young boys and old men, until, with the German soldiers still at his disposal, he had a force of nearly 500,000 men.

The campaign opened well for Prussia. Hamburg and Lübeck were delivered from the French, and on April 5 the Viceroy Eugene was defeated at Möckern (near Leipzig) with heavy losses. The first great battle was fought at Lützen, on May 2, on the same field where Gustavus Adolphus fell in 1632. The Russians and Prussians, with 95,000 men, held Napoleon, with 120,000, at bay for a whole day, and then fell back in good order, after a defeat which encouraged instead of dispiriting the people. The greatest loss was the death of Scharnhorst, who did not live to see the glorious fruits of his silent and self-sacrificing labors. Shortly afterward Napoleon occupied Dresden, and it became evident that Saxony would be the principal theater of war. A second battle of two days took place on May 20-21, in which, although the French outnumbered the Germans and Russians two to one, they barely achieved a victory. The courage and patriotism of the people were now beginning to tell, especially as Napoleon's troops were mostly young, physically weak, and inexperienced. In order to give them rest he offered an armistice on June 4, an act which he afterward declared to have been the greatest mistake of his life. It was prolonged until August 10, and gave the Germans time both to rest and recruit, and to strengthen themselves by an alliance with Austria.

Francis I. judged that the time had come to recover what he had lost, especially as England formally joined Prussia and Russia on June 14. A fortnight afterward an agreement was entered into between the two latter powers and Austria, that peace should be offered to Napoleon provided he would give up northern Germany, the Dalmatian provinces, and the grand duchy of Warsaw. He rejected the offer, and so insulted Metternich during an interview in Dresden that the latter became his bitter enemy thenceforth. The end of all the negotiations was that Austria declared war on August 12, and both sides prepared at once for a final and desperate struggle. The Allies now had 800,000 men, divided into three armies, one under Schwarzenberg confronting the French center in Saxony, one under Blücher in Silesia, and a third in the north under Bernadotte. The last of these generals seemed reluctant to act against his former leader, and his participation was of little real service. Napoleon had 550,000 men, less scattered than the Germans, and all under the government of his single will. He was still, therefore, a formidable foe.

Just sixteen days after the armistice came to an end the old Blücher won a victory as splendid as many of Napoleon's. Blücher was ever active, pursuing, withdrawing, turning day into night and night into day, but always sticking close to the enemy. Each march and countermarch cost him many lives and the soldiers suffered terribly in the rain-sodden, shelterless camps; and, worst of all, some of his subordinates lost faith in him and began to complain. But finally he caught Marshal Macdonald on the banks of a stream called the Katzbach, in Silesia, and defeated him with the loss of 12,000 killed and wounded, 18,000 prisoners and 103 cannon. From the circumstance of his having cried out to his men: "Forward! Forward!" in the crisis of the battle, Blücher was thenceforth called "Marshal Forward" by the soldiers. Five days before this the Prussian general, Bülow, was victorious over Oudinot at Grossbeeren, within ten miles of Berlin; and four days afterward the French General Vandamme, with 40,000 men, was cut to pieces by the Austrians and Prussians at Kulm on the southern frontier of Saxony. Thus within a month Napoleon lost one-fourth of his whole force, while the fresh hope and enthusiasm of the German people immediately supplied the losses on their side. It is true that Schwarzenberg had been severely repulsed in an attack on Dresden on August 27, but this had been so speedily followed by Vandamme's defeat that it produced no discouragment.

The month of September opened with another Prussian victory. On the 6th Bülow defeated Ney at Dennewitz, taking 15,000 prisoners and 80 cannon. This change of fortune seems to have bewildered Napoleon. Instead of his former promptness and rapidity, he spent a month in Dresden trying to entice Blücher or Schwarzenberg to give battle. They, meanwhile, were gradually drawing nearer to each other and to Bernadotte, and their final junction was effected without any serious movement to prevent it on Napoleon's part. Blücher's passage of the Elbe on October 3 compelled Napoleon to leave Dresden with his army and take up a new position in Leipzig, where he arrived on the 13th. The Allies instantly closed in upon him. There was a fierce but indecisive cavalry fight on the 14th, the 15th was spent in preparations on both sides, and on the 16th the great "Battle of the Nations" began.

Napoleon had about 190,000 men, the Allies 300,000. Both were posted along lines many miles in extent, stretching over the open plain, from the north and east around to the south of Leipzig, from which the battle takes its name. The first day's fight really comprised three distinct battles, two of which were won by the French and one by Blücher. During the afternoon a terrific charge of cavalry under Murat broke the center of the Allies, and Frederick William and Alexander I. narrowly escaped capture. Schwarzenberg, at the head of a body of Cossacks and Austrian hussars, repulsed the charge, and night came without any positive result. Napoleon sent offers of peace, but they were not answered, and the Allies thereby gained a day for reinforcements. On the morning of the 18th the battle was resumed. All day long the earth trembled under the discharge of more than a thousand cannon, the flames of nine or ten burning villages heated the air, and from dawn until sunset the immense hosts carried on a number of separate and desperate battles at different points along the line. Napoleon had his station on a mound near a windmill. His center held its position, in spite of terrible losses, but both his wings were driven back. Bernadotte did not appear on the field until four in the afternoon, but about 4000 Saxons and other Germans went over from the French to the Allies during the day, and the demoralizing effect of this desertion probably influenced Napoleon quite as much as his material losses. He gave orders for an instant retreat, which was commenced on the night of the 18th. His army was reduced to 100,000 men. The Allies had lost, in killed and wounded, about 50,000.

All Germany was electrified by this victory; from the Baltic to the Alps the land rang with rejoicings. The people considered that they had won this great battle, and that they had helped in the "liberation" of Germany from French domination. It was, in fact, as crushing a blow for France as Jena had been to Prussia or Austerlitz to Austria. On the morning of October 19 the Allies began a storm upon Leipzig, which was still held by Marshal Macdonald and Prince Poniatowsky, to cover Napoleon's retreat. By noon the city was entered at several gates; the French, in their haste, blew up the bridge over the Elster River before a great part of their own troops had crossed, and Poniatowsky, with hundreds of others, was drowned in attempting to escape. Among the prisoners was the King of Saxony, who had stood by Napoleon until the last moment. In the afternoon Alexander I. and Frederick William rode proudly into Leipzig, and were received as deliverers by the people.

Yet this great victory was not followed up as it might have been. Disunion reigned in the camp of the Allies. Schwarzenberg had taken but few precautions for cutting off his great enemy's retreat; Russia and Prussia wished to pursue Napoleon even to Paris; but England and Austria thought that his punishment had already been sufficient. Metternich, the new Austrian minister, was afraid the balance of power would be overthrown in Europe were Napoleon to be completely ruined. So Napoleon was allowed leisure to continue his march toward France, by way of Naumburg, Erfurt, and Fulda. He lost thousands by desertion and disease, but met with no serious interference until he reached Hanau, near Frankfort. At almost the last moment (October 14) Maximilian I. of Bavaria had deserted France and joined the Allies. One of his generals, Wrede, with about 55,000 Bavarians and Austrians, marched northward, and at Hanau intercepted the French. Napoleon, not caring to engage in a battle, contented himself with cutting his way through Wrede's army, on October 25. He crossed the Rhine and reached France with less than 70,000 men, without encountering further resistence.

Jerome Bonaparte fled from his kingdom of Westphalia immediately after the battle of Leipzig. Würtemberg joined the Allies, the Confederation of the Rhine dissolved, and the artificial structure which Napoleon had created fell to pieces. The Allies were at last able to cross the Rhine and set foot on French soil. They formed three great armies: One, under Bülow, was sent into Holland to overthrow the French rule there; another, under Schwarzenberg, marched through Switzerland into Burgundy, about the end of December, hoping to meet with Wellington somewhere in central France; and the third under Blücher, which had been delayed longest by the doubt and hesitation of the sovereigns, crossed the Rhine at three points, from Coblentz to Mannheim, on the night of New Year, 1814. The subjection of Germany to France was over. Only the garrisons of a number of fortresses remained, but these were already besieged, and they surrendered one by one in the course of the next few months.

Chapter XXXVI

THE WAR OF LIBERATION; REACTION. 1814-1848

NAPOLEON'S genius was never more brilliantly manifested than during the slow advance of the Allies from the Rhine to Paris, in the first three months of the year 1814. He had not expected an invasion before the spring, and was taken by surprise; but with all the courage and intrepidity of his younger years he collected an army of 100,000 men and marched against Blücher, who had already reached Brienne. In a battle on January 29, he was victorious, but a second on February 1 compelled him to retreat. Instead of following up this advantage, the three monarchs began to consult. They rejected Blücher's demand for a union of the armies and an immediate march on Paris, and ordered him to follow the River Marne in four divisions, while Schwarzenberg advanced by a more southerly route. This was just what Napoleon wanted. He hurled himself upon the divided Prussian forces, and in five successive battles, from February 10 to 14, defeated and drove them back. Then, rapidly turning southward, he defeated a part of Schwarzenberg's army at Montereau on the 18th, and compelled the latter to retreat.

The Allies now offered peace, granting to France the boundaries of 1792, which included Savoy, Lorraine, and Alsatia. But Napoleon was so elated by his victories that he rejected the offer. His old national pride, so nearly extinguished, flamed up anew. Humble enough shortly before, he now recovered all his assurance and even spoke of returning to the Vistula. This put a check on the indecision and discord among the Allies. At last they allowed Blücher to have his way and march in a straight line direct on Paris. Battle after battle followed. Napoleon disputed every inch of ground with the most marvelous energy, but even his victories were disasters, for he had no means of replacing the troops he lost. The last fight took place at the gates of Paris, on March 30, and the next day at noon the three sovereigns of Russia, Prussia, and Austria made their triumphal entrance into the city.

After entering Paris the Allies compelled Napoleon to sign an act of abdication, at Fontainebleau, on April 11; and then with great folly they allowed him still to reign as a sovereign prince on the little island of Elba with the title of emperor, with a retinue of officers, and with a standing army of four hundred men. It was this mistake which made necessary the battle of Waterloo a year later. His wife, Maria Louisa, received the duchy of Parma, and the other Bonapartes were allowed to retain the title of prince, with an income of 2,500,000 francs. One million francs was given to the ex-Empress Josephine, who died the same year. No indemnity was exacted from France; not even the works of art stolen from the galleries of Italy and Germany for the adornment of Paris were reclaimed![1] The Count d'Artois (afterward Charles X.) was installed as head of the temporary government, and France was given the boundaries of 1792, which meant an increase of a million inhabitants and a very valuable addition of territory. After enduring ten years of humiliation and outrage, the Allies were as tenderly considerate as if their invasion of France had been a wrong for which they must atone by all possible concessions.

In southern Germany, where very little national sentiment existed, the treaty was quietly accepted, but it provoked great indignation among the people in the north. Their rejoicings over the downfall of Napoleon, the liberation of Germany, and (as they believed) the foundation of a liberal government for themselves were disturbed by this manifestation of weakness on the part of their leaders. The European Congress, which was opened on November 1, 1814, at Vienna, was not calculated to restore their confidence. Francis II. and Alexander I. were the leading figures. Other nations were represented by their best statesmen; the former ecclesiastical rulers, all the petty princes, and hundreds of the "imperial" nobility whose privileges had been taken away from them attended in the hope of recovering something from the general chaos. A series of splendid entertainments was given to the members of the congress, and it soon became evident to the world that Europe, and especially Germany, was to be reconstructed according to the will of the individual rulers, without reference to principle or people, or the good of Germany as a nation.

---

[1] One or two exceptions were made: the sword of Frederick the Great and the figure of Victory, with her four great horses, were restored to Prussia as tangible proofs of the liberation. The statue of Victory was mounted again on the Brandenburg gate and still forms a splendid background to the view up the Linden.

France was represented in the congress by Talleyrand, who was greatly the superior of the other members in the arts of diplomacy. Before the winter was over he persuaded Austria and England to join France in an alliance against Russia and Prussia, and another European war would probably have broken out but for the startling news of Napoleon's landing in France on March 1, 1815. Then all were compelled to suspend their jealousies and unite against their common foe. On March 25 a new alliance was concluded between Austria, Russia, Prussia, and England. The first three agreed to furnish 150,000 men each, while the last contributed a lesser number of soldiers and five million pounds in money. All the smaller German states joined in the movement, and the people were still so full of courage and patriotic hope that a much larger force than was needed was soon under arms.

Napoleon reached Paris on March 20, and instantly commenced the organization of a new army, while offering peace to all the powers of Europe, on the basis of the Treaty of Paris. This time he received no answer. The terror of his name had passed away, and the allied sovereigns acted with promptness and courage. Though he held France, Napoleon's position was not strong, even there. The land had suffered terribly, and the people desired peace, which they had never enjoyed under his rule. He raised nearly half a million soldiers, but was obliged to use a portion of them in preventing outbreaks among the population; then, selecting the best, he marched toward Belgium with an army of 128,000 in order to meet Wellington and Blücher separately before they could unite. The former had 100,000 men, most of them Dutch and Germans, under his command; the latter, with 115,000, was rapidly approaching from the east. By this time—the beginning of June—neither the Austrians nor Russians had entered France.

On June 16, 1815, two battles occurred. Napoleon fought Blücher at Ligny, while Marshal Ney, with 40,000 men, attacked Wellington at Quatre-Bras. Thus neither of the Allies was able to help the other. Blücher defended himself desperately, but his horse was shot under him and the French cavalry almost rode over him as he lay upon the ground. He was rescued with difficulty, and then compelled to fall back. The battle between Ney and Wellington was hotly contested; the gallant Duke of Brunswick was slain in a cavalry charge, and the losses on both sides were very great, but neither could claim a decided advantage. Wellington retired to Waterloo the next day, to be nearer Blücher, and then Napoleon, uniting with Ney, marched against him with 72,000 men, while Grouchy was sent with 36,000 to engage Blücher. Wellington had 68,000 men, so the disproportion in numbers was not very great, but Napoleon was much stronger in cavalry and artillery.

The great battle of Waterloo began on the morning of June 18. Wellington was attacked again and again, and the utmost courage and endurance of his soldiers barely enabled them to hold their ground. The charges of the French were met by an equally determined resistence, but the fate of the battle depended on Blücher's arrival. The latter left a few corps at Wavre, his former position, in order to deceive Grouchy, and pushed forward through rain and across a marshy country to Wellington's relief. At four o'clock in the afternoon Napoleon made a tremendous effort to break the English center. The endurance of his enemy began to fail, and there were signs of wavering along the English lines when the cry was heard: "The Prussians are coming!" Bülow's corps soon appeared on the French flank, Blücher's army closed in shortly afterward, and by eight o'clock the French were flying from the field. Even Napoleon himself had to join in the headlong flight toward Paris. As he sprang from his carriage, defending himself with his pistol, he left behind his hat, sword, and field-glass, which fell into Blücher's hands. The carriage itself Blücher sent to his wife as a trophy. There were no allied monarchs on hand to prevent following up the victory closely. Blücher and Wellington advanced so rapidly that they stood before Paris within ten days, and Napoleon was left without any alternative but instant surrender. The losses at Waterloo, on each side, were about 25,000 killed and wounded.

This was the end of Napoleon's interference in the history of Europe. All his offers were rejected, he was deserted by the French, and a fortnight afterward, failing in his plan of escaping to America, he surrendered to the captain of an English frigate off the port of Rochefort. From that moment until his death at

St. Helena on May 5, 1821, he was a prisoner and an exile. A new treaty was made between the allied monarchs and the Bourbon dynasty of France. This time the treasures of art and learning were restored to Italy and Germany, an indemnity of 700,000,000 francs was exacted, Savoy was given back to Sardinia, and a little strip of territory, including the fortresses of Saarbrück, Saarlouis, and Landau, added to Germany. The attempt of Austria and Prussia to acquire Lorraine and Alsatia was defeated by the cunning of Talleyrand and the opposition of Alexander I. of Russia.

The jealousies and dissensions in the Congress of Vienna were hastily arranged during the excitement occasioned by Napoleon's return from Elba, and the members patched together, within three months, a new political map of Europe. There was no talk of restoring the lost kingdom of Poland. Prussia's claim to Saxony (which the king, Frederick Augustus, had fairly forfeited) was defeated by Austria and England; and then, after each of the principal powers had secured whatever was possible, they combined to regulate the affairs of the helpless smaller states. Holland and Belgium were united, called the kingdom of the Netherlands, and given to the House of Orange. Switzerland, which had joined the Allies against France, was allowed to remain a republic and received some slight increase of territory; and Lorraine and Alsatia were allowed to remain French.

Austria received Lombardy and Venetia, Illyria, Dalmatia, the Tyrol, Salzburg, Galicia, and whatever other territory she formerly possessed. Prussia gave up Warsaw to Russia, but kept Posen, recovered Westphalia and the territory on the Lower Rhine, and was enlarged by the annexation of Swedish Pomerania, part of Saxony and the former archbishoprics of Mayence, Treves, and Cologne. East Friesland was taken from Prussia and given to Hanover, which was made a kingdom. Weimar, Oldenburg, and the two Mecklenburgs were made grand duchies, and Bavaria received a new slice of Franconia, including the cities of Würzburg and Bayreuth, as well as all of the former Palatinate lying west of the Rhine. Frankfort, Bremen, Hamburg, and Lübeck were allowed to remain free cities. The other smaller states were favored in various ways, and only Saxony suffered by the loss of nearly half her territory. Fortunately the ecclesiastical rulers were not restored and the privileges of the free nobles of the Middle Ages not reëstablished. Napoleon, far more justly than Attila, had been "the Scourge of God" to Germany. In crushing rights he had also crushed a thousand abuses, and although the monarchs who ruled the Congress of Vienna were thoroughly reactionary in their sentiments, they could not help decreeing that what was dead in the political constitution of Germany should remain dead.

All the German states, however, felt that some form of union was necessary. The people dreamed of a nation, of a renewal of the old empire in some better and stronger form; but this was mostly a vague desire on their part, without any practical idea as to how it should be accomplished. The German ministers at Vienna were divided in their views; and Metternich took advantage of their impatience and excitement to propose a scheme of confederation which introduced as few changes as possible into the existing state of affairs. It was so drawn up that while it presented the appearance of an organization, it secured the supremacy of Austria, and only united the German states in mutual defense against a foreign foe and in mutual suppression of internal progress. This scheme, hastily prepared, was hastily adopted on June 8, 1815 (before the battle of Waterloo), and controlled the destinies of Germany for nearly fifty years afterward.

The new German Confederation (*Deutscher Bund*) was composed of the Austrian Empire, the kingdoms of Prussia, Bavaria, Saxony, Würtemberg, and Hanover, the grand duchies of Baden, Hesse-Darmstadt, Mecklenburg-Schwerin and Strelitz, Saxe-Weimar and Oldenburg; the electorate of Hesse-Cassel; the duchies of Brunswick, Nassau, Saxe-Gotha, Coburg, Meiningen and Hildburghausen, Anhalt-Dessau, Bernburg and Köthen; Denmark, on account of Holstein; the Netherlands, on account of Luxemburg; the four free cities, and eleven small principalities—making a total of thirty-nine states. The Act of Confederation assured to them equal rights, independent sovereignty, the peaceful settlement of disputes between them, and representation in a federal diet, which was to be held at Frankfort under the presidency of Austria. All together were required to support a permanent army of 300,000 men for their common defense. One article required each state to introduce a representative form of government. All religions were made equal before the law, the right of emigration was conceded to the people, the navigation of the Rhine was released from taxes, and freedom of the press was permitted.

Of course the carrying of these provisions into effect was left entirely to the rulers of the states. The people were not recognized as possessing any political power. Even the "representative government" which was assured did not include the right of suffrage; the king or duke might appoint a legislative body which represented only a class or party, and not the whole population. Moreover, the diet was prohibited from adopting any new measure or making any change in the form of the confederation, except by a unanimous vote. The whole scheme was a remarkable specimen of promise to the ears of the German people and of disappointment to their hearts and minds.

The Congress of Vienna was followed by an event of quite an original character. Alexander I. of Russia persuaded Francis II. and Frederick William III. to unite with him in a "Holy Alliance," which all the other monarchs of Europe were invited to join. It was simply a declaration, not a political act. The document set forth that the signers pledged themselves to treat each other with brotherly love, to consider all nations as members of one Christian family, to rule their lands with justice and kindness, and to be tender fathers to their subjects. No forms were prescribed and each monarch was left free to choose his own manner of Christian rule. A great noise was made about the Holy Alliance at the time, because it seemed to guarantee peace to Europe, and peace was most welcome after such terrible wars. All other reigning kings and princes, except George IV. of England, Louis XVIII. of France, and the Pope, added their signatures, but not one of them manifested any more brotherly or fatherly love after the act than before.

The new German Confederation having given the separate states a fresh lease of life, after all their convulsions, the rulers set about establishing themselves firmly on their repaired thrones. Only the most intelligent among them felt that the days of despotism, however "enlightened," were over, others avoided the liberal provisions of the Act of Confederation, abolished many political reforms which had been introduced by Napoleon and oppressed the common people even more than his satellites had done. The Elector of Hesse-Cassel made his soldiers wear powdered queues, as in the last century; the King of Würtemberg court-martialed and cashiered the general who had gone over with his troops to the German side at the battle of Leipzig; and in Mecklenburg the liberated people were declared serfs. The introduction of a legislative assembly was delayed, and in some states even wholly disregarded. Baden and Bavaria adopted constitutions in 1818, Würtemberg and Hesse-Darmstadt in 1819, but in Prussia an imperfect form of representative government for the provinces was not arranged until 1823. Austria, meanwhile, had restored some ancient privileges of the same kind, of little practical value, because not adapted to the conditions of the age; the people were obliged to be content with them, for they received no more.

No class of Germans were so bitterly disappointed in the results of their victory and deliverance as the young men, especially the thousands who had fought in the ranks in 1813 and 1815. At all the universities the students formed societies which were inspired by two ideas—union and freedom. Fiery speeches were made, songs were sung, and free expression was given to their distrust of the governments under which they lived. On October 18, 1817, they held a grand convention at Wartburg—the castle near Eisenach, where Luther had been concealed—and this event occasioned great alarm among the reactionary class. The students were very hostile to the influence of Russia, and many persons who were suspected of being her secret agents became specially obnoxious to them. One of the latter was the dramatic author, Kotzebue, who was assassinated in March, 1819, by a young student named Sand. There is not the least evidence that this deed was the result of a widespread conspiracy; but almost every reigning prince thereupon imagined that his life was in danger.

A congress of ministers was held at Carlsbad the same summer and the most despotic measures against the so-called "revolution" were adopted. Freedom of the press was abolished; a severe censorship enforced; the formation of societies among the students and "turners" was prohibited; the universities were placed under the immediate supervision of government, and even commissioners were appointed to hear what the professors said in their lectures! Many of the best men in Germany, among them the old teacher Jahn and the poet Arndt, were deprived of their situations and placed under a form of espionage. Hundreds of young men, who had perpetrated no single act of resistance, were thrown into prison for years, others forced to fly from the country, and every manifestation of interest in political subjects became an offense. The effort of the German states now was to counteract the popular rights guaranteed by the Confederation by establishing an arbitrary and savage police system; and there were few parts of the country where the people retained as much genuine liberty as they had enjoyed a hundred years before.

The history of Germany during the thirty years of peace which followed is marked by a very few events of importance. It was a season of gradual reaction on the part of the rulers and of increasing impatience and enmity on the part of the people. Instead of becoming loving families, as the Holy Alliance designed, the states (except some of the little principalities) were divided into two hostile classes. There was material growth everywhere. The wounds left by war and foreign occupation were gradually healed; there was order, security for all who abstained from politics, and a comfortable repose for such as were indifferent to the future. But it was a sad and disheartening period for the men who were able to see clearly how Germany, with all the elements of a freer and stronger life existing in her people, was falling behind the political development of other countries.

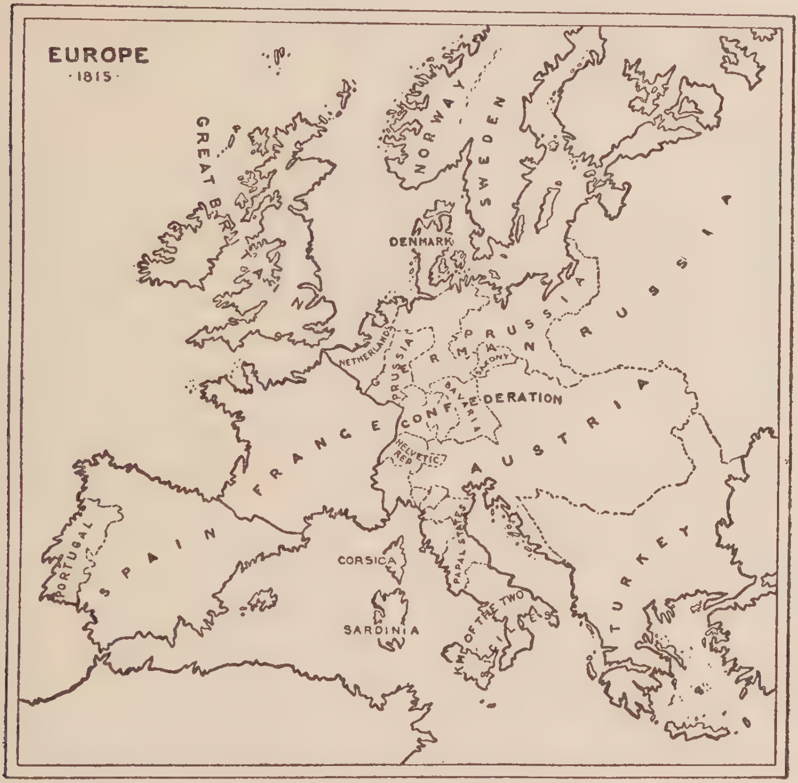
The Paris July Revolution of 1830, which placed Louis Philippe on the throne of France, was followed by peculiar uprisings in some parts of Germany. But the governments of Prussia and Austria were too strong and their people too well held in check to be affected. In Brunswick, however, the despotic duke, Karl, was deposed; Saxony and Hesse-Cassel were obliged to accept co-rulers (out of their reigning families), and the English duke, Ernest Augustus, was made viceroy of Hanover. These four states also adopted a constitutional form of government. The German diet, as a matter of course, used what power it possessed to counteract these movements, but its influence was limited by its own laws of action. The hopes and aspirations of the people were kept alive, in spite of the system of repression, and some of the smaller states took advantage of their independence to introduce various measures of reform.

As industry, commerce, and travel increased, the existence of so many boundaries, with their custom-houses, taxes, and other hindrances, became an unendurable burden. Bavaria and Würtemberg formed a customs union in 1828, Prussia followed, and by 1836 all of Germany, except Austria, was united in the *Zollverein* (Tariff Union), which was not only a great material advantage, but helped to inculcate the idea of a closer political union. On the other hand, however, the monarchical reaction against liberal government was stronger than ever. Ernest Augustus of Hanover arbitrarily overthrew the constitution he had accepted, and Ludwig I. of Bavaria, renouncing all his former professions, made his land a very nest of absolutism. In Prussia such men as Stein, Gneisenau, and William von Humboldt had long lost their influence, while others of less personal renown but of similar political sentiments were subjected to contemptible forms of persecution.

In March, 1835, Francis II. of Austria died and was succeeded by his son, Ferdinand I., a man of such weak intellect that he was in some respects idiotic. On June 7, 1840, Frederick William III. of Prussia died and was also succeeded by his son, Frederick William IV., a man of great wit and intelligence, who had made himself popular as crown prince, and whose accession the people hailed with joy in the enthusiastic belief that better days were coming. The two dead monarchs, each of whom had reigned forty-three years, left behind them a better memory among their people than they actually deserved. They were both weak, unstable, and narrow-minded, and had they not been controlled by others they would have ruined Germany; but they were alike of excellent personal character, amiable and very kindly disposed toward their subjects so long as the latter were perfectly obedient and reverential.

There was no change in the condition of Austria, for Metternich remained the real ruler, as before. In Prussia a few unimportant concessions were made, an amnesty for political offenses was declared, Alexander von Humboldt became the king's chosen associate, and much was done for science and art; but in their main hope of a liberal reorganization of the government the people were bitterly deceived. Frederick William IV. took no steps toward the adoption of a constitution; he made the censorship and the supervision of the police more severe; he interfered in the most arbitrary and bigoted manner in the system of religious instruction in the schools; and all his acts showed that his policy was to strengthen his throne by the support of the nobility and the civil service, without regard to the just claims of the people.

Thus, in spite of the external quiet and order, the political atmosphere gradually became more sultry and disturbed all over Germany. There were signs of impatience in all quarters. Various local outbreaks occurred and the aspects were so threatening that in February, 1847, Frederick William IV. endeavored to silence the growing opposition by ordering the formation of a legislative assembly. But the provinces were represented, not the people, and the measure only emboldened the latter to clamor for a direct representation. Thereupon the king closed the assembly after a short session, and the attempt was probably productive of more harm than good. In most of the other German states the situation was very similar. Everywhere there were elements of opposition, all the more violent and dangerous because they had been kept down with a strong hand for so many years.



Chapter XXXVII

THE REVOLUTION OF 1848 AND ITS RESULTS
1848-1861

THE sudden breaking out of the revolution of February, 1848, in Paris, the flight of Louis Philippe and his family, and the proclamation of the republic acted in Germany like a spark dropped upon powder. All the disappointments of thirty years, the smoldering impatience and sense of outrage, the powerful aspiration for political freedom among the people, broke out in sudden flame. There was instantly an outcry for freedom of speech and of the press, the right of suffrage, and a constitutional form of government in every state. On March 13 the people of Vienna rose, and after a bloody fight with the troops compelled Metternich to give up his office as minister and seek safety in exile.

In Berlin, Frederick William IV. yielded to the pressure on March 18, but, either by accident or rashness, a fight was brought on between the soldiers and the people and a number of the latter were slain. Their bodies, lifted on planks, with all the bloody wounds exposed, were carried before the royal palace and the king was compelled to come to the window and look upon them. All the demands of the revolutionary party were thereupon instantly granted. The next day Frederick William rode through the streets, preceded by the ancient imperial banner of black, red, and gold, swore to grant the rights which were demanded and, with the concurrence of the other princes, to put himself at the head of a movement for German unity. A proclamation was published which closed with the words: "From this day forward Prussia becomes merged in Germany." The soldiers were removed from Berlin and the popular excitement gradually subsided.

Before these outbreaks occurred the diet at Frankfort had caught the alarm and hastened to take a step which seemed to yield something to the general demand. On March 1 it invited the separate states to send special delegates to Frankfort, empowered to draw up a new form of union for Germany. Four days afterward a meeting, which included many of the prominent men of southern Germany, was held at Heidelberg, and it was decided to hold a provisional assembly at Frankfort as a movement preliminary to the greater changes which were anticipated. This proposal received a hearty response. On March 31 quite a large and respectable body, composed of representatives from all the German states, came together in Frankfort. The demand of the party headed by Hecker of Baden that a republic should be proclaimed was rejected; but the principle of "the sovereignty of the people" was adopted, Schleswig and Holstein, which had risen in revolt against the Danish rule, were declared to be a part of Germany, and a Committee of Fifty was appointed to coöperate with the old diet in calling a national parliament.

There was great rejoicing in Germany over these measures. The people were full of hope and confidence. The men who were chosen as candidates and elected by suffrage were almost without exception persons of character and intelligence. When they came together, six hundred in number, and opened the first national parliament of Germany, in the church of St. Paul in Frankfort, on May 18, 1848, there were few patriots who did not believe in a speedy and complete regeneration of their country. In the meantime, however, Hecker and Struve, who had organized a great number of republican clubs throughout Baden, rose in arms against the government. After maintaining themselves for two weeks in Freiburg and the Black Forest, they were defeated and forced to take refuge in Switzerland. Hecker went to America, and Struve, making a second similar attempt shortly afterward, was taken prisoner.

The lack of practical political experience among the members soon disturbed the parliament. Most of them were theorists and insisted on carrying out their pet hobbies instead of trying to adopt measures suited to the existing circumstances. With all their honesty and genuine patriotism they relied too much on the sudden enthusiasm of the people and undervalued the actual strength of the governing classes, because the latter had so easily yielded to the first surprise. The republican party was in a decided minority, and the remainder soon became divided between the "Small Germans," who favored the union of all the states, except Austria, under a constitutional monarchy, and the "Great Germans," who insisted that Austria should be included. After a great deal of discussion the old federal diet was declared abolished and a provisional central government was appointed. The Archduke John of Austria—an amiable, popular, and inoffensive old man—was elected "Vicar-General of the Empire." This action was finally accepted by all the states except Austria and Prussia, which delayed to commit themselves until they were strong enough to oppose the whole scheme.

The history of 1848 is divided into so many detached episodes that it cannot be given in a connected form. The revolt which broke out in Schleswig-Holstein early in March was supported by enthusiastic German volunteers, and then by a Prussian army, which drove the Danes back into Jutland. Great rejoicing was occasioned by the destruction of the Danish frigate *Christian VIII.* and the capture of the *Gefion,* at Eckernförde, by a battery commanded by Duke Ernest II. of Coburg-Gotha. But England and Russia threatened armed intervention; Prussia was forced to suspend hostilities and make a truce with Denmark on terms which looked very much like an abandonment of the cause of Schleswig-Holstein.

This action was accepted by a majority of the parliament at Frankfort—a course which aroused the deepest indignation of the democratic minority and their sympathizers everywhere throughout Germany. On September 18 barricades were thrown up in the streets of Frankfort and an armed mob stormed St. Paul's church, where the parliament was in session, but was driven back by Prussian and Hessian troops. Two members, General Auerswald and Prince Lichnowsky, were barbarously murdered in attempting to escape from the city. This lawless and bloody event did much damage to the national cause; the two leading states, Prussia and Austria, instantly adopted a sterner policy, and there were soon signs of a general reaction against the revolution.

The condition of Austria at this time was very critical. The uprising in Vienna had been followed by powerful and successful rebellions in Lombardy, Hungary, and Bohemia, and the empire of the Hapsburgs seemed to be on the point of dissolution. The struggle was confused and made more bitter by the hostility of the different nationalities: the Croatians, at the call of the emperor, rose against the Hungarians, and then the Germans, in the legislative assembly held at Vienna, accused the government of being guided by Slavonic influences. Another furious outbreak occurred. Count

Latour, the former minister of war, was hanged to a lamp-post and the city was again in the hands of the revolutionists. Kossuth, who had become all-powerful in Hungary, had already raised an army to be employed in conquering the independence of his country, and he now marched rapidly toward Vienna, which the Austrian general, Windischgrätz, was trying to recapture from the revolutionists. Almost within sight of the city Kossuth was defeated by Jellachich, the Ban of Croatia. The latter joined the Austrians, and after a furious bombardment Vienna was taken by storm. Messenhauser, the commander of the insurgents, and Robert Blum, a member of the national parliament, were afterward shot by order of Windischgrätz, who crushed out all resistance by the most severe and inhuman measures.

Hungary, nevertheless, was already practically independent, and Kossuth stood at the head of the government. The movement was eagerly supported by the people. An army of 100,000 men was raised, including cavalry which could hardly be equalled in Europe. Kossuth was supported by Görgey and the Polish generals, Bem and Dembinski; and although the Hungarians at first fell back before Windischgrätz, who marched against them in December, they gained a series of splendid victories in the spring of 1849, and their success seemed assured. Austria was forced to call upon Russia for help, and the Emperor Nicholas responded by sending an army of 140,000 men. Kossuth vainly hoped for the intervention of England and France in favor of Hungary. Up to the end of May the patriots were still victorious; then followed defeats in the field and confusion in the councils. The Hungarian government and a large part of the army fell back to Arad, where, on August 11, Kossuth transferred his dictatorship to Görgey, and the latter, two days afterward, surrendered at Vilagos, with about 25,000 men, to the Russian General Rüdiger.

This surrender caused Görgey's name to be execrated in Hungary and by all who sympathized with the Hungarian cause throughout the world. It was made, however, with the knowledge of Kossuth, who had transferred his power to the former for that purpose, while he, with Bem, Dembinski and a few other followers, escaped into Turkey. In fact, further resistance would have been madness, for Haynau, who had succeeded to the command of the Austrian forces, was everywhere successful in front, and the Russians were in the rear. The first judgment of the world upon Görgey's act was therefore unjust. The fortress of Comorn, on the Danube, was the last post occupied by the Hungarians. It surrendered, after an obstinate siege, to Haynau, who then perpetrated such barbarities that his name became infamous in all countries.

In Italy the revolution broke out in March, 1848. Marshal Radetzky, the Austrian governor in Milan, was driven out of the city. The Lombards, supported by the Sardinians under their king, Charles Albert, drove the Austrians back to Verona. Venice had also risen, and nearly all northern Italy was thus freed from the Austrian yoke. In the course of the summer, however, Radetzky achieved some successes, and thereupon concluded an armistice with Sardinia, which left him free to undertake the siege of Venice. But in March, 1849, Charles Albert resumed the war, and on the 23d, in the battle of Novara, was so ruinously defeated that he abdicated the throne of Sardinia in favor of his son, Victor Emmanuel. The latter, on leaving the field, shook his sword at the advancing Austrians and cried out: " There shall yet be an Italy!"—but he was compelled at the time to make peace on the best terms he could obtain. In August Venice also surrendered, after a heroic defense, and Austria was again supreme in Italy, as in Hungary.

During this time the national parliament in Frankfort had been struggling against the difficulties of its situation. The democratic movement was almost suppressed and there was an earnest effort to effect a German union; but this was impossible without the concurrence of either Austria or Prussia, and the rivalry of the two gave rise to constant jealousies and impediments. On December 2, 1848, the Viennese ministry persuaded the idiotic Emperor Ferdinand to abdicate, and placed his nephew, Francis Joseph, a youth of eighteen, upon the throne. Every change of the kind begets new hopes and makes a government temporarily popular; so this was a gain for Austria. Nevertheless, the " Small German" party finally triumphed in the parliament. On March 28, 1849, Frederick William IV. of Prussia was elected " Hereditary Emperor of Germany." All the small states accepted the choice. But Bavaria, Würtemberg, Saxony, and Hanover refused, Austria protested, and the king himself, after hesitating for a week, declined.

This was a great blow to the hopes of the national party. It was immediately followed by fierce popular outbreaks in Dresden, Würtemberg, and Baden. In Baden the grand duke was driven away and a provisional government instituted. Prussia sent troops to suppress the revolt, and a war on a small scale was carried on during the months of June and July, when the republican forces yielded to superior power. This was the end of armed resistance. The governments had recovered from their panic, the French Republic, under the Prince-President Louis Napoleon, was preparing for monarchy, Italy and Hungary were prostrate, and nothing was left for the earnest and devoted German patriots but to save what rights they could from the wreck of their labors.

The parliament gradually dissolved, by the recall of some of its members and the withdrawal of others. Only the democratic minority remained and sought to keep up its existence by removing to Stuttgart; but once there it was soon forcibly dispersed. Prussia next endeavored to create a German union, with a constitution and two representative chambers. Seventeen German states accepted the plan and met at Gotha to consider the matter further, and later removed to Berlin. But unfortunately many of the more important states—Hanover, Saxony, Bavaria, and Würtemberg—either from jealousy of Prussia or from fear of Austria, refused to join this Prussian union. Austria, meanwhile, on September 1, 1850, declared the old diet opened at Frankfort, under her presidency, and twelve states hastened to obey her call. The hostility between the two parties so increased that for a time war seemed to be inevitable. Austrian troops invaded Hesse-Cassel, an army was collected in Bohemia, while Prussia, relying on the help of Russia, was quite unprepared. Then Frederick William IV. yielded. At Olmütz Prussia submitted to Austria's demand that the Prussian union be formally dissolved. Schwartzenberg, the Austrian minister, said openly that "Prussia must be degraded, then demolished." On May 15, 1851, the federal diet was restored in Frankfort, with a vague promise that its constitution should be amended.

Thus, after an interruption of three years, the old machine was put upon the old track and a strong and united Germany seemed as far off as ever. A dismal period of reaction began. Louis Napoleon's violent assumption of power in December, 1851, was welcomed by the German rulers, all of whom greeted the new emperor as "brother."[1] A congress held in London in May, 1852, confirmed Denmark in the possession of Schleswig and Holstein. Austria abolished her legislative assembly in utter disregard of the provisions of 1815, upon which the diet was based. Hesse-Cassel, with the consent of Austria, Prussia, and the diet, overthrew the constitution which had protected the people for twenty years; and even Prussia, where an arbitrary policy was no longer possible, gradually suppressed the more liberal features of the government. Worse than this, the religious liberty which Germany had so long enjoyed was insidiously assailed. Austria, Bavaria, and Würtemberg made "concordats" with the Pope, which gave the control of schools and marriages among the people into the hands of the priests.

---

[1] "*Mon Frère*" is the usual form of address of one sovereign to another. Napoleon III. felt it keenly that he was addressed by Nicholas I. of Russia merely as "My friend," and joined in the Crimean War partly from a desire to avenge what he regarded as an insult.

Placed between the disguised despotism of Napoleon III. and the open and arrogant despotism of Nicholas of Russia, Germany for a time seemed to be destined to a similar fate. The result of the Crimean War, and the liberal policy inaugurated by Alexander II. in Russia, damped the hopes of the German absolutists, but failed to teach them wisdom. Prussia was practically governed by the interests of a class of nobles whose absurd pride was only equaled by their ignorance of the age in which they lived. Notwithstanding all his wit and his talent, Frederick William IV. was utterly blind to his position, and the longer he reigned the more bitterly he made the name of Prussia hated throughout the rest of Germany.

But the fruits of the national movement in 1848 and 1849 were not lost. The earnest efforts of those two years, the practical experience of political matters acquired by the liberal party, were an immense gain to the people. In every state there was a strong body of intelligent men who resisted the reaction by all the legal means left them, and who, although discouraged, were still hopeful of success. The increase of general intelligence among the people, the growth of an independent press, the extension of railroads, which made the old system of passports and police supervision impossible—all these were powerful agencies of progress; but only a few rulers of the smaller states saw this truth, and favored the liberal side.

By October, 1858, Frederick William IV. had become practically insane and incapable of governing; therefore his brother, Prince William, began to rule in his stead as regent. Prince William, then sixty years old, had grown up without the least prospect that he would ever wear the crown; his education had been for a military, not a political, career.[2] Although he possessed no brilliant intellectual qualities, he was shrewd, clear-sighted, and honest, and after a year's experience of the policy which governed Prussia, he dismissed the feudalist ministry of his brother and established a new and more liberal government. The hopes of the German people instantly revived. Bavaria was compelled to follow the example of Prussia, the reaction against the national government of 1848 was interrupted everywhere and the political horizon suddenly began to grow brighter.

The desire of the people for a closer national union was so intense that when, in June, 1859, Austria was defeated at Magenta and Solferino, a cry ran through Germany: "The Rhine must be defended on the Mincio!" and the demand for an alliance with Austria against France became so earnest and general that Prussia would certainly have yielded to it if Napoleon III. had not forestalled the movement by concluding an instant peace with Francis Joseph. When, in 1860, all Italy rose and the dilapidated thrones of the petty rulers fell to pieces as the people united under Victor Emmanuel, the Germans saw how hasty and mistaken had been their excitement of the year before. The interests of the Italians were identical with theirs, and the success of the former filled them with fresh hope and courage.

Austria, after her defeat and the overwhelming success of the popular uprising in Italy, seemed to perceive the necessity of conceding more to her own subjects. She made some attempts to introduce a restricted form of constitutional government, which excited without satisfying the people. Prussia continued to advance slowly in the right direction, regaining her lost influence over the active and intelligent liberal party throughout Germany. On January 2, 1861, Frederick William IV. died, and William I. became king. From this date a new epoch begins.

---

[2] Bismarck in his "Reflections and Reminiscences" gives the following interesting account of William:

"From the moment when the regency began, Prince William felt so keenly the want of a proper business education that he shunned no labor by day or night in order to make good the deficiency. When he was 'transacting public affairs,' then he really worked, seriously and conscientiously. He read all papers which were sent in to him, not merely those which attracted him, and studied the treaties and laws so that he might form an independent judgment. He knew no pleasure which would have taken away time from affairs of state. He never read novels or other books which did not concern his duties as ruler. He did not smoke or play cards. When there was a shooting party at Wusterhausen and after dinner they went into the room where Frederick William I. used to collect the *Tabakscollegium,* in order that the others might be able to smoke in his presence, he had a long Dutch clay pipe handed to him, took a few puffs at it, and then put it down with a wry face. His only recreation was, after a hard day's work, to sit in his box at the theater; but even there I, as minister, was allowed to seek him out for pressing business, and make reports to him in the small room behind the box and receive his signature. A good night's rest was so necessary to him that he would complain of a bad night if he was disturbed twice, and yet I never saw the slightest touch of annoyance when in difficult circumstances I had to wake him up at two or three o'clock to ask for a hasty decision."

Chapter XXXVIII

THE STRUGGLE WITH AUSTRIA; THE NORTH GERMAN CONFEDERATION. 1861-1870

THE first important measure which the government of William I. adopted was a thorough reorganization of the army. Since this could not be effected without an increased expense for the present and a prospect of still greater burdens in the future, the legislative assembly of Prussia refused to grant the appropriation demanded. The plan was to increase the time of service for the reserve forces, to diminish that of the militia, and enforce a sufficient amount of military training upon the whole male population, without regard to class or profession. At the same time a convention of the smaller states was held in Würzburg, for the purpose of drawing up a new plan of union, in place of the old diet, the provisions of which had been violated so often that its existence was becoming a mere farce.

Prussia proposed a closer military union under her own direction, and this was accepted by Baden, Saxe-Weimar and Coburg-Gotha; the other states were still swayed by the influence of Austria. The political situation became more and more disturbed; William I. dismissed his liberal ministry and appointed noted reactionists, who carried out his plan for reorganizing the army in defiance of the assembly. Finally, in September, 1862, Baron Otto von Bismarck-Schönhausen, who had been Prussian ambassador in St. Petersburg and Paris, was placed at the head of the government. This remarkable man, who was born in 1815, in Brandenburg, was already known as a thorough conservative and considered to be one of the most dangerous enemies of the liberal and national party. But he had represented Prussia in the diet at Frankfort in 1851, he understood the policy of Austria and the general political situation better than any other statesman in Germany, and his course, from the first day of receiving power, was as daring as it was skillful.

Even Metternich was not so heartily hated by the liberals and constitutionalists as Bismarck, when the latter continued the policy already adopted of disregarding the will of the people as expressed by the Prussian assembly.[1] Every new election for this body only increased the strength of the opposition, and with it the unpopularity of Prussia among the smaller states. The appropriations for the army were steadfastly refused, yet the government took the money and went on with the work of reorganization. Austria endeavored to profit by the confusion which ensued. After having privately consulted the other rulers Francis Joseph summoned a congress of German princes to meet in Frankfort, in August, 1863, in order to accept an "Act of Reform," which substituted an assembly of delegates in place of the old diet, but retained the presidency of Austria. William I., at Bismarck's request, refused to attend, declaring that the first step toward reform must be a parliament elected by the people, and the scheme failed so completely that in another month nothing more was heard of it.

Soon afterward Frederick VII. of Denmark died, and his successor, Christian IX., Prince of Glücksburg, accepted a constitution which detached Schleswig from Holstein and incorporated it with Denmark. This was in violation of the treaty made in London in 1852, and gave Germany a pretext for interference. On December 7, 1863, the diet decided to take armed possession of the duchies. Austria and Prussia united in January, 1864, and sent a combined army of 43,000 men under Prince Frederick Charles and Marshal Gablenz against Denmark. After several slight engagements the Danes abandoned the "Dannewerk"—the fortified line across the peninsula—and took up a strong position at Düppel. Here their entrenchments were stormed and carried by the Prussians on April 18. The Austrians had also been victorious at Oeversee and the Danes were everywhere driven back. England, France, and Russia interfered, an armistice was declared and an attempt made to settle the question. The negotiations, which were carried on in London for that purpose, failed; hostilities were resumed and by August 1 Denmark was forced to sue for peace.

On October 30 the war was ended by the relinquishment of the duchies to Prussia and Austria, not to Germany. The

---

[1] Bismarck's energetic policy of supporting the king in the reorganization of the army in spite of the opposition of the constitutionalists and of uniting Germany by force, if necessary, was expressed frequently and openly: "It is not Prussia's liberalism that Germany looks to, but her military power." "The unity of Germany is to be brought about, not by speeches nor by votes of majorities, but by blood and iron."

Prince of Augustenburg, however, who belonged to the ducal family of Holstein, claimed the territory as being his by right of descent, and took up his residence at Kiel, bringing all the apparatus of a little state government, ready made, along with him. Prussia demanded the acceptance of her military system, the occupancy of the forts, and the harbor of Kiel for naval purposes. The duke, encouraged by Austria, refused. A diplomatic quarrel ensued, which lasted until August 1, 1865, when William I. met Francis Joseph at Gastein, a watering-place in the Austrian Alps, and both agreed on a division of the conquered duchies, Prussia to govern in Schleswig and Austria in Holstein.

Thus far the course of the two powers in the matter had made them equally unpopular throughout the rest of Germany. Austria had quite lost her temporary advantage over Prussia in this respect, and she now endeavored to regain it by favoring the claims of the Duke of Augustenburg in Holstein. An angry correspondence followed, and early in 1866 Austria began to prepare for war, not only at home, but by secretly canvassing for alliances among the smaller states. Neither she nor the German people understood how her policy was aiding the deep-laid plans of Bismarck. When Austria demanded of the diet that the military force of the other states should be called into the field against Prussia on account of the invasion of Holstein by Prussian troops, only Oldenburg, Mecklenburg, the little Saxon principalities, and the three free cities of the north voted against the measure! All the rest supported Austria.

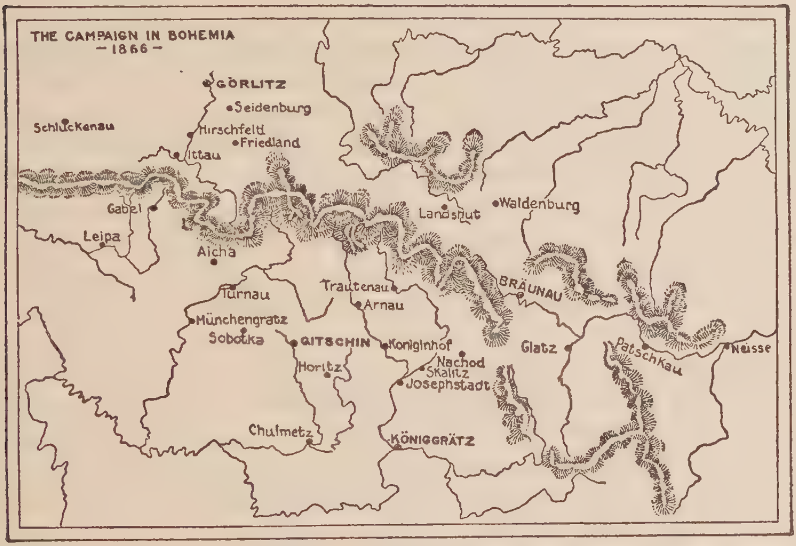
The vote which was taken on June 14, 1866, was the last act of the German diet. Prussia instantly took the ground that it was a declaration of war, and set in motion all the agencies which had been quietly preparing for three or four years. The German people were stunned by the suddenness with which the crisis had been brought upon them. The cause of the trouble was so slight, so needlessly provoked, that the war seemed criminal. It was looked upon as the last desperate resource of the absolutist, Bismarck, who, finding the Prussian assembly still five to one against him, had adopted this measure to recover by "blood and iron" his lost position. Few believed that Prussia, with nineteen millions of inhabitants, could be victorious over Austria and her allies, representing fifty millions, unless after a long and terrible struggle.

Prussia, however, had secured an ally which, although not fortunate in the war, kept a large Austrian army employed. This was Italy, which eagerly accepted the alliance in April and began to prepare for the struggle. On the other hand, there was every probability that France would interfere in favor of Austria. In this emergency the Prussian government seemed transformed. It stood like a man aroused and fully alive, with every sense quickened and every muscle and sinew ready for action. June 14 brought the declaration of war; on the 15th Saxony, Hanover, Hesse-Cassel, and Nassau were called upon to remain neutral, and allowed twelve hours to decide. As no answer came, a Prussian army from Holstein took possession of Hanover on the 17th, another from the Rhine entered Cassel on the 19th, and on the same day Leipzig and Dresden were occupied by a third. So complete had been the preparations that a temporary railroad bridge was made in advance to take the place of the one between Berlin and Dresden, which it was evident the Saxons would destroy.

The King of Hanover, with 18,000 men, marched southward to join the Bavarians, but was so slow in his movements that he did not reach Langensalza (fifteen miles north of Gotha) until June 23. Rejecting an offer from Prussia, a force of about 9000 men was sent to hold him in check. A fierce battle was fought on the 27th, in which the Hanoverians were victorious, but during their delay of a single day Prussia had pushed on new troops with such rapidity that they were immediately afterward compelled to surrender. The soldiers were sent home and the king, George V., betook himself to Vienna.

All Saxony being occupied, the march upon Austria followed. There were three Prussian armies in the field: the first, under Prince Frederick Charles, advanced in a southeastern direction from Saxony; the second, under the crown prince, Frederick William, from Silesia; and the third, under General Herwarth von Bittenfeld, followed the course of the Elbe. The entire force was 260,000 men, with 790 pieces of artillery. The Austrian army, now hastening toward the frontier, was about equal in numbers, and commanded by General Benedek. Count Clam-Gallas, with 60,000 men, was sent forward to meet Frederick Charles, but was defeated in four successive small engagements, from June 27 to 29, and forced to fall back upon Benedek's main army, while Frederick Charles and Herwarth, whose armies were united in the last of the four battles, at Gitchin, remained there to await the arrival of the crown prince.

The latter's task had been more difficult. On crossing the frontier he was faced by the greater part of Benedek's army, and his first battle, on June 27, at Trautenau, was a defeat. A second battle at the same place the next day resulted in a brilliant victory, after which he advanced, achieving further successes at Nachod and Skalitz, and on June 30 reached Königinhof, a short distance from Gitchin. King William, Bismarck, Moltke, and Roon arrived at the latter place on July 2, and it was decided to meet Benedek, who, with Clam-Gallas, was awaiting battle near Königgrätz, without further delay. The movement was hastened by indications that Benedek meant to commence the attack before the army of the crown prince could reach the field.



On July 3 the great battle of Königgrätz was fought. Both in its character and its results it was very much like that of Waterloo. Benedek occupied a strong position on a range of low hills beyond the little River Bistritz, with the village of Sadowa as his center. The army of Frederick Charles formed the Prussian center and that of Herwarth the right wing; their position only differed from that of Wellington at Waterloo in the circumstance that they must attack instead of resist, and keep the whole Austrian army engaged until the crown prince, like Blücher, should arrive from the left and strike Benedek on the right flank. The battle began at eight in the morning and raged with the greatest fury for six hours. Again and again the Prussians hurled themselves on the Austrian center, only to be repulsed with heavier losses. Herwarth on the right gained a little advantage; but the Austrian rifled cannon prevented a further advance. Violent rains and marshy soil delayed the crown prince, as in Blücher's case at Waterloo. The fate of the day was very doubtful until two o'clock in the afternoon, when the smoke of cannon was seen in the distance, on the Austrian right. The army of the crown prince had arrived! Then all the Prussian reserves were brought up; an advance was made along the whole line; the Austrian right and left were broken, the center gave way, and in the midst of a thunder-storm the retreat became a headlong flight. Toward evening, when the sun broke out, the Prussians saw Königgrätz before them. The king and crown prince met on the battlefield and the army struck up the same old choral which the troops of Frederick the Great had sung on the field of Leuthen.

The next day the news came that Austria had made over Venetia to France. This seemed like a direct bid for alliance, and the need of rapid action was greater than ever. Within two weeks the Prussians had reached the Danube, and Vienna was an easy prey. In the meantime the Bavarians and other allies of Austria had been driven beyond the River Main, Frankfort was in the hands of the Prussians, and a struggle, which could only have ended in the defeat of the former, commenced at Würzburg. Then Austria gave way. An armistice, embracing the preliminaries of peace, was concluded at Nikolsburg on July 27, and the Seven Weeks' War came to an end. Bismarck showed his true statesmanship in opposing the men who wished to compel Austria to give up territory to Prussia. He clearly saw that Prussia's true policy was to avoid wounding Austria too severely and so leaving behind her any unnecessary bitterness of feeling or desire for revenge. "We ought," he said, "rather to reserve the possibility of becoming friends again with our adversary of the moment, and in any case to regard the Austrian state as a piece on the European chessboard, and the renewal of friendly relations with her as a move open to us." If Austria were too severely treated, she would have become the ally of France and of all Prussia's enemies. The treaty of peace, which was signed at Prague on August 23, placed Austria in the background and gave the leadership of Germany to Prussia.

It was now seen that the possession of Schleswig-Holstein was not the main object of the war. Bismarck's real purpose was the establishment or initiation of German national unity under the leadership of the King of Prussia, and this was now partially accomplished by the formation of a North German Confederation, from which Austria and her southern allies were excluded. But the southern states were left free to treat separately with the new power. Austria was compelled to recognize this new state of things. Thus "blood and iron" had been used, but only to destroy the old constitution of Germany and render possible a firmer national union, the guiding influence of which was to be Prussian and Protestant, instead of Austrian and Catholic.

An overwhelming revulsion of feeling took place. The proud, conservative, feudal party sank almost out of sight in the enthusiastic support which the nationals and liberals gave to William I. and Bismarck. It is not likely that the latter had changed in character. Personally, his haughty aristocratic impulses were no doubt as strong as ever; but, as a statesman, he had learned the great and permanent strength of the opposition, and clearly saw what immense advantages Prussia would acquire by a liberal policy. The German people, in their indescribable relief from the anxieties of the past four years—in their gratitude for victory and the dawn of a better future—soon came to believe that he had always been on their side. Before the year 1866 came to an end the Prussian assembly accepted all the past acts of the government which it had resisted, and complete harmony was reëstablished.

The annexation of Hanover, Hesse-Cassel, Nassau, Schleswig-Holstein and the city of Frankfort added nearly 5,000,000 more to the population of Prussia. The constitution of the "North German Confederation" (*Norddeutsche Bund*), as the new confederation was called, was submitted to the other states in December and accepted by all on February 9, 1867. Its parliament, elected by the people, met in Berlin immediately afterward to discuss the articles of union, which were formally adopted on April 16, when the new power commenced its existence. It included all the German states except Bavaria, Würtemberg, Hesse-Darmstadt and Baden, and comprised a population of more than thirty millions, united under one military, postal, diplomatic and financial system, like the states of the American Union. The King of Prussia was president of the whole, and Bismarck was made chancellor. About the same time Bavaria, Würtemberg, and Baden entered into a secret offensive and defensive alliance with Prussia, and the policy of their governments thenceforth was so conciliatory toward the North German Confederation that the people almost instantly forgot the hostility created by the war.

In the spring of 1867 Napoleon III. took advantage of the circumstance that Luxemburg was practically detached from Germany by the downfall of the old diet and offered to buy it of Holland. The agreement was nearly concluded when Bismarck, in the name of the North German Confederation, made such an energetic protest that the negotiations were suspended. A conference of the European powers in London, in May, adjudged Luxemburg to Holland, satisfying neither France nor Germany; but Bismarck's boldness and firmness gave immediate authority to the new confederation. The people at last felt that they had a living, acting government, not a mere conglomeration of empty forms, as hitherto.

Chapter XXXIX

THE FRANCO-PRUSSIAN WAR. 1870-1871

THE experience of the next three years showed how completely the new order of things was accepted by the great majority of the German people. Even in Austria the defeat at Königgrätz and the loss of Venetia were welcomed by the Hungarians and Slavonians, and hardly regretted by the German population, since it was evident that the imperial government must give up its absolutist policy or cease to exist. In fact, the former ministry was immediately dismissed. Count Beust, a Saxon and a Protestant, was called to Vienna, and a series of reforms was inaugurated which did not terminate until the Hungarians had won all they demanded in 1848, and the Germans and Bohemians enjoyed fully as much liberty as the Prussians.

The Seven Weeks' War of 1866, in fact, was a phenomenon in history; no nation ever acquired so much fame and influence in so short a time as Prussia. The relation of the king, and especially of the statesman who guided him, Count Bismarck, toward the rest of Germany was suddenly and completely changed. Napoleon III. was compelled to transfer Venetia to Italy, and thus his declaration in 1859 that "Italy should be free, from the Alps to the Adriatic," was made good—but not by France. While the rest of Europe accepted the changes in Germany with equanimity, if not with approbation, the vain and sensitive people of France felt themselves deeply humiliated. Thus far the policy of Napoleon III. had seemed to preserve the supremacy of France in European politics. He had overawed England, defeated Russia, and treated Italy as a magnanimous patron. But the best strength of Germany was now united under a new constitution, after a war which made the achievements at Magenta, Solferino, and in the Crimea seem tame. The ostentatious designs of France in Mexico came also to a tragic end in 1867, and her disgraceful failure there only served to make the success of Prussia, by contrast, more conspicuous.

The opposition to Napoleon III. in the French Assembly made use of these facts to increase its power. His own success had been due to good luck rather than to superior ability. He was now more than sixty years old, he was afflicted with a painful malady, he had become cautious and wavering in his policy, and he undoubtedly saw how much would be risked in provoking a war with the North German Confederation. But the temper of the French people left him no alternative. He had certainly meant to interfere in 1866 had not the marvelous rapidity of Prussia prevented it. That France had no shadow of right to interfere was all the same to his people. They held him responsible for the creation of a new political Germany, which was apparently nearly as strong as France, and that was a thing not to be endured. He yielded to the popular excitement and only waited for a pretext which might justify him before the world in declaring war.

Such a pretext came in 1870. The Spaniards had expelled their Bourbon queen, Isabella, in 1868, and were looking about for a new monarch from some other royal house. Their choice fell upon Prince Leopold of Hohenzollern, a distant relation of William I. of Prussia, but also nearly connected with the Bonaparte family through his wife, who was a daughter of the Grand Duchess Stephanie Beauharnais. On July 6 Napoleon's minister, the Duc de Gramont, declared to the French Assembly that this choice would never be tolerated by France. The French ambassador to Prussia, Benedetti, was forthwith sent to Ems, where King William was taking the waters, to treat with the king directly and ask him to forbid Leopold to accept the Spanish throne. The king very properly replied that he had no control over Leopold; that his only connection with the affair was that he happened to be the head of the family to which Leopold was distantly related; that Leopold might refuse the offer, but that he would not and could not force him to do so. As the peace of Europe seemed to be threatened seriously, Prince Leopold at once (on July 12) publicly and voluntarily declined the offer, and all cause of trouble seemed to be removed.

The French people, however, were insanely bent upon war. They wished to humiliate Prussia. The war party in the chambers, supported by the Parisian populace, demanded guarantees that Prussia would not renew the candidacy of Prince Leopold for the Spanish throne and the other sinister designs which were supposed to lie behind this. The excitement was so great and so urgently fostered by the Empress Eugenie, the Duc de Gramont, and the army that Napoleon III. again yielded. A dispatch was sent to Benedetti, instructing him to secure from King William a formal promise that he would never allow a Hohenzollern at any time in the future to be a candidate for the Spanish throne. With these instructions Benedetti, on July 13, in the Garden at Ems, met King William and tried to satisfy the wishes of the Paris government. But the king adhered to his former position with a firm and courteous refusal. When Benedetti insisted, the king told him he had nothing more to say and turned his back on him. He returned to his lodgings and sent to Bismarck a cipher dispatch of the events at Ems and of how the French had tried to extract from him a humiliating promise.

Bismarck, who probably had more to do with this Hohenzollern candidacy than he admits in his "Reflections and Reminiscences," had clearly from the first expected that the outcome would be war with France—the war for which he and Roon and Moltke had been so carefully preparing. "On July 12," he says, "I decided to hurry off from Varzin to Ems to discuss with his Majesty about summoning the Reichstag for the purpose of the mobilization. As I passed through Wussow my friend Mulert, the old clergyman, stood before the parsonage door and warmly greeted me; my answer from the open carriage was a thrust in carte and tierce in the air, and he clearly understood that I believed I was going to war. As I entered the courtyard of my house at Berlin, and before leaving the carriage, I received telegrams from which it appeared that the king was continuing to treat with Benedetti, even after the French threats and outrages in parliament and in the press, and not referring him with calm reserve to his ministers. During dinner, at which Moltke and Roon were present, the announcement arrived from the embassy in Paris that the Prince of Hohenzollern had renounced his candidature in order to prevent the war with which France threatened us. My first idea was to retire from the service, because, after all the insolent challenges which had gone before, I perceived in this extorted submission a humiliation of Germany for which I did not desire to be responsible. This impression of a wound to our sense of national honor by the compulsory withdrawal so dominated me that I had already decided to announce my retirement at Ems. I considered this humiliation before France and her swaggering demonstrations as worse than that of Olmütz. . . .

"Having decided to resign, in spite of the remonstrances which

Roon made against it, I invited him and Moltke to dine with me alone on the 13th, and communicated to them at table my views and projects for doing so. Both were greatly depressed, and reproached me indirectly with selfishly availing myself of my greater facility for withdrawing from service. I maintained the position that I could not offer up my sense of honor to politics, that both of them, being professional soldiers, and consequently without freedom of choice, need not take the same point of view as a responsible foreign minister. During our conversation I was informed that a telegram from Ems, in cipher, if I recollect rightly, of about two hundred 'groups,' was being deciphered. When the copy was handed to me it showed that Abeken had drawn up and signed the telegram at his Majesty's command, and I read it out to my guests,[1] whose dejection was so great that they turned away from food and drink. On a repeated examination of the document I lingered upon the authorization of his Majesty, which included a command, immediately to communicate Benedetti's fresh demand and its rejection both to our ambassadors and to the press. I put a few questions to Moltke as to the extent of his confidence in the state of our preparations, especially as to the time they would still require in order to meet this sudden risk of war. He answered that if there was to be war he expected no advantage to us by deferring its outbreak; and even if we should not be strong enough at first to protect all the territories on the left bank of the Rhine against French invasion, our preparations would nevertheless soon overtake those of the French, while at a later period this advantage would be diminished; he regarded a rapid outbreak as, on the whole, more favorable to us than delay.

---

[1] The telegram, handed in at Ems on July 13, 1870, at 5:30 P. M., and received in Berlin at 6.09, ran as deciphered:

"His Majesty writes to me: 'Count Benedetti spoke to me on the promenade, in order to demand from me, finally in a very importunate manner, that I should authorize him to telegraph at once that I bound myself for all future time never again to give my consent if the Hohenzollerns should renew their candidature. I refused at last somewhat sternly, as it is neither right nor possible to undertake engagements of this kind *à tout jamais*. Naturally I told him that I had as yet received no news, and as he was earlier informed about Paris and Madrid than myself, he could clearly see that my government once more had no hand in the matter.' His Majesty has since received a letter from the prince. His Majesty having told Count Benedetti that he was awaiting news from the prince, has decided, with reference to the above demand, upon the representation of Count Eulenburg and myself, not to receive Count Benedetti again, but only to let him be informed through an aide-de-camp: That his Majesty had now received from the prince confirmation of the news which Benedetti had already received from Paris, and had nothing further to say to the ambassador. His Majesty leaves it to your Excellency whether Benedetti's fresh demand and its rejection should not be at once communicated both to our ambassadors and to the press."

"In view of the attitude of France our national sense of honor compelled us, in my opinion, to go to war; and if we did not act according to the demands of this feeling we should lose, when on the way to its completion, the entire impetus toward our national development won in 1866, while the German national feeling south of the Main, aroused by our military successes of 1866, and shown by the readiness of the southern states to enter the alliances, would have to grow cold again."

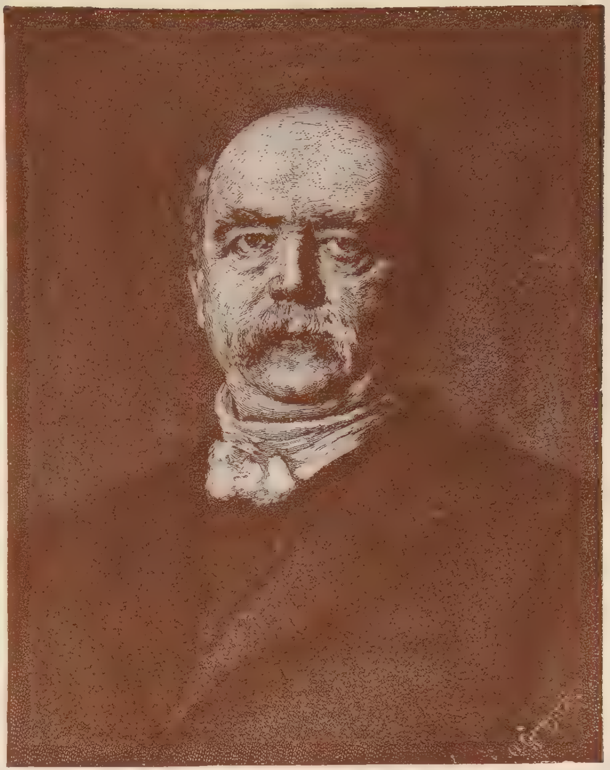
Making use of the royal authorization to publish the contents of the telegram, Bismarck, in the presence of his two guests, reduced the dispatch by striking out words, but without adding or altering, to an abbreviated form which had a more decisive sound. When he read this to his two guests, Moltke remarked: "Now it has a different ring; before it sounded like a parley; now it is like a flourish in answer to a challenge." Bismarck rightly calculated that if he at once communicated this brief form, not only to the newspapers, but also by telegraph to the Prussian embassies, it would be "known in Paris before midnight, and not only on account of its contents, but also on account of the manner of its distribution, will have the effect of a red rag upon the Gallic bull. Fight we must if we do not want to act the part of the vanquished without a battle. Success, however, essentially depends upon the impressions which the origination of the war makes upon us and others; it is important that we should be the party attacked, and this Gallic overweening and touchiness will make us, if we announce in the face of Europe, so far as we can without the speaking-trumpet of the Reichstag, that we fearlessly meet the public threats of France."

This brought about in the two generals a revulsion to a more joyous mood. They suddenly recovered their pleasure in eating and drinking and spoke in a more cheerful vein. Roon said: "Our God of old lives still and will not let us perish in disgrace." Moltke so far relinquished his passive equanimity that, glancing up joyously toward the ceiling and abandoning his usual punctiliousness of speech, he smote his hand upon his breast and said: "If I may but live to lead our armies in such a war, then the devil may come directly afterward and fetch away the 'old carcass.'"

In Paris the publication of the "Ems telegram" had the effect which Bismarck had anticipated. The war fervor rose to a white heat. The majority of the cabinet, hitherto in favor of peace, were swept away by the popular tide and the clamor from the streets, "On to Berlin!" Napoleon himself yielded to the importunity of his ministers and his wife, and on the evening of the 14th signed the declaration of war. He relied on detaching the southern German states from the Confederation, upon revolts in Hesse and Hanover, and finally upon alliances with Austria and Italy. The French people were wild with excitement, which took the form of rejoicing. They believed that they were well prepared for the struggle and would easily overwhelm the arrogant Prussians. The minister of war had only a few days before declared in the chamber that the army was "ready for any emergency." There was a general cry that Napoleon I.'s birthday, August 15, must be celebrated in Berlin. But the German people, north and south, rose as one man. For the first time in her history Germany became one compact, national power. Bavarian and Hanoverian, Prussian and Hessian, Saxon and Westphalian, joined hands and stood side by side. The temper of the people was solemn, but inflexibly firm. They did not boast of coming victory, but everyone was resolved to die rather than see Germany again overrun by the French.

This time there were no alliances. It was simply Germany on one side and France on the other. The greatest military genius, since Napoleon, Moltke, had foreseen the war, no less than Bismarck, and was equally prepared. The designs of France lay clear, and the only question was to check them in their very commencement. In eleven days Germany had 600,000 soldiers, organized in three armies, on the way, and the French had not yet crossed the frontier! Further, there was a German reserve force of 112,000, while France had but 310,000, all told, in the field. By August 2, when King William reached Mayence, three German armies (General Steinmetz on the north with 85,000 men, Prince Frederick Charles in the center with 135,000, and the Crown Prince Frederick William on the south with 200,000) stretched from Treves to Landau, and the line of the Rhine was already safe. On the same day Napoleon III. and his young son accompanied General Frossard, with about 25,000 men, in an attack upon the unfortified frontier town of Saarbrück, which was defended by only 1800 Uhlans (cavalry). The capture of this little place was telegraphed to Paris and

COUNT HELMUTH KARL BERNHARD VON MOLTKE
(Born 1800. Died 1891)
Painting by Franz von Lenbach



OTTO EDUARD LEOPOLD, PRINCE VON BISMARCK
(Born 1815. Died 1898)
Painting by Franz von Lenbach

received with the wildest rejoicings; but it was the only instance during the war when French troops stood upon German soil—unless as prisoners.

On August 4 the army of the crown prince crossed the French frontier and defeated Marshal MacMahon's right wing at Weissenburg. The old castle was stormed and taken by the Bavarians and the French repulsed, after a loss of about 1000 on each side. MacMahon concentrated his whole force and occupied a strong position near the village of Wörth, where he was again attacked on the 6th. The battle lasted thirteen hours and was fiercely contested. The Germans lost 10,000 killed and wounded, the French 8000 and 9000 prisoners; but when night came MacMahon's defeat turned into a panic. Part of his army fled toward the Vosges Mountains, part toward Strasburg, and nearly all Alsatia was open to the victorious Germans. On the very same day the army of Steinmetz stormed the heights of Spicheren, near Saarbrück, and won a splendid victory. This was followed by an immediate advance across the frontier at Forbach and the capture of a great amount of supplies.

Thus in less than three weeks from the declaration of war the attitude of France was changed from the aggressive to the defensive, the field of war was transferred to French soil, and all Napoleon III.'s plans of alliance were rendered vain. Leaving a division of Baden troops to invest Strasburg, the crown prince pressed forward with his main army and in a few days reached Nancy, in Lorraine. The armies of the north and center advanced at the same time, defeated Bazaine on August 14 at Courcelles, and forced him to fall back upon Metz. He thereupon determined, after garrisoning the forts of Metz, to retreat still further, in order to unite with General Trochu, who was organizing a new army at Châlons, and with the remnants of MacMahon's forces. Moltke detected his plans at once, and the army of Frederick Charles was thereupon hurried across the Moselle to get into his rear and prevent the junction.

The struggle between the two commenced on the 16th, near the village of Mars-la-Tour, where Bazaine, with 180,000 men, endeavored to force his way past Frederick Charles, who had but 120,000, the other two German armies being still in the rear. For six hours the latter held his position under a murderous fire, until three corps arrived to reinforce him. Bazaine claimed a victory, although he lost the southern and shorter road to Verdun; but Moltke none the less gained his object. The losses were about 17,000 killed and wounded on each side.

After a single day of rest the struggle was resumed on the 18th, when the still bloodier and more desperate battle of Gravelotte was fought. The Germans now had about 200,000 soldiers together, while Bazaine had 180,000, with a great advantage in his position on a high plateau just west of Metz. In this battle the former situation of the combatants was changed. The Germans, who had marched past Metz, faced eastward, the French westward—a circumstance which made defeat more disastrous to either side. The strife began in the morning and continued until darkness put an end to it. The French right wing yielded after a succession of heroic assaults, but the center and left wing resisted gallantly until the very close of the battle. It was a hard-won victory, adding 20,000 killed and wounded to the German losses, but it cut off Bazaine's retreat and forced him to take shelter behind the fortifications of Metz, the siege of which, by Prince Frederick Charles with 200,000 men, immediately commenced, while the rest of the German army marched on to attack MacMahon and Trochu at Châlons.

There could be no question as to the bravery of the French troops in these two battles. In Paris the government and people persisted in considering them victories, until the imprisonment of Bazaine's army proved that their result was defeat. Then a wild cry of rage rang through the land. France had been betrayed, and by whom, if not by the German residents in Paris and other cities? The latter, more than 100,000 in number, including women and children, were expelled from the country. The French people, not the government, were responsible for this act. The latter was barely able to protect the Germans from worse violence.

MacMahon had in the meantime organized a new army of 125,000 men in the camp at Châlons, where, it was supposed, he would dispute the advance on Paris. This was his plan, in fact, and he was with difficulty persuaded by Marshal Palikao, the minister of war, to give it up and undertake a rapid march up the Meuse, along the Belgian frontier, to relieve Bazaine in Metz. On August 23 the crown prince, who had already passed beyond Verdun on his way to Châlons, received intelligence that the French had left the latter place. Detachments of Uhlans, sent out in all haste to reconnoiter, soon brought the astonishing news that MacMahon was marching rapidly northward. General Moltke detected his plan, which could only be thwarted by the most vigorous movement on the part of the German forces. The front of the advance was instantly changed, reformed on the right flank, and all pushed northward by forced marches.

MacMahon had the outer and longer line, so that, in spite of the rapidity of his movements, he was met by the extreme right wing of the German army on August 28, at Stenay on the Meuse. Being here held in check, fresh divisions were hurried against him, several small engagements followed, and on the 31st he was defeated at Beaumont by the Crown Prince of Saxony. The German right was thereupon pushed beyond the Meuse and occupied the passes of the forest of Ardennes, leading into Belgium. Meanwhile the German left, under Frederick William, was rapidly driving back the French right and cutting off the road to Paris. Nothing was left to MacMahon but to concentrate his forces and retire upon the small fortified city of Sedan. Napoleon III., who had left Metz before the battle of Mars-la-Tour, and did not dare to return to Paris at such a time, was with him.

The Germans, now numbering 200,000, lost no time in planting batteries on all the heights which surround the valley of the Meuse at Sedan, like the rim of an irregular basin. MacMahon had 112,000 men, and his only chance of success was to break through the wider ring which enclosed him at some point where it was weak. The battle began at five o'clock on the morning of September 1. The principal struggle was for the possession of the villages of Bazeilles and Illy and the heights of Daigny. MacMahon was severely wounded soon after the fight began; the command was then given to General Ducrot and afterward to General Wimpffen, who knew neither the ground nor the plan of operations. The German artillery fire was fearful, and the French infantry could not stand before it, while their cavalry was almost annihilated during the afternoon in a succession of charges on the Prussian infantry.

By three o'clock it was evident that the French army was defeated. Driven back from every strong point which was held in the morning, hurled together in a demoralized mass, nothing was left but surrender. General Lauriston appeared with a white flag on the walls of Sedan, and the terrible fire of the German artillery ceased. Napoleon III. wrote to King William: "Not having been able to die at the head of my troops, I lay my sword at your Majesty's feet," and retired to the castle of Bellevue, outside of the city. Early the next morning he had an interview with Bismarck at the little village of Donchery, and then formally surrendered to the king at Bellevue.

During the battle 25,000 French soldiers had been taken prisoners. The remaining 83,000, including 4000 officers, surrendered on September 2; 400 cannon, 70 mitrailleuses, and 1100 horses also fell into the hands of the Germans. Never before in history had such a host been taken captive. The news of this overwhelming victory electrified the world. Germany rang with rejoicings, and her emigranted sons in America and Australia joined in the jubilee. The people said: "It will be another Seven Weeks' War," and this hope might possibly have been fulfilled but for the sudden political change in France. On the 4th (two days after the surrender) a revolution broke out in Paris, the Empress Eugénie and the members of her government fled, and a republic was declared. The French, blaming Napoleon alone for their tremendous national humiliation, believed that they could yet recover their lost ground; and when one of their prominent leaders, the statesman Jules Favre, declared that "not one foot of soil, not one stone of a fortress" should be yielded to Germany, the popular enthusiasm knew no bounds.

But it was too late. The great superiority of the military organization of Prussia had been manifested against the regular troops of France, and it could not be expected that new armies of volunteers, however brave and devoted, would be more successful. The army of the crown prince marched on toward Paris without opposition, and on September 17 came in sight of the city, which was defended by an outer circle of powerful detached fortresses, constructed during the reign of Louis Philippe. General Trochu was made military governor, with 70,000 men—the last remnant of the regular army—under his command. He had barely time to garrison and strengthen the forts when the city was surrounded and the siege commenced.

For two months thereafter the interest of the war is centered upon sieges. The fortified city of Toul, in Lorraine, surrendered on September 23, Strasburg, after a six weeks' siege, on the 28th, and thus the two lines of railway communication between Germany and Paris were secured. All the German reserves were called into the field, until finally more than 800,000 soldiers stood upon French soil. After two or three attempts to break through the lines, Bazaine surrendered Metz on October 28. It was another event without a parallel in military history. Three marshals of France, 6000 officers, 145,000 unwounded soldiers, 73 eagles, 854 pieces of artillery, and 400,000 chassepot rifles were surrendered to Prince Frederick Charles!

After these successes the capture of Paris became only a question of time. Although the republican leader, Gambetta, escaped from the city in a balloon, and by his fiery eloquence aroused the people of central and southern France, every plan for raising the siege of Paris failed. The French volunteers were formed into three armies—that of the North, under Faidherbe; of the Loire, under Aurelles de Paladine (afterward under Chanzy and Bourbaki); and of the East, under Kératry. Besides, a great many companies of *franctireurs,* or independent sharpshooters, were organized to interrupt the German communications, and they gave much more trouble than the larger armies. About the end of November a desperate attempt was made to raise the siege of Paris. General Paladine marched from Orleans with 150,000 men, while Trochu tried to break the lines of the besiegers on the eastern side. The latter was repelled, after a bloody fight; the former was attacked at Beaune la Roland by Prince Frederick Charles, with only half the number of troops, and most signally defeated. The Germans then carried on the winter campaign with the greatest vigor, both in the northern provinces and along the Loire, and Trochu, with his 400,000 men, made no further serious effort to save Paris.

Frederick Charles took Orleans on December 5, advanced to Tours, and finally, in a six days' battle, early in January, 1871, at Le Mans, literally cut the army of the Loire to pieces. The French lost 60,000 in killed, wounded, and prisoners. Faidherbe was defeated in the north a week afterward, and the only resistance left was in Burgundy, where Garibaldi (who hastened to France after the republic was proclaimed) had been successful in two or three small engagements, and was now replaced by Bourbaki. The object of the latter was to relieve the fortress of Belfort, then besieged by General Werder, who with 43,000 men awaited his coming in a strong position among the mountains. Notwithstanding Bourbaki had more than 100,000 men, he was forced to retreat after a fight of three days, and then General Manteuffel, who had been sent in all haste to strengthen Werder, followed him so closely that on February 1, all retreat being cut off, his whole army of 83,000 men crossed the Swiss frontier, and after suffering terribly among the snowy passes of the Jura, were disarmed, fed, and clothed by the Swiss government and people. Bourbaki attempted to commit suicide, but only inflicted a severe wound, from which he afterward recovered.

This retreat into Switzerland was almost the last event of the Seven Months' War, as it might be called, and it was as remarkable as the surrenders of Sedan and Metz. All power of defense was now broken. France was completely at the mercy of her conquerors. On January 28, after long negotiations between Bismarck and Jules Favre, the forts around Paris capitulated and Trochu's army became prisoners of war. The city was not occupied, but, for the sake of the half-starved population, provisions were allowed to enter. The armistice, originally declared for three weeks, was prolonged until March 1, when the preliminaries of peace were agreed upon and hostilities came to an end.

By the final treaty of peace, which was concluded at Frankfort on May 10, 1871, France gave up Alsatia and eastern Lorraine, including Metz and Thionville to Germany. The territory thus transferred comprised three French departments and contained about 5500 square miles and 1,580,000 inhabitants.[2] France also agreed to pay an indemnity of five thousand millions of francs, in installments; certain of her departments were occupied by German troops, and only evacuated by degrees, as the payments were made. France was allowed to retain Belfort and its territory on account of the heroic defense which its garrison had sustained. Thus ended this astonishing war, during which 17 great battles and 156 minor engagements had been fought, 22 fortified places taken, 385,000 soldiers (including 11,360 officers) made prisoners, and 7200 cannon and 600,000 stand of arms acquired by Germany. There is no such crushing defeat of a strong nation recorded in history.

Even before the capitulation of Paris the natural political result of the victory was secured to Germany. The coöperation of the three southern states in the war removed the last barrier to a union of all except Austria under the lead of Prussia. That which the great majority of the people desired was also satisfactory to the princes: the "North German Confederation" was enlarged and transformed into the "German Empire" by including Bavaria, Würtemberg, and Baden. It was agreed that the young king of Bavaria, Ludwig II., as occupying the most important position among the rulers of the three separate states, should ask King William to assume the imperial dignity, with the condition that it should be hereditary in his family. The other princes and the free cities united in the call; and on January 18, 1871, in the grand hall of the palace of Versailles, where Richelieu and Louis XIV. and Napoleon I. had plotted their invasions of Germany, the king formally accepted the title of emperor, and the German states were at last united as one compact, indivisible nation.

---

[2] This territory of Alsace-Lorraine was not annexed to Prussia, but to the newly formed German Empire. It became an "imperial territory" (*Reichsland*) and was put directly under the management of the central government. It has no vote in the Upper House (*Bundesrath*), but sends fifteen elected representatives to the Lower House (*Reichstag*).

The Emperor William I. concluded his proclamation to the German people with these words: "May God permit us, and our successors to the imperial crown, to give at all times increase to the German Empire, not by the conquests of war, but by the goods and gifts of peace, in the path of national prosperity, freedom, and morality!" After the end of the war was assured he left Paris and passed in a swift march of triumph through Germany to Berlin, where the popular enthusiasm was extravagantly exhibited. France had undertaken the war of 1870-1871 to undo the work of 1866. The result had been exactly the opposite of what she had hoped and expected. Prussia emerged from the war not weakened or broken, but immeasurably strengthened. She had also accomplished what she had long striven for—the union of Germany into a solid, well-knit nation, in which Prussia was the predominant member and from which Austria was excluded. This new German Empire which Bismarck more than any other one man had helped to create, had all the vigor and strength of youth. It was already predominant in the diplomatic world. Bismarck might well have retired from public life with the reputation of the greatest statesman of the nineteenth century. But he was not content. He wished to make sure that the constitution of the new empire would work satisfactorily, and he wished Germany to stride forward in economic and material well-being until she should be as predominant in the commercial world as she already was in the diplomatic.

Chapter XL

THE GERMAN EMPIRE. 1871—1914

THE events of the period from 1866 to 1870 had entirely changed the political face of Germany. Instead of a league of loosely united states, as in the confederation of 1815, or an incomplete unity, such as had existed after 1866, when Bavaria, Würtemberg, Hesse, and Baden were still independent states refusing to enter the North German Confederation, there had been formed in consequence of the war of 1870 a single empire, not weak and broken by internal dissension, as had been the old confederation, but strong and influential, and raised by virtue of its victories and the genius of its statesmen to the position of leader among the European powers. But the new Germany bore indelible marks of the conditions from which it had sprung and the circumstances that had attended its establishment. The system of universal military service and the attainment of unity by force of arms gave to the state a military character and increased its interest in military affairs. The supremacy of Prussia both politically and territorially, and the fact that her armies had led the way to victory, made it inevitable that she should force her methods upon Germany, and that Bismarck, who had controlled her destinies since 1862 and become both president of the Prussian ministry and chancellor of the empire, should be the master of the new policy.

The empire founded in 1871 is a federal state based in the main on a national foundation, although there are included within its limits Danes, Alsatians, and Poles, who form a restless party of opposition. The constitution, being drawn up largely by Bismarck, who knew precisely what he wanted and the limitations imposed upon him, creates a powerful military state. As might be expected, the clauses on most subjects are comparatively meager; but those on the army, the navy, and the revenue are drawn up with a "minuteness befitting the by-laws of a commercial company." The Prussian military system is that which is adopted and made uniform in the other states of the empire; there is but a single army for the empire, and it is under the command of the emperor, who must always be the king of Prussia. He selects the generals, but leaves to the individual states the appointment of the inferior officers and the routine management of the troops.

The empire is composed of twenty-five states, exclusive of the imperial provinces of Alsace and Lorraine, of very different size and importance, all the way from the kingdom of Prussia, with a population of 35,000,000 and an area of 134,000 square miles, down to the principality of Schaumburg-Lippe, with less than 50,000 souls and 131 square miles![1] Prussia, owing to her preponderating size, has several special privileges which give her still further controlling power in the empire. Amendments to the constitution, although requiring only an ordinary majority in the Reichstag, are

---

[1] The following table shows the different states composing the German Empire, their area and population in 1900, and their representation in each branch of the legislature, which is described later:

States of the Empire	Area English sq. miles	Population Dec. 1, 1900	Number of Members in Bundesrath	Number of Deputies in Reichstag
Kingdom of Prussia	134,603	34,472,509	17	236
Kingdom of Bavaria	29,282	6,176,057	6	48
Kingdom of Saxony	5,787	4,202,216	4	23
Kingdom of Würtemberg	7,528	2,169,480	4	17
Grand-Duchy of Baden	5,821	1,867,944	3	14
Grand-Duchy of Hesse	2,965	1,119,893	3	9
Grand-Duchy of Mecklenburg-Schwerin	5,135	607,770	2	6
Grand-Duchy of Saxe-Weimar	1,388	362,873	1	3
Grand-Duchy of Mecklenburg-Strelitz	1,131	102,602	1	1
Grand-Duchy of Oldenburg	2,479	399,180	1	3
Duchy of Brunswick	1,424	464,333	2	3
Duchy of Saxe-Meiningen	953	250,731	1	2
Duchy of Saxe-Altenburg	511	194,914	1	1
Duchy of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha	755	229,550	1	2
Duchy of Anhalt	906	316,085	1	2
Principality of Schwarzburg-Sondershausen	363	80,898	1	1
Principality of Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt	333	93,059	1	1
Principality of Waldeck	433	57,918	1	1
Principality of Reuss Aelterer Linie	319	68,396	1	1
Principality of Ruess Jüngerer Linie	122	139,210	1	1
Principality of Schaumburg-Lippe	131	43,132	1	1
Principality of Lippe	469	138,952	1	1
Free town of Lübeck	115	96,775	1	1
Free town of Bremen	99	224,882	1	1
Free town of Hamburg	158	768,349	1	3
Reichsland of Alsace-Lorraine	5,600	1,719,470	—	15
Total	208,830	56,367,178	58	397

defeated in the Bundesrath if fourteen negative votes are thrown against them, and as Prussia has seventeen votes in that body she has an absolute veto on all changes of the constitution. Besides this, it is expressly provided that in the case of all bills relating to the army, the navy, or the system of raising or collecting taxes, the vote of Prussia in the Bundesrath is decisive if cast in favor of maintaining the existing institutions. Prussia has also the casting vote in case of a tie in the Bundesrath, and is given the chairmanship of all the standing committees of that body.

The legislature consists of two houses: the Reichstag, or House of Representatives, and the Bundesrath, or Federal Council. The former is an elected chamber, created for the sake of stimulating national sentiment and enlisting popular support as against the local and dynastic influences which were the curse of the old confederation, and which still have free play in the Bundesrath. The 397 members of the Reichstag are elected for five years by direct universal suffrage and secret ballot. Voters must be twenty-five years old, and not in active military service, paupers, or otherwise disqualified. The members are chosen in single electoral districts fixed by imperial law. These had originally a hundred thousand inhabitants apiece, but they have not been revised for more than a score of years, and with the growth of the large cities have gradually become very unequal. In the case of Berlin the disproportion is enormous, for the city, according to the last census, has nearly two million inhabitants, but is still represented by only six members. The government, however, is not anxious for a redistribution of seats, because Berlin elects Radicals and Socialists, who form a troublesome opposition—a tendency which is also true of other large centers of population. As in the United States, no district can be composed of parts of different states, so that every state, however small, elects at least one representative. Of the 397 seats Prussia has 236, and the eleven smaller states one apiece.

Universal suffrage was looked upon as an experiment of a somewhat hazardous character, and Bismarck insisted on the nonpayment of members of the Reichstag as a safeguard. This has been a bone of contention with the Liberals ever since—the Reichstag having repeatedly passed bills for the payment of its members, which the Bundesrath has invariably rejected. The absence of remuneration has not been without effect, for it has deterred university professors and other men of small means, usually of liberal views, from accepting an office which entails the expense of a long residence at Berlin; but it has not fulfilled the predictions that were made either by its friends or its foes, for it has not caused a dearth of candidates nor discouraged the presence of men who make politics their occupation. The provision has, however, a meaning one would hardly suspect. In 1885, when the Socialist representatives were paid a salary by their own party, Bismarck, claiming that such a proceeding was illegal, caused the treasury to sue them for the sums of money they had received in this way; and, strange to say, the imperial court of appeal sustained the suit. The object of withholding pay from the members is, of course, to prevent the power of the poorer classes from becoming too great; but a much more effectual means to the same end is the habit of holding elections on working days, instead of holding them on Sundays, as is done in France and most of the other Catholic countries.

The powers of the Reichstag appear very great on paper. All laws require its consent, and so do the budget, all loans, and all commercial treaties which would involve matters falling within the domain of legislation. It has a right to initiate legislation, to ask the government for reports, and to express its opinion on the management of affairs. In reality, however, its powers are not so great as they seem. The constitution provides, for example, that the budget shall be annual, but the principal revenue laws are permanent, and cannot be changed without the consent of the Bundesrath, while the most important appropriation, that for the army, is virtually determined by the law fixing the number of the troops, and this has hitherto been voted for a number of years at a time.[2] The chief function of the Reichstag is, in fact, the consideration of bills prepared by the chancellor and the Bundesrath. These it criticises and amends pretty freely; but its activity is rather negative than positive, and although important measures occasionally have been passed at its instigation, it cannot be said to direct the policy of the state either in legislation or administration.

The Bundesrath is an extraordinary body partaking of the nature of an upper house, an executive council, a court of appeal, and a permanent assembly of diplomats. It is the most thoroughly native feature of the German Empire, and is really an outgrowth of previous conditions. It is composed of delegates appointed by the princes of the states and the senates of the free cities. In the Bundesrath there are 58 seats, of which Prussia has 17, Bavaria 6, and the remaining states from 1 to 4 apiece. Thus it has usually been easy for Prussia to get enough additional votes to have an absolute majority, and have her own way; but on several notable occasions the other states have combined and defeated her. This happened in 1877, when the seat of the imperial court of appeal was fixed at Leipzig, instead of Berlin, as she desired; and in 1876 on the more important question of the imperial railroad law. At that time Bismarck refrained altogether from introducing into the Bundesrath a bill for the purchase of railroads by the empire, knowing it would be defeated by the opposition of the middle-sized states, although the project was one on which he had set his heart. Again, in 1879, another railroad bill was killed in the Bundesrath by the opposition of Bavaria, Saxony, and Würtemberg, and in the same year a conference of the finance ministers of the states refused to consent to the tobacco monopoly.

---

[2] In 1871 for three years; in 1874, 1880, and 1887 for seven years; in 1893 for five years; and in 1899 for three years.

The executive power is in the hands of the emperor (*Kaiser*), who is always king of Prussia, and of the all-powerful chancellor (*Reichskanzler*), who is usually a Prussian official and president of the Prussian cabinet. There is no imperial cabinet responsible to parliament, like the English cabinet, and composed of heads of departments standing on an equal footing. Instead, there towers above, and alone, the chancellor, who has subordinates, but not colleagues. His unique position is due to the fact that Bismarck created the office for himself and did not wish to be hampered by associates. He had had experience enough of the Prussian cabinet methods, where each of the members was very independent in the management of his own department. Being by nature intolerant of opposition, Bismarck always hated to waste his time and strength in persuading his colleagues—and all their friends and advisers—that the policy he had decided to adopt was a wise one. The chancellor is not responsible criminally for his policy, and Bismarck steadily refused to hold himself responsible politically to anyone but his royal master, so that practically the parliamentary system does not exist in the German Empire, and the chancellor does not resign on a hostile vote in the Reichstag. If that body will not pass one of his measures, he gets on as well as he can without it; or, if he considers it a matter of vital importance, he causes the

Reichstag to be dissolved and takes the chance of success from a new election.

The powers of the chancellor are wide-reaching. He presides in the Bundesrath, and is in fact its leading and moving spirit. He also takes an active part in the debates of the Reichstag, explaining and defending his imperial measures and policy. His powers, in the years immediately after the Franco-Prussian War, were greater than those of any other man in the world. The burden soon proved too great for even Bismarck's iron frame to bear. When, therefore, he was granted a leave of absence for rest, an act was passed in 1878 providing for the appointment, by the emperor, of a vice-chancellor, or general substitute. This new official was intended to act only during the interval of the chancellor's absence, but with the increasing business of the empire has now become a permanent necessity. Similarly it has become the custom to make as many as possible of the imperial secretaries of state special substitutes for their own departments, with the power of countersigning the acts of the emperor in the chancellor's stead; they also are often appointed Prussian delegates to the Bundesrath, in order that they may speak for their department both in that body and in the Reichstag. They are, nevertheless, subject always to the chancellor's orders; he remains practically the sole head of the government, and the person morally, if not politically, responsible for its whole policy, domestic and foreign.

Justice and judicial procedure have been wholly remodeled in the empire. In 1871 there was the greatest confusion and variety in legal practice. Each little state, and often, even, each city, had its own particular code and legal system. When the city had been absorbed in the larger territory, sometimes it had kept its special code, sometimes only part of it; oftentimes the question was left in uncertainty and confusion. In one district there would be trial by jury in open court; in a neighboring district the older procedure by written pleadings before a judge; and in many districts, especially in the north along the Baltic, the old feudal jurisdiction of the manorial courts still survived. Such complications and confusion could not be allowed to continue in the new empire. Legal commissions were at once appointed to study different sides of the question and draw up new codes which should supersede the old. The commissions worked slowly and carefully, and succeeded fairly well in reconciling and combining the various elements—

Roman Law, Teutonic Law, and the Code Napoleon—into new codes. In 1877 a criminal code was completed and adopted for the empire, in 1897 a commercial code, and in 1900 a very comprehensive civil code crowned the task of establishing uniformity in law and procedure. Each state retains its local courts, but there is an appeal to the court of the empire (*Reichsgericht*), which sits at Leipzig.

Since the founding of the empire one of the most interesting, and yet most complex, features of German history has been the development of political parties. They do not, as in England or America, fall into two great divisions, one supporting and the other opposing the government. On the contrary, there are more than a dozen parties which now support, now oppose, the measures of the chancellor, and which have varied much in numbers.[3] The four most important parties were already in existence in Prussia before 1870, and were taken over by the new empire from the Prussian kingdom. To understand their origin a glance backward to the "Period of Conflict" in the early sixties is necessary.

In the bitter constitutional struggle between Bismarck and the parliamentary party over the reorganization of the Prussian army, the deputies in the Prussian legislature were sharply divided into two parties—the Conservatives and the Progressives (or *Fortschrittspartei*). The former was the one to which Bismarck himself by birth and training naturally belonged. It was recruited mainly from the lesser nobility and "Junkers," and came largely

---

[3] The following table shows the strength of the various parties in the Reichstag at the more important elections:

PARTIES	1898	1899
Conservatives	53	58
Free Conservatives (Reichspartei)	21	15
National Liberals	48	50
Liberals (Fortschritt, Freisinnige)	43	35
Center or Clericals	103	100
Social Democrats	56	82
Poles	14	16
Alsace-Lorrainers	10	9
Anti-Semites	12	9
Danes and Guelphs	9	8
Other Parties	28	15
Total	397	397

from east of the Elbe. The Conservatives were upholders of militarism, of social class distinctions, and of the strong monarchy which had given to themselves and their relatives most of the military, civil, and diplomatic appointments. But during the "Period of Conflict" they were almost always in a minority.

The Progressives, on the other hand, aimed to introduce into Prussia a truly parliamentary government, to have the ministers responsible to the legislature, to have real control over the granting and expending of taxes, and to reduce the monarchical power and influence until it should be no greater in Prussia than in England. Over the Progressive majority, however, Bismarck had ridden rough-shod, telling them that nothing could be accomplished by speeches and celebrations and songs, but only by "blood and iron." It was in spite of the bitterest Progressive opposition that Bismarck carried out the army reorganization. The wonderful victory over Austria which followed seemed to justify Bismarck's policy and methods, and to disarm criticism. A sudden change took place in public opinion: instead of the tyrannical despiser of popular rights, Bismarck appeared to be a far-sighted statesman, a champion of German unity, and even of liberty and democracy. This feeling was still further increased when he adopted universal manhood suffrage as the basis on which were elected representatives to the legislature of the North German Confederation, and then to its successor, the Reichstag of the empire. These changes, together with the Franco-Prussian War and the union of the south German states, resulted in splitting each of the old existing parties into two new divisions. A number of the Conservatives, who were less reactionary than their fellows and more in favor of the new federal system, left the party and organized another called the Free Conservatives (or *Deutsche Reichspartei*). Similarly those Progressives, who were less dogmatic and *doctrinaire*, and had more confidence in Bismarck than the rest of the Progressives, split off and formed a more moderate party known as the National Liberals. Their members came largely from south Germany and from the smaller German states, and formed a truly national patriotic party. These two new middle parties—Free Conservatives and National Liberals—were the ones which supported Bismarck in the first years of the empire.

Under the head of "irreconcilables" are included several little parties, or rather factions, which almost invariably vote against the government as a means of protesting against the wrong which they believe has been done to their country. Such are the Guelphs of Hanover, the Poles, Danes, and Alsace-Lorrainers, who regard the absorption of their country into the empire as a wrongful act. Various efforts have been made alternately by coercion and conciliation to break their opposition, to make them feel that they are an important and integral part of the German Empire, but with only partial success.

In Alsace-Lorraine a systematic attempt was made to extirpate French from the schools, from official proceedings, and from the railways; it was even forbidden on signs and posters. Fines and imprisonment were used to repress manifestations of French sympathy in any form. Journals with French tendencies and journals coming from France were suppressed. But all this failed to make the population German. Manteuffel, who became governor in 1879, tried a more conciliatory policy and endeavored to win the respect of the people, but his successor returned to the repressive methods, and, to prevent agitation by French agents, enforced a careful system of requiring all persons crossing the border to show passports. In the last ten years, however, the Alsace-Lorraine question has been less bitter. Germanization seems to some extent to be succeeding; it is estimated that eighty per cent. of the population now speak German as their mother-tongue. There has been a considerable settlement by German farmers from across the Rhine, and the whole region has shared in the growth of Germany's material prosperity. Strasburg, especially, has grown in wealth and numbers, and with her flourishing new university with German professors has become a center of really German patriotic feeling, which may spread into the rest of the regions won from France in 1870-1871. Some French newspapers have openly advocated recognizing as permanent the renunciation of territory, in order to ensure better relations with Germany. And it is probably true that the desire for the reunion of Alsace-Lorraine to France is less strong to-day among the population of the province itself than among the nationalists of Paris, who keep continually decorated the statue of Strassburg in the Place de la Concorde.

In the Polish provinces the outlook is less hopeful. Before 1848 German liberals regarded the partition of Poland as a great crime and were anxious to make amends for it. Bismarck himself remembered how, in his early boyhood, after the failure of the

PROCLAMATION OF KING WILLIAM OF PRUSSIA AS EMPEROR OF GERMANY IN THE HALL OF MIRRORS OF THE PALACE AT VERSAILLES

Painting by Anton von Werner

—page 427

Polish Revolution of 1830, Polish refugees were received in every German town with honors and enthusiasm greater than those paid to the men who had fought in the War of German Liberation. But Bismarck never shared this feeling. He saw in the Poles an anti-German and an anti-imperial element; he clearly realized that any reëstablishment of Poland must inevitably lead to trouble with Russia, which also has a large Polish element, and that the Poles would never be satisfied until they regained lands which Prussia would never be willing to surrender. He, therefore, adopted toward the Poles an attitude of uncompromising hostility, and steadily pursued a repressive policy. In 1885 and 1886 new Polish settlers in Prussian Poland were expelled; the whole administration of the schools was taken out of the hands of the local authorities and given over to the central government, so as to prevent the instruction from being given in Polish; and finally a law was passed authorizing the Prussian government to spend nearly twenty-five million dollars in purchasing estates from Polish families and settling German colonists on the land. Within ten years some two thousand German peasants were transplanted, but it is doubtful whether this has much practical effect, for the Poles have founded a society to protect their own interests, and have often managed to profit by the artificial value given to the property. And though in school the children may have to learn their lessons in German, in their play, at the dinner table, and in their prayers they will still speak Polish. The attempt at colonization by German settlers has still further increased the bitterness of the Polish peasants, and is partly defeated by the fact that Poles multiply much faster than the Germans and, being more thrifty and frugal, make dangerous competitors for their German neighbors. The colonization is also partly counteracted by the fact that the large proprietors in purely German districts continue to import Polish laborers to work on their estates. Emperor William II., shortly after his accession, made concessions in the matter of schools, but soon returned to Bismarck's policy. Twenty-five million dollars more were voted for colonization purposes, but there seems little likelihood that the Poles, in the immediate future at least, can be compelled to give up their mother-tongue and national traditions.

The Socialist party, or Social Democrats, as they call themselves, were small in numbers at the founding of the empire, but have steadily grown in power since then. They are a product of the discontent which has inevitably come with the progress in manufacturing, with the widening of the gulf between rich and poor, and with the growth of a great protelariat. The teachings of Marx in favor of communism and of Lassalle in favor of equal political rights for all found ready hearers, who, in 1869, united and formed the Social Democratic Workingman's party. Bebel and Liebknecht were its leaders and spokesmen. The Social Democrats opposed the Franco-Prussian War, and expressed sympathy with the Paris Communists, thereby offending German national feeling and exposing themselves to taunts of coward and traitor. Though they opposed the warlike methods by which German unity was secured, they accepted the empire and profited by it indirectly. For after 1870 the old customs barriers and many other hindrances to trade were swept away, and the natural development of industry and trade gave a new impulse to business activity and prosperity. The enormous French war indemnity acted as a further stimulus. Prices rose, including the price of labor; the workingman for the moment felt better off and more self-important. This new capital also led everywhere to the construction of new factories, railroads, and enterprises of every kind. It is estimated that in the three years between 1871 and 1874 as many factories were built as in all the preceding seventy years! In Prussia, in 1872 alone, in addition to 1800 existing miles of railroad, 700 more were actually laid down and 1200 planned! Soon, however, unscrupulous promoters, taking advantage of the public interest and confidence in business activity, launched upon an unsuspecting public innumerable companies and schemes which were mere swindles; stock-jobbing methods of robbing the public flourished for a time, until the natural result of over-capitalization and unsound finance came in the terrible crash of 1873. Companies failed on every hand; workingmen were not only thrown out of employment, but they found too often that the small savings which they had made were now completely swept away in the bankrupt companies. The result was an increase of discontent among the working class, and as the size of the Social Democratic party is a gauge of the discontent in Germany, they gained nine seats in the Reichstag elections in 1874. They controlled several newspapers, had a centralized management and a treasury, and formed a compact party. On account of their attacks on religion, marriage, monarchy, and private property, Bismarck already looked upon them with disfavor, but was not ready to act against them on account of the great struggle he was at the moment waging against the Clerical party.

Of a wholly different nature from the preceding parties was the Clerical party, which appeared in the first Reichstag in 1871 with the astonishing large number of sixty-three representatives. These men were neither conservative nor liberal exclusively, but contained both aristocratic and democratic elements—nobles from Bavaria and radicals from the manufacturing cities on the Rhine. Their common bond was their Catholic religion, and their common aim was to support the Pope in his new dogmatic pretensions, and try to win back for him his recently lost temporal power. In the Reichstag, therefore, they took seats neither on the right with the Conservatives nor on the left with the Progressists, but in the center, and have since been known, therefore, as the *Centrum,* or Clerical party. Their numbers have always remained large; they fought and practically won the *Kulturkampf* against Bismarck; and since 1880 they have frequently exercised a controlling and decisive position in the Reichstag by their possession of the balance of power between the various parties.

The Catholics had appeared as a political party before the Franco-Prussian War, but had aroused little notice. But the Syllabus, the Vatican Council, and the declaration of Papal infallibility gave them new strength, and their increased aggressiveness aroused growing opposition among some of the governments, which feared that the logical outcome of Papal infallibility would be an attempt on the part of the Pope to assume infallibility in politics and to attempt to subordinate the state to the church. The old mediæval specter again raised its head, of a state within a state, and of spiritual interference in temporal affairs. Then came the victorious march of the Italian troops into Rome and the Pope's loss of that "Patrimony of St. Peter" which the Papacy had possessed undisputed for a thousand years and more. The inevitable result of this was that Roman Catholics all over the world felt themselves bound together in a common political cause: each was bound in his own state to use his full influence to procure interference either by diplomacy or by arms for the rescue of the "Prisoner of the Vatican." Thus in Germany the Hanoverian Windthorst in the fall of 1870 had a secret meeting with Bavarian Catholics to adopt a common plan of action. On New Year's Day, 1871, their organ, the *Germania,* began its regular issue. And in February, while the German army was still encamped before Paris, an address was presented to the King of Prussia at Versailles, urging him to use the influence of the new formed empire to reëstablish the temporal power of the Pope. It was, of course, rejected by Bismarck, who saw its impossibility. He was irritated always at any attempt to dictate to him in matters of foreign policy. This irritation increased when the Reichstag met a few weeks later. He found that the Center had more than sixty seats, and refused to vote in favor of the usual address to the crown on account of a clause condemning interference in the affairs of foreign countries —a clause designed to prevent any action in favor of the Pope. His dislike of the Center increased still further as he found that Windthorst and many of the Clericals were "particularists," who were either openly opposed to the new empire or who were at least opposed to a strong central governement. Thus Bismarck opposed the Center on political grounds, as a party disloyal and dangerous to the empire, as a "mobilization of the church against the state." "The question at issue," he declared, "is not a struggle of an evangelistic dynasty against the Catholic Church; it is the old struggle—a struggle for power as old as the human race, between king and priest, a struggle which is much older than the appearance of our Redeemer in this world, a struggle which has filled German history of the Middle Ages till the destruction of the German Empire."

But the question did not long remain a merely political one. It soon spread outside of Prussia, and aroused religious hatreds and bitterness all over Germany in a way which recalled the days of the Reformation.

When the Pope tried to make the German bishops and clergy accept the new dogma of Papal infallibility the majority complied, but a certain number refused. These latter were then at once excommunicated by the Pope; they therefore seceded and formed themselves into a group known as Old Catholics. When the Pope followed up his excommunication by insisting that they be deprived of their functions and salaries, they appealed to the Prussian government, which upheld them and continued them in their office. Thus began that most unfortunate conflict between church and state known as the *Kulturkampf*, or war in behalf of civilization, in which Bismarck championed the state. When Bavarian bishops and priests, who remained on the side of the Pope, attacked the

Old Catholics from their pulpits, the Reichstag passed a law—the famous *Kanzelparagraph*—which made it a penal offense for priests to use their pastoral position for political purposes. This was followed in June, 1872, by a law expelling the Jesuits and other kindred orders from the territory of the empire. In December, 1872, when Pius IX. protested against this expulsion, in terms that were construed as insulting to the emperor, Bismarck forbade the allocution to be published in Germany, and recalled his ambassador from the Vatican, thus diplomatically declaring war. Having once entered upon the *Kulturkampf,* Bismarck and the Prussian government fought with energy. In May, 1873, the Prussian legislature passed the "May Laws," which aimed to limit the disciplinary power of the church over its members, and to place the education and installation of the whole clergy under the control of the government. Churches were to be subject to state inspectors; all clergy were to be appointed and dismissed only with the consent of the state, and candidates had to pass state examinations in philosophy, history, philology, and the German language. Civil marriage was made compulsory, so as to cripple the very strong power which the Roman Catholic priests could exercise otherwise. All priests and bishops who disobeyed any of these laws—and they were many—were suspended from office and their salaries and revenues taken over by the state, until by 1877 eight Prussian bishoprics and more than fourteen hundred curacies were vacant. But Bismarck found he had a more determined and more powerful enemy to deal with than he had supposed—an enemy far more dangerous than the Liberals in the "Period of Conflict" a dozen years before. The Catholics dared to do what the Liberals had not ventured on—they disobeyed the law, boldly declaring that the laws of the state were not the ultimate source of right, and ought not to be obeyed if contrary to the laws of God. By 1877 Bismarck saw that the situation was becoming unbearable for him. Not only were a large part of the clergy in open opposition, but the people felt that he had gone too far in his attempt to subjugate the church to the state; and they resented being deprived of the religious services of the suspended clergy. In some villages there was no one to baptize, marry, and bury them. This feeling is shown by the fact that in each new election to the Reichstag the *Centrum* gained instead of losing votes. Bismarck's embarrassment in the Reichstag steadily increased, for the National Liberals, who had at first supported him and passed the anti-clerical laws, began to vote against some financial measures which he considered essential. It was partly this sense of defeat and mistaken policy which influenced him in April, 1877, to hand in his resignation of all his offices, giving as his pretext ill-health. But Emperor William was unwilling to part with his old friend and refused to accept it. "Never," he wrote on the side of the minute. Instead, he granted to Bismarck an unlimited leave of absence. The chancellor retired to his estate at Varzin for rest, but only for ten months. In February, 1878, he returned, recruited in health and spirits, to guide the affairs of the empire for a dozen years to come. One of the first indications of his new policy was his change of attitude toward the Clericals. In spite of his proud declaration at the beginning of the *Kulturkampf,* "We will never go to Canossa,"—alluding to Henry IV. and Gregory VII.—he was glad of the accession and friendly attitude of Leo XIII. Gradually the laws against the Catholics were relaxed or repealed, clerical vacancies were filled, and sequestrated revenues restored. In 1887 religious orders occupied in charitable work were allowed to return to Prussia, but the Jesuits were not officially readmitted until 1904. The Pope on his side used his influence to restore religious peace in Germany and to restrain the clergy from acting in opposition to the government. And it was in fact the support of the *Centrum* which enabled Bismarck to pass the great tariff which he had been planning during the ten months at Varzin.

The year 1878 marks a turning-point in German history. In foreign affairs Bismarck's preëminence in diplomacy was again strikingly emphasized by the way in which he presided at the Congress of Berlin, and, acting as "honest broker" among the various claimants for Turkish territory, succeeded in reconciling the apparently irreconcilable demands of England and Russia. This year also marks Germany's divergence from Russia and the establishment of the closer relations with Austria and Italy which resulted in the Triple Alliance. In the internal history of Germany the year 1878 marks the practical end of the *Kulturkampf,* the beginning of the new protective policy and state socialism, the break-up of the power of the National Liberal party, and the passage of the first severe law against the Socialists.

The empire began its existence under a tariff so low that Germany was practically a free-trade country. Delbrück, the minister of commerce, and the National Liberals were strongly in favor of free-trade and a *laissez-faire* policy. Bismarck gave the matter small attention at first; he was too occupied with foreign affairs. But commercial matters were gradually forced upon his notice. The great wave of prosperity upon which the empire had sailed at first broke in the collapse and panic of 1873. The newly established industries everywhere found that they had to meet a very serious foreign competition. They began to cry for protection to save themselves from being pushed to the wall by the English goods which were flooding the country. In 1876 the crisis in the iron trade became especially acute. Owing to overproduction there had been a great fall in prices in England, so that English goods were dumped in Germany and sold below cost. At the end of this year also even the slight duty on iron in Germany would expire, unless renewed by law. Therefore many of the manufacturers and a large party in the Reichstag petitioned that at least the existing slight tariff be maintained; they would have been glad to have a real protective tariff. The free-traders, however, composed mostly of National Liberals, still had a majority, and refused to act on the petition. It had had the one important effect that Bismarck's attention was now drawn to economic matters. He saw that not only the iron trade, but other industries, had their very existence threatened; for while Germany was a dumping ground for low-priced English manufactures, German manufactured goods were excluded from America, France, and Russia by high protective tariffs. The building of railways in Russia would bring about an increased importation of Russian corn and threatened the prosperity of large proprietors and peasants alike. As he looked over the country and saw the closed factories, ruined owners, and unemployed workingmen who went to swell the numbers of the discontented Social Democrats, Bismarck gradually became convinced that Germany needed a protective tariff. "I had the impression," he said, "that under free trade we were gradually bleeding to death."

Two other advantages Bismarck expected from a protective tariff. In the first place it would enable him to ally himself again with the Conservatives and to dispense with the support of the National Liberals in the Reichstag. His alliance with the latter had always been of a temporary nature, for the sake of expediency; on neither side had distrust and suspicion been wholly absent;

and as a reaction set in against liberalism in the last quarter of the nineteenth century, the National Liberals were in danger of losing power anyway. Now that they had helped him to establish German unity, he was ready to abandon them since their free-trade ideas were opposed to his new plans for sustaining and developing the material prosperity of Germany. He also hoped that the increased prosperity which a protective tariff would bring would give employment to the discontented suffering working classes, and make them less likely to join the Social Democratic party. He did not intend merely to have them get employment, but he was also planning elaborate measures for old age pensions and workingmen's insurance.

A second advantage of protection would be that it would increase the revenues of the empire and solve the financial question which was growing more and more serious every year. By the constitution (Section 70) it was provided that the proceeds of customs duties and of most indirect taxes should be used to meet imperial expenses; but if these sources were not sufficient, the deficit should be made up by contributions assessed upon the various states of the empire in proportion to their population. These contributions (*Matricularbeiträge*) had increased and bore heavily upon some of the poorer states. They caused continual friction and unpleasantness between the central government and the separate states, which tended to weaken the empire. The contributions which were raised by direct taxation fell with special hardship on the classes least able to pay; and non-payment of even a very small sum was followed by the disgrace of a distraint and forced sale by the tax-collector. Bismarck stated, perhaps with some exaggeration, that every year there were over a million such executions, involving the seizure and sale of household goods on account of arrears in the payment of taxes. Such a state of affairs tended to create discontent and a feeling of hostility to the empire among the lower classes. But an increased revenue from a protective tariff, if eked out by a government monopoly of tobacco, such as was working so successfully in France, would be more than enough to cover all imperial expenses, and might even result in a surplus which could be distributed among the states.

Thus, for various reasons, both economic and political, Bismarck became a protectionist, and early in 1877 introduced into the Reichstag a new tariff. It failed disastrously, because the

National Liberals voted against it. They opposed it not only on free-trade grounds, but also because it would give the government a large revenue independent of an annual legislative grant, and thus weaken still further the control of the Reichstag over the administration of the empire. Bismarck thereupon went to his ten months of rest and retirement at Varzin. He bided his time.

When Bismarck returned in February, 1878, to take up control of affairs again, it soon became clear that he would look for support not to the National Liberals as before, but to the growing Conservative party, who had originally stood by him in the "Period of Conflict," and with whom he was naturally affiliated by birth and education. After 1878 no more measures were introduced to please the National Liberals; three Liberal Prussian ministers were replaced by Conservatives; but still he could not command enough votes to pass a protective tariff. Suddenly two outrages occurred from which he instantly drew political advantage.

On May 11, 1878, a young fanatic named Hödel discharged revolver shots at old Emperor William as he was driving in Berlin. Though the emperor was uninjured, the attempt stirred up strong feeling, which was directed against the Social Democrats, as Hödel, though not a regular member of the party, seemed to have been incited to his act by violent speeches heard at Socialist meetings. Bismarck, who had long looked with dislike upon their subversive teachings and methods, took the opportunity to bring in immediately a severe law with which he hoped to crush the party. He succeeded in passing it through the Bundesrath, but it was rejected in the Reichstag, as being too sweeping and too elastic.

Only a few days later, on June 2, a second attempt was made on the life of the emperor near his palace by a man named Nobiling. The beloved gray-haired octogenarian, who had passed through so many battles unhurt, was picked up unconscious, covered with blood streaming from his head, neck, and arms, and believed to be dying. His first words were to ask that the crown prince be sent for, that he might give into his hands the conduct of affairs. His next thought was to ask after the servant who had been at his side, and wounded with him. But owing to his iron constitution the emperor did not die. The wounds were bandaged, the arm put in a sling, and slowly he recovered from the shock and loss of blood.

This second attempt, so wanton and without reason, upon the life of a ruler so universally respected and beloved, aroused a storm of indignation from one end of the empire to the other. When Bismarck heard the news he exclaimed, " Now the Reichstag must be dissolved." In the general election which followed, while the excitement was still hot and the antagonism to the Socialists strong, the National Liberals, who a few weeks before had refused to vote for his anti-Socialist law, lost heavily; their numbers sank from 176 to 135, while the Conservatives gained from 78 to 116, and the Center, with whom he was soon to be reconciled, numbered 87. With the support of the Center and the Conservatives, Bismarck was now at last able to discard the National Liberals and yet have enough of a majority to pass the anti-Socialist law of 1878 and the protective tariff of 1879.[4]

The new law against the Socialists forbade the spread of Socialistic opinions by books, newspapers, or public meetings; the police were given a wide discretionary power to break up meetings and suppress newspapers. The Bundesrath could proclaim a state of siege in any city, and when this was done any individual considered dangerous could at once be expelled by the police. The law was to be in force for four years, but was twice extended, and lasted until 1890. It was enforced with great severity, and, according to statements issued by the Social Democrats in 1890, had resulted in the suppression of 1400 publications, the banishment of 900 persons, and the imprisonment of 1500 others. But it by no means crushed the party; in fact, as so often happens, it throve by persecution. Its organ, the *Social Democrat,* appeared regularly in Switzerland, and at every election they won more seats in the Reichstag. Under the milder treatment which they have received since 1890 the Social Democrats have been less violent in their denunciations and less anarchistic in their tendency, but they still steadily oppose every government army and navy appropriation, colonial expansion, and all laws in any way restraining personal liberty or fostering social distinctions.

Bismarck's new tariff was outlined to the Reichstag in December, 1878, after the Socialist law had been disposed of. It provided for a moderate duty of about five per cent. on all imported goods (with the exception of raw material required for German manufactures), a high excise duty on tobacco, beer, brandy, and petroleum, and high protective duties on iron, corn, cattle, wood, wine, and sugar. The debate on the bill occupied nearly the whole of the session of 1879, and was a great battle between free trade and protection. In the end, by a coalition of the agrarians and manufacturers, the bill was passed, and its principles have been maintained ever since, though somewhat modified by recent reciprocity treaties. The result of the law has been that in the twenty years from 1879 to 1899 the revenue from tariff and excise has increased from 230,000,000 marks to over 700,000,000, thus more than realizing Bismarck's hopes that the receipts would meet the imperial expenses. In several years there has actually been a surplus distributed among the states of the empire.

---

[4] Soon after this a split occurred in the National Liberal party: some under the leadership of Bennigsen were willing to accept protection and follow Bismarck in spite of his change of front; they retained the old name. The rest of the party seceded, stuck to free trade, opposed reconciliation with the Clericals, and formed a party called the Liberal Union; in 1884 they merged with the *Fortschritt*, and the new combination has since been known as the German Freethinking Party (*Freisinnigepartei).*

In the decade from 1880 to 1890 Bismarck was largely occupied with other economic measures for the material well-being of the empire. His plans for a government tobacco and brandy monopoly were rejected, and he let them drop. He had also intended to have the empire buy up all the railroads and make them a state monopoly. He saw that they were in the hands of private corporations which aimed to pay large dividends to the stockholders rather than to care for the interests of the public. It was also believed that they injured German trade by their differential rates, often granting lower terms on imported English goods than on exported German goods. Local jealousy prevented his railroad bill from passing the Reichstag. He therefore did the next best thing; he had the kingdom of Prussia buy up nearly all the railroads in Prussia and bring them under state management; and many of the smaller states have united their railroads to the Prussian system, and have profited thereby. But Saxony and the larger south German states still refuse to have their railways pass under Prussian control.

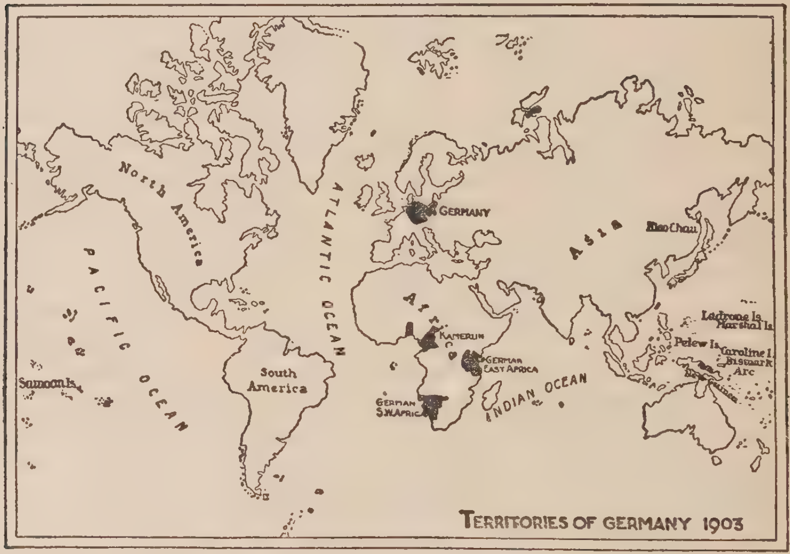
Bismarck was equally solicitous for the care of working men and women in case of sickness, accident, and old age. He first (1881) proposed compulsory insurance against accidents for everyone employed on railways, in mines, and in factories; the administration was to be in the hands of a government office and the premium to be paid by masters, workmen, and the state in three equal parts. But the bill met bitter opposition in the Reichstag, which did not wish to impose such a heavy financial burden on the empire. The bill was withdrawn; in place of it was substituted a bill for compulsory insurance in the case of sickness. This became law in 1883, and recognized the existing friendly and other societies as insuring bodies; these were still to enjoy their corporate existence and separate administration, but were placed under state control. One-third of the premium was paid by the employer and the other two-thirds by the workmen. In 1884 an insurance against accidents was made compulsory. It applied at first only to mines and factories, but was subsequently extended to other trades; the whole burden of compensation was thrown upon the employers, who were compelled to insure themselves against the payments for which they might become liable. Finally, in 1889 came the greatest innovation—old age pensions. All persons receiving less than about ten dollars a week are compelled to insure themselves against old age; half the premium is paid by the workman and half by the employer. The pension begins at the age of seventy, and is augmented by an additional grant from the state of about twelve dollars a year. These measures of "state socialism" have on the whole worked well, and have met the approval of both masters and workmen.

On March 9, 1888, all Germany was saddened by the death, after a short illness, of their beloved Emperor William. He had almost reached his ninety-first birthday. Like the great Hohenzollerns before him, he had done much to build up and extend the kingdom of Prussia. But he had done more: he had restored political unity and order in Germany, which she had really never enjoyed before, even in the days of Frederick Barbarossa. His character and personality had been ever such as to command the sincerest admiration and love of all about him, from Bismarck and Moltke and Roon down to the lowest soldier or railway official.

William I. was succeeded by his son, Frederick III., who had already won fame for himself as a general in the wars of 1866 and 1870. When the telegram announcing his father's death was brought to him he was at St. Remo in Italy, already stricken down with the fatal cancer of the throat which carried him off after a sad reign of ninety-nine days. The German specialists had advised an operation, but owing to the advice of the English physician, Sir Morell Mackenzie, it was put off until too late, though it is by no means certain that even a timely operation would have been permanently successful. Frederick's noble bearing, cheerful, kindly manners, his liberalism and belief in parliamentary government after the English model, and his victories on the field of battle had made him scarcely less loved and honored than his father. He had been the hope and aspiration of the new generation, and it was sad indeed to have him thus suddenly cut off.

With the accession of his son, William II., begins a new era in recent German history. His mother was an Englishwoman, a daughter of Queen Victoria, and he had been to school in England. In his youth, too, he had been a great admirer of Bismarck, and though he still remained so, it soon became clear that he intended to be his own master and follow his own will. He knew himself to be possessed of far more than average human ability. He had already been initiated by his grandfather into affairs of state, and he did not intend that the chancellor should overshadow in importance and influence the sovereign. Yet, on the other hand, Bismarck, who had really guided the state for twenty years after he had created it, and had become more tenacious of power, could not be expected at once to surrender the reins completely to such a young man as the new emperor. The split was inevitable, and came in March, 1890. William II. issued a proclamation calling together in Berlin an international congress of workingmen which might consider the requirements and wishes of this class. Bismarck had always opposed such international congresses, and openly said so. He wished to deal with the socialist agitation by reënacting the anti-socialist law, which would expire in 1890. Soon afterward the emperor, in order to control the ministers more directly and lessen Bismarck's power, ordered Bismarck to draw up a decree reversing a cabinet order of 1852, which gave the Prussian minister-president the right of being the sole means of communication between the other ministers and the king. To such a lessening of his authority Bismarck could not consent. He refused, and was dismissed from the position he had held so long. Honors were heaped upon him as he retired, but they did little to soften the bitterness of his fall. The remaining eight years of his life were spent in apparent isolation at Varzin or Friedrichsruhe; but his eyes were ever fixed on the politics of Europe, and he did not hesitate to criticise as unwise some of the steps of the young man who had dismissed him.

Since Bismarck's fall William II.'s personality has been one of the chief factors in German development. He thoroughly believes in the "divine-right" theory of kingship, and once wrote in the Visitors' Book of the town hall in Munich, "The will of the king is the supreme law." In speaking to a body of recruits in 1891 he told them that "there is now but one enemy for you, and that is my enemy. In these times of socialistic intrigue it may happen that I shall order you to fire upon your brothers or fathers. God save us from it! But in such a case you are bound to obey me without murmur." And he allowed Prince Henry, upon his departure for China in 1897, to declare that his one aim should be "to assert in foreign lands the evangel of your Majesty's hallowed person." Believing seriously, therefore, that he is a "viceregent of God," and surrounded by a special majesty, he deems it wrong that his person should be caricatured or his ideas ridiculed; hence the too frequent and often wholly ineffective prosecutions of newspapers for *Majestätsbeleidigung*. Such attacks he considers of a seditious revolutionary character; in fact, the French Revolution itself he has called "an unmitigated crime against God and man." It is not surprising, therefore, that he should summon the nobles of Prussia to support him in the struggle for religion, for morality, and for order against the parties of *Umsturz,* or Revolution; and in 1895 an



TERRITORIES OF GERMANY 1903

amendment to the Criminal Code (nicknamed the *Umsturz-Vorlage*) was introduced, making it a crime punishable with three years' imprisonment to attack religion, monarchy, marriage, the family, or property by abusive expressions in such a manner as to endanger the public peace. After heated debates and much opposition the government found it expedient to withdraw the bill.

Emperor William is greatly interested in making Germany a colonial power. "Our future lies upon the sea," he has said, and this was the significant motto over the doors of the building at the Paris Exposition of 1900 which contained the interesting exhibit of the North German Lloyd Steamship line, whose vessels run to the four quarters of the world. But though Germany has secured two enormous spheres of influence in Africa, not including Togoland and Kamerun on the Guinea Coast, a ninety-nine years' lease of Kiaochow from China, and in the Pacific New Guinea, the Samoan, Solomon, Marshall, and some other islands, she can never become a great colonial power, nor have colonies settled with Germans; for before the German Empire had come into existence all good land suitable for colonial purposes habitable by Europeans had been absorbed by other nations which had begun colonial expansion a century and a half earlier. However Germany may try to foster colonies, she must still probably illustrate the truth of the fable of the hare and the tortoise: success must be with the powers that started earlier, though more slowly, in the race for colonial expansion.

In February, 1905, new commercial treaties were concluded with Austria-Hungary, Belgium, Italy, Russia, Roumania, Servia, and Switzerland, based on the new German tariff of 1902, and increasing duties on agricultural produce and foreign cattle. This new tariff met with much opposition from industrial interests wherever it affected the cost of raw material.

One of the most significant events, important in its bearing to the entire Western world, is Germany's attitude toward the Eastern Question. It is stated that political and commercial advantages dictate the Kaiser's policy of benevolent protection toward the Sultan. Certainly it has seemed Germany's policy to preserve the mutual dissension of the other Continental powers.

In March, 1905, it became known that Germany had informed Sultan Mulai Abdul Aziz of Morocco that Germany was not included in agreements which France had made with Great Britain and Spain, and on a visit to Tangier immediately afterward the German emperor asserted his support of the Sultan's sovereignty in Morocco. A general conference of the interested powers was decided upon to settle the disturbed conditions, and thirteen delegates met at Algeciras early in 1906. A General Act was agreed upon, providing for the establishment and supervision of a Moorish police and a state bank. Similar agreements were also reached as to the mutual rights of the powers and the reforms deemed necessary in Moorish civil institutions.

In spite of the evident desire of the emperor to gain military prestige for Germany, the history of that country is one of peaceful events, during the reign of William II. Curbed by his advisers, as well as the Powers, the emperor has mainly turned his attention towards the development of internal prosperity, and the cementing of diplomatic relations. During the early part of 1906, considerable interest was aroused over the territory reached by the famous Bagdad railroad, by means of which Germany hoped to gain a seaport, and on May 21, Germany stated, in a semi-official way, its position.

For a number of years Germany has been regarded as the home of socialistic movements, and yet, on January 25, 1907, the election returns showed heavy socialistic losses. There was considerable dissatisfaction shown during 1906 and 1907, with financial conditions, the Imperial debt being $1,000,000,000, but the people resented the increasing of their taxes to meet the interest. An important event for Germany's colonies, occurred when, on May 3, 1907, a bill was passed establishing a colonial ministry, a measure that had been up for consideration for some years, and on May 18, Herr Dernburg was appointed its head.

The court scandal regarding the trial of editor Harden for libeling Count von Moltke, excited wide-spread interest, resulting first in the conviction of the editor, but later this decision was set aside by the German Imperial Superior Court at Leipsic, and the prisoner was released, May 23, 1908. In contrast with the bitterness invoked by this famous trial, was the enthusiasm displayed by the Germans over their winning the three first places in the auto races for the Grand Prix at Dieppe, July 7.

Morocco affairs during 1908, attracted the attention of all the European nations, and Germany, while replying in a conciliatory spirit to the Franco-Spanish note regarding proposed action by France and Spain, utterly refused to recognize any special privileges to any country whatever. Nothing excited so much controversy, however, not only in Germany, but England as well, as the famous interview purporting to come from the emperor, in which he, in order to prove his friendly spirit to England, stated that during the late Boer war, when his grandmother, Queen Victoria, almost heartbroken over the course of events, wrote to him for advice, he had gathered figures, and carefully reviewing the situation, planned out for her a campaign that was essentially the same later followed by Lord Roberts. The publication of this interview in the London Daily Telegraph on October 28, 1908, was provocative of such consternation, that diplomats feared for the results. Chancellor von Bülow, on October 31, stepped into the breach, assuming all blame for the publication, and offered his resignation. This was not accepted by the emperor, however, but the Reichstag took up the matter so vigorously that it was with difficulty that the government majority defeated the motion censuring, in no measured terms, the emperor for his ill-advised words. In order to pacify his people, the emperor gave his imperial promise, on November 17, that hereafter all foreign affairs will be conducted through his ministers.

Prince von Bülow retired from the Chancellorship in 1909 and was succeeded by Herr von Bethmann-Hollweg. The new Chancellor declared with great firmness that he had no intention of being influenced by any party and that his sole aim would be to carry on the government independently of all parties.

The year 1909 saw the formation of the Hansa Bund, a combination of capital as represented by the great captains of industry against the feudal aristocracy. The Bund disclaimed political connection with any one party, but claimed to be an "economic organization." Its real aim, however, was to prevent the landed interests represented by the nobility from holding a monopoly of political power.

One of the most prominent political questions of 1910 was the franchise. Electoral reform had been in the air for the past year or two, and the long looked for relief was promised when the Diet met in January. The bill brought in, however, was a distinct disappointment to the majority and was everywhere condemned. All over the country popular meetings demanded a complete electoral reform with the secret ballot and universal suffrage. The bill was finally withdrawn by the government and the old system continued in force.

In May, 1911, the bill granting Alsace-Lorraine a new constitution was passed and it became a state in the Federation. By the new constitution the Emperor exercises sovereign powers in the country, and is represented at Strassburg by a Governor who is the head of the Government. There are two Chambers, the first composed of nominated and various representative members, the other is a Chamber elected by universal suffrage and the secret ballot.

The elections of 1912 were notable on account of the sweeping success of the Social Democrats, who polled nearly 35 per cent. of the total votes registered. Prussia was not the only state to witness the growth of the Socialist party. In Würtemberg, in Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt, in Bavaria, and even in ultra-conservative Mecklenburg this party made strong headway.

Luitpold, Prince Regent of Bavaria, died in December, 1912, and was succeeded by his son Prince Ludwig Leopold. The year also recorded the death of the reigning Grand Duke of Luxemburg and the accession of his daughter the Grand Duchess Marie Adelaide.

Bad harvests had aided the steady advance in the price of meats, since even in good years the production of cattle in Germany is not enough to supply the demand. Cattle importation is rendered difficult by the rigid veterinary precautions which are more prohibitive than the high tariff duties levied upon live stock. The distress became so intense in 1912 that meat riots occurred in Berlin and elsewhere. The Chancellor von Bethmann-Hollweg announced a scheme for temporary relief consisting largely of relaxation of existing restrictions upon the import of cattle.

Emperor William II. celebrated the twenty-fifth anniversary of his accession to the throne in 1913. From June 8 to June 15, 1913, Berlin was in gala attire. The new Olympic Stadium, the finest in the world, was dedicated. The Olympic Games of 1916 will be held here. The keynote of the anniversary, its world-important phase, was the fact that all through the twenty-five years of his reign the Emperor has consistently been an advocate for peace, although at all times he has had more power to inaugurate war than any other crowned head of Europe.

In July King Victor Emmanuel of Italy visited the Emperor at Kiel and had important diplomatic conferences with him. The navy estimates for the year did not carry the great increases asked for the army and passed without any great opposition. The Socialists brought strong opposition, however, to the great profits being made at the Krupp works on government contracts. The army bills revised greatly the strength of the forces as well as regulated the pay of the soldiers. The Chancellor in bringing in the bills in the Reichstag in April stated that it had been decided by the military authorities that the increase asked for was absolutely essential to the protection of the country. Germany then took annually 280,000 recruits per year and an addition of 60,000 in recruits alone was asked for. The Chancellor further stated that although no signs of war were apparent yet any war in Europe would necessarily involve the Fatherland. The Chancellor further summed up the delicate situation in the Balkans and its future effect upon Germany. "The decisive point is that into the place of European Turkey, whose state life has become passive, there have entered states which exhibit a quite extraordinary active vitality—one thing remaining beyond doubt if it should ever come to a European conflagration which sets Slaventum against Germanentum, it is thus for us a disadvantage that the position in the balance of forces, which were occupied heretofore by European Turkey is now filled in part by Slav states."

By the new army bills the force was increased by 4,000 officers, 15,000 non-commissioned officers, 11,700 men, and 27,000 horses. The peace strength in 1912 was 544,211, which was now increased to 681,276. These changes involved an expenditure of $280,000,000, of which $262,500,000 was to be non-recurring expenditure. To pay for the enormous increase two proposals were introduced and passed. The first called the Levy on Property, the basis first proposed being a tax of one half per cent on the value of property with an additional special tax on large incomes. The bill as changed and passed was a combined tax on property on a graduated scale from three-twentieths on property worth $12,500 to about one and a half per cent on five millions or more. The contributions were to be paid in two installments. The second budget bill included a scheme for permanent taxation. By its requirements the Federal States of the Empire were to make fresh contributions by general taxes on income, profits, capital, or by means of taxes on inheritances. The principal provisions also fixed that from April 1, 1916, the states should provide over and above their regular contributions an annual contribution of about 31 cents per head of population. The proviso for the recurrent expenditure was later changed, making the tax an imperial property increment tax. Notwithstanding the great increase in taxing carried by the bills, they were carried through the Reichstag with little opposition, and were finally passed at the end of June, 1913. In April the Socialist Deputy, Dr. Liebknecht, brought out in the Reichstag that several firms, including the great firm of Krupps, were maintaining agencies in Berlin to bribe officials in both navy and army headquarters to divulge state documents bearing on contracts for munitions, thus giving their firms great advantages in making up their estimates for bids. Some seven officials were convicted and sentenced to various terms of imprisonment. In July widespread strikes in Hamburg and Stettin took place which were not settled until after 18,000 men were idle. The strikes were finally adjusted in August, 1913.

The strong support always given the military as against civilians was strikingly shown in December, 1913, by a series of incidents in Zabern, Alsace. Here military oppression went to such lengths that riotous demonstrations showed the resentment of the citizens. The direct cause of the first disturbances was caused by abusive remarks about Alsatians made by an officer of the German garrison in the town of Zabern. This same lieutenant later attacked and seriously wounded with his sword a lame shoemaker who used insulting language against the arbitrary actions of the garrison. The incidents were aired in the Reichstag, and, on the Chancellor's defense of the garrison, threatened to be the means of wrecking the ministry. Later Emperor William brought peace by transferring the regiment and punishing the principal offenders.

The long-continued regency of the Duchy of Brunswick was brought to an end in November, 1913. The last reigning Duke of Brunswick was Duke William, who reigned from 1831 to 1884. The next in succession was the Duke of Cumberland, who claimed by right also the throne of Hanover. Prussia would not acknowledge his right to Hanover, and he refused to relinquish it to accept the Dukedom of Brunswick. Since 1884 the dukedom had been governed by regents appointed by the Emperor. In 1913 through the marriage of the son of the Duke of Cumberland to the only daughter of the German Emperor a new condition arose by which the son of the Duke of Cumberland with his father's consent renounced his claim to the throne of Hanover. He was thereupon allowed to ascend the throne of the Duchy of Brunswick. The new

Duke and Duchess of Brunswick made their state entry into their new duchy in November, 1913.

The Kingdom of Bavaria on account of the continued mental incapacity of the King had for years been ruled by Prince Luitpold, the next in succession. He could rule as regent only during the life of the King. But in 1913 the regent's form of government was changed and he was given full powers as monarch. He took the title of Ludwig III, and was proclaimed King on November 5, 1913.

The effects of the Zabern affair continued to be prominent during the early months of 1914. In April the German government issued a new army regulation which strictly forbade the military authorities to assume police functions even in times of disorder except when actual public safety demanded their intervention. The Reichstag closed its session on May 20, 1914.

Many of the most important measures failed of passage. Some of these were the creation of a petroleum monopoly, increase in salaries of the civil service, and the laws to prohibit betting.

The reconstructed Kiel Canal, called the Kaiser Wilhelm Canal, was opened on June 24, 1914. The first Kiel Canal was finished in 1895 at a cost of nearly forty millions of dollars. Its measurements were about 62 miles long, 30 feet deep, 222 feet in breadth, with length of lock of 495 feet. Ten years after completion it was found that the canal was not only not deep and wide enough, but that all locks were not of sufficient size for the growing dimensions of ocean-going ships. The new canal will have new tide locks double the width and breadth of the old ones. The channel has been deepened and will now permit the passage of the largest of German battleships. Even the great passenger ship the *Vaterland* can pass through. On June 17, 1914, another great canal was finished. This was the Hohenzollern Canal which connects Berlin with Stettin on the Oder and makes Berlin a port. Vessels of 500 tons can use the canal. This canal is crossed by six railroad lines and the canal itself crosses over several bridges.

The events in the Balkans during the summer of 1914 profoundly affected Germany and hastened her preparations for possible mobilization of her troops, although on the surface there showed little unrest.

The Dual Alliance of Germany with Austria was formed in

1879. This agreement was not known for nine years and was the first step to divide Europe into two hostile camps.

In 1882 Bismarck obtained the consent of Italy to join the Dual Alliance, thereby forming the Triple Alliance of Germany, Austria, and Italy, which was supposed to be in force when the war clouds gathered in the summer of 1914.

In 1890 France formed her alliance with Russia, and in 1904 signed a secret treaty with Great Britain, the terms of which were believed to be British aid to France, in case France was invaded or attacked by Germany. This last treaty was brought about by King Edward VII and was known as the Entente Cordiale or Cordial Understanding.

In 1907 Great Britain and Russia signed a treaty that removed all friction between the two countries brought on by their opposing interests in Persia. Thus the stage was set when the final acts of the starting of the war took place.

Germany, Austria, and Italy — the Triple Alliance — opposed France and Russia with England in the background as the secretly accredited ally of the latter two. The assassination of the Archduke Francis Ferdinand and his wife at the end of June, 1914, was the real fuse that was to touch off the actual explosion of war. Austria claimed at once that Serbia as a nation was directly responsible for the murders. Her ultimatum to Serbia was couched in such terms that no nation with any self-respect could accept. Austria then flung her troops across the Serbian border and actual war had begun.

Germany at once endeavored to obtain assurances from Russia that she would not go to the aid of Serbia and thus start a war involving every great nation of Europe. Russia the day after Austria declared war on Serbia announced that she would not be able to remain indifferent if Serbia was invaded. On July 29 the Czar of Russia urged the German Emperor to restrain his ally the Emperor of Austria. The German Emperor's diplomatic pressure on Austria failed.

Meanwhile Russia had begun to mobilize her troops. The German Emperor at once telegraphed the Czar of Russia that by this act of mobilization mediation was made impossible. Two days later the German Emperor telegraphed the Czar that by this act Germany must also take similar defensive measures. A twenty-four hour ultimatum was made the same day by Germany upon Russia, demanding that within that time Russian mobilization must cease. At noon on August 1, 1914, the ultimatum to Russia having expired, the German Ambassador to St. Petersburg delivered Germany's declaration of war.

On the same day Germany requested France to declare her position in case of a Russian-German war. The answer was that "The Republic will be forced to consult her own interests." France mobilized her troops on August 1, and on August 4, 1914, Germany declared war against France. The greatest war in the history of the world had begun.

Chapter XLI

THE GERMAN EMPIRE IN THE WORLD WAR. 1914-1918

WITH terrible force and swiftness Germany began to fight. On the Western Front she had three armies, all with the heart of France as their objectives. In the north, the Army of the Meuse was to make its attack on France through Belgium; in the centre, the Army of the Moselle through Luxembourg; and in the south, the Army of the Rhine, through the Vosges Mountains.

How heroic Belgium refused Germany's demand to permit her troops to violate Belgian neutrality and how this little country backed its refusal with all its force has been told in another place (see BELGIUM). When Germany answered this refusal by breaking her solemn treaty obligations to respect Belgian neutrality, she took no half measures. Hardly had war been declared before the Germans began to stream across the Belgian border. But they were not to have plain sailing. Before Liège and later before other Belgian fortresses, they were held again and again. Yet eventually the heroic defence of the Belgians availed nothing. Liège fell after 10 days and on August 20, 1914, the Germans occupied Brussels. Six days later came the sack of Louvain, which was the first of a long series of military measures which were to forfeit Germany the good will of the world.

Antwerp, the siege of which began on September 29, 1914, surrendered on October 9, 1914. The Belgian Government, which after the fall of Brussels had retired to Antwerp, was forced to withdraw to Ostend, and when this town, too, fell into the hands of the Germans, on October 15, 1914, it was transferred to Havre, France. Practically all of Belgium was now in the hands of the Germans. For four long years she was to suffer the martyrdom of a cruel invasion and occupation, her industries, her cities and harbors controlled by the invaders, and her people subject to the extremes of military laws and courts.

However, the British, on the day after Ostend's fall, had occupied Ypres, and in this little corner of Flanders the German armies were to experience again and again a denial of their hope to gain the French Channel ports.

In March, 1915, in Flanders the Germans endured a severe defeat at the hands of the British before Neuve Chapelle. There, too, this time before Ypres, the Germans, in April, 1915, used for the first time, against the Canadians, their terrible new weapon, poison gas.

How, through the next three and a half years the British and what was left of the Belgian army stubbornly kept their hold on this small piece of Belgian territory is told in greater detail in the pages devoted to the histories of BELGIUM and GREAT BRITAIN. Then, at last, on September 28, 1918, the great drive against the Germans was extended to the northern end of the Western Front. On that day the Germans were forced back 4 miles from Ypres to the North Sea.

Ostend, which for many months had been an important German submarine base, was lost by the Germans on October 17, 1918; Bruges and Zeebrugge on October 19; Mons on November 10, and the next day Belgium was free again.

France was invaded by the Germans on August 24, 1914, near Lille. At first it seemed as if the German Moselle Army, under General von Kluck, was to achieve its purpose, and after sweeping through northeastern France was to attack and possibly capture Paris. Amiens fell on August 30, 1914, and Rheims on September 4. But then the tide turned. On September 6, 1914, the first Battle of the Marne began; four days later the Germans had been forced back to the Rheims-Soissons line and Paris had been saved. (See FRANCE.)

In France, as in Flanders, there began now a tremendous struggle. How the Germans endeavored again and again to overrun the country, how French and British, and later American forces, were to block their designs, and eventually drive them back, and how Germany devastated such parts of France as had fallen into her hands, cannot be told here in detail. (See FRANCE, GREAT BRITAIN, UNITED STATES.) Only operations of the first magnitude will be mentioned here.

On February 21, 1916, the German armies began their memorable attack against Verdun, an operation which, though lasting throughout the balance of the war, was destined to fail utterly, even if at times the German forces made temporary gains. In

July, 1916, the Somme Battle was thrust upon the Germans by the French and British, who made many gains in this sector throughout the months following. Again in March, 1917, the Germans lost much ground there. In April, 1917, the Canadians won important positions around Lens. In May the Arras Battle was fought. In the fall of 1917 Flanders was the scene of considerable German defeats.

In March, 1918, the Germans began their great drive on a 50-mile front, from Arras to La Fère, and simultaneously their long distance (76 miles) bombardment of Paris. In both undertakings they were successful until, after an advance of 35 miles, they were halted on April 10 before Amiens. A second drive staged in Flanders in the first part of April, 1918, lasted only a week and yielded only 10 miles. Then came, in May, 1918, their third successful drive across the Vesle and the Marne, bringing them to Chateau-Thierry and Neuilly, again within striking distance of Paris. But then the tide turned.

Soon after they had been stopped at Chateau-Thierry, on June 6, 1918, by American marines and regulars, the Franco-American counter-offensive on the Marne-Aisne front set in, on July 18, 1918. By the end of the month the Germans were in full retreat to the Vesle. In August, 1918, they lost Soissons, and when, on August 3, 1918, they were forced back along the entire Aisne-Vesle front, the beginning of the end had come. By September 11, 1918, they had been pushed back to their famous Hindenburg Line, positions which they had left far in their rear in November, 1917.

The middle of the next month saw the breaking of the Hindenburg Line, also the Americans in the St. Mihiel sector. Throughout the balance of September, through October and the first 11 days of November, 1918, defeat after defeat was suffered by the Germans, though their resistance was strong to the bitter end. From the North Sea to the Swiss frontiers the Allies drove home their hammer-like attacks. St. Quentin, Lens, Cambrai, the Argonne Forest and many other localities along the entire front were the scenes of vast and costly battles. Then on October 5, 1918, came the first plea for peace from the German Government, supplemented by many others, until at last, on November 11, 1918, at 11 A. M., Germany surrendered and signed the Armistice.

Tremendous as the German military efforts were on the Western Front, they were almost matched by operations which German troops carried on in many other theatres of war.

On her eastern frontier she fought Russia from August, 1914, until the Armistice was signed between Russia, now a Bolshevik Republic, and Germany at Brest-Litovsk on December 15, 1917, to be followed by the signing of a Peace Treaty on March 3, 1918 (see RUSSIA). There at first Russia was successful and invaded East Prussia in 1914, to be defeated shortly afterward at Tannenberg—Hindenburg's first great success—and again in February, 1915, in the Battle of the Masurian Lakes. Then came Germany's stupendous successes in Russia's Baltic provinces (May, 1915), Warsaw's fall in August, 1915, the occupation of Poland and Russia's other western provinces.

Further south, beginning with 1915, Germany frequently bore a considerable share of the fighting as the result of the urgent need of assistance on the part of her Ally, Austria-Hungary. Germany also was called upon to assist Austria-Hungary and Bulgaria in the second invasion and in the subjugation of Serbia; in the invasion of Rumania, an enterprise carried out by the German General von Mackensen; at times, especially toward the end of the war, Austria-Hungary received sorely needed assistance against Italy. Turkey, both in Europe and in Asia, received assistance in the form of fairly strong reinforcements, of commanding generals, of vast amounts of material, and of considerable amounts of money.

In many other parts of the world German troops fought in defence of their country's colonies. Though this was done stubbornly, eventually all of Germany's colonies were lost. Togoland was the first to be wrested from its German masters in August, 1914. The conquest of German Southwest Africa was completed by July, 1915, that of the Cameroons by February, 1916, of German East Africa in the beginning of 1918. Australian forces seized German New Guinea in September, 1914. Samoa was occupied at the end of August, 1914, by an expeditionary force from New Zealand. Japan seized, shortly after the outbreak of the war, the German islands in the Pacific, turning them over to Australia later, in November, 1914, those in the North Pacific and continuing the occupation of those in the South Pacific. On November 7, 1914, after a siege which had begun on August 27, Kiau-Chau, Germany's concession in China, surrendered to Japanese forces.

On the sea, and in the air, too, Germany gave battle to the world. On August 11, 1914, two German cruisers, the *Goeben* and the *Breslau,* which had been caught at the outbreak of the war in the Mediterranean, after making good their escape from pursuing Allied ships, succeeded in entering the Dardanelles. At that time Turkey was officially not yet at war. In order to avoid the loss of these two boats as fighting units, they were purchased by Turkey. In the latter part of August, 1914, the British navy inflicted the first defeat on the Germans by sinking three German cruisers and two destroyers off Heligoland.

In September, 1914, the first of a series of raids was inaugurated by the small cruiser *Emden* in the Bay of Bengal. Similar raids from time to time were carried out by other German cruisers in various parts of the world, until eventually they were all captured, sunk or interned.

On November 1, 1914, a German squadron under Admiral von Spee, sank two British cruisers off Chile. However, a little more than a month later, on December 8, 1914, von Spee's entire squadron, with the exception of one cruiser, was sunk off the Falkland Islands by a British squadron under Admiral Sturdee. This was the end of the last German fleet on the open seas.

On December 16, 1914, the first of a series of attacks against English coast towns was made by a German squadron, when Hartlepool, Scarboro and Whitby were bombarded.

On January 24 a British fleet, after sinking the German cruiser *Bluecher,* put to flight a German squadron in the North Sea.

The next month saw the beginning of the enlarged use of the submarine. As early as September, 1914, four British cruisers, the *Pathfinder,* the *Cressy,* the *Hogue* and the *Aboukir,* had been torpedoed by German submarines. But not until February 18, 1915, did the German submarine blockade of Great Britain begin. From then on, in ever increasing numbers, German submarines sank Allied and neutral passenger and merchant vessels. To describe these operations in detail is not possible here. How the German submarine activities affected the various belligerent and neutral countries has elsewhere been told in the separate histories of these countries. Much as undoubtedly Germany gained by her submarine warfare, eventually her losses far outbalanced her gain. Beginning with the sinking of the *Lusitania* on May 7, with a loss of 1,152 lives, including 102 Americans, the sentiment of the entire world against submarine warfare gradually increased until this feeling finally became one of the chief causes of the break between Germany and the United States. (See UNITED STATES.)

On May 31, 1916, there occurred the second large naval battle of the war off Jutland, perhaps the greatest naval battle in history. Two vast British and German fleets engaged in battle and inflicted heavy losses on each other.

In July, 1916, a new development of the submarine was brought to the attention of the world by Germany, when on the 9th, one of the largest submarines ever built, the *Deutschland,* carrying freight, made a landing at Baltimore, Md., after a successful trip from Germany. The same boat made a second voyage, arriving at New London, Conn., on November 1, 1916.

On January 31, 1917, Germany announced her intention of sinking all vessels, irrespective of nationality, which were found within an enlarged war zone established around the British Isles. The exchange of notes between the United States and Germany following this announcement finally led, on February 3, 1917, to the severance of diplomatic relations between the two countries, and on April 6, 1917, to a declaration of war against Germany, by the United States. (See UNITED STATES.)

The following is a list of the war declarations and diplomatic severances issued by or against Germany:

Belgium against Germany, Aug. 4, 1914.
Brazil against Germany, Oct. 26, 1917.
China against Germany, Aug. 14, 1917.
Costa Rica against Germany, May 23, 1918.
Cuba against Germany, April 7, 1917.
France against Germany, Aug. 3, 1914.
Germany against Belgium, Aug. 4, 1914.
Germany against France, Aug. 3, 1914.
Germany against Portugal, March 9, 1916.
Germany against Rumania, Sept. 14, 1916.
Germany against Russia, Aug. 1, 1914.
Great Britain against Germany, Aug. 4, 1914.
Greece against Germany, Nov. 28, 1916. (Provisional Government.)
Greece against Germany, July 2, 1917. (Government of Alexander.)
Guatemala against Germany, April 22, 1918.

Haiti against Germany, July 15, 1918.
Honduras against Germany, July 19, 1918.
Italy against Germany, Aug. 28, 1916.
Japan against Germany, Aug. 23, 1914.
Liberia against Germany, Aug. 4, 1917.
Montenegro against Germany, Aug. 9, 1914.
Nicaragua against Germany, May 24, 1918.
Panama against Germany, April 7, 1917.
Portugal against Germany, Nov. 23, 1914. (Resolution passed authorizing military intervention as Ally of England.)
Portugal against Germany, May 19, 1915. (Military aid granted.)
Russia against Germany, Aug. 7, 1917.
Serbia against Germany, Aug. 6, 1914.
Siam against Germany, July 22, 1917.
United States against Germany, April 6, 1917.
Bolivia against Germany, April 14, 1917.
Brazil against Germany, April 11, 1917.
China against Germany, March 14, 1917.
Costa Rica against Germany, Sept. 21, 1917.
Ecuador against Germany, Dec. 7, 1917.
Egypt against Germany, Aug. 13, 1914.
Guatemala against Germany, April 27, 1917.
Haiti against Germany, June 17, 1917.
Honduras against Germany, May 17, 1917.
Nicaragua against Germany, May 18, 1917.
Peru against Germany, Oct. 6, 1917.
Santo Domingo against Germany, June 8, 1917.
United States against Germany, Feb. 3, 1917.
Uruguay against Germany, Oct. 7, 1917.

Chapter XLII

INTERNAL AFFAIRS AT THE BEGINNING OF THE WAR, 1914-1915

WHEN Germany went to war in the Summer of 1914 she did so as a united nation indeed. The powers that were had played their hands so carefully that they had succeeded fully in convincing a majority of the population, no matter what their political convictions had been formerly, that this was a defensive war waged to protect the precious soil of the Fatherland against attacks from its enemies on all sides. Even the Socialist members of the Reichstag, not excluding the most radical group, were ready in those early days of the war to support the government and its financial and other requirements. Two sessions of the Reichstag were held on August 4, 1914. The first was devoted to listening to an address by the Chancellor, Von Bethmann-Hollweg, in which he gave his version of the causes of and the responsibility for the war. He declared Germany's invasion of Belgium and Luxembourg a necessity of self-defense—otherwise the French would have entered, making a flank attack on the German forces that might have been fatal. Later in the afternoon the president of the Reichstag, Dr. Kaempf, opened another session for the purpose of reading the various War Bills which the Reichstag was asked by the Government to pass. This was done without a dissenting vote among hearty cheers ringing out from all parts of the House. The total war expenditures authorized then and there amounted to $1,250,000,000. This having been accomplished, the Reichstag adjourned until November 24, 1914.

For some months to come this uncritical attitude on the part of the German population and its legislative representatives continued. Its principal result was what must have been to the German Government a most satisfactory and possibly even a slightly unexpected popular support of the first War Loan. By October 15, 1914, 4,500.000,000 marks had been subscribed. Less than a week later more than two-thirds of this sum had been paid in in cash.

Equally smoothly it seemed at first other internal affairs touching the economic life of the German Nation continued to run. Especially established War Banks, making it possible for almost anyone to arrange for the extension of credits usually only enjoyed by individuals or mercantile establishments of acknowledged responsibility, facilitated greatly all financial transactions and made it possible to avoid a general moratorium. Notwithstanding Germany's rapid mobilization a comparatively very satisfactory harvest was made. In spite of this, however, a shortage of food supplies and a great increase in prices soon began to set in, not so much on account of any actual lack in foodstuffs as on account of transportation and distribution difficulties occasioned by the requirements of mobilization. The Government promptly met this danger by regulating both the supply and the prices of food. These regulations, however, did not work as smoothly and satisfactorily as had been expected. Before very long, therefore, a certain amount of unrest made itself felt. This was increased considerably by the gradual extension of unemployment which became more general as certain industries began to run out of raw materials and as the withdrawal of certain classes of labor became necessary in order to meet the ever-increasing demands of the military authorities. Especially was this true, of course, in the larger industrial centres. Considerable distress was experienced there, and in all the larger centres of population as soon as the Winter of 1914 began to set in. The Government was able to alleviate this condition for the time being, at least to the extent of preventing any general increase in unrest and discontent.

The Reichstag, upon reassembling, promptly voted a second war credit of $1,250,000,000. Signs of a more critical action toward the demands and purposes of the Government began to make themselves felt everywhere. In the Reichstag, however, there was only one man among all the Social Democrats who raised his voice in opposition, though most of his party colleagues had in former years been loud enough in their anti-government protestations and in their threats to call a general strike in case of war. This one voice was that of Dr. Karl Liebknecht, the fairly well-known son of the famous Socialist Leader of a generation ago. His opposition followed a manifesto which had been published in November in Switzerland and which bore besides his own signature those of some other uncompromising Social Democrats, among whom the best known were Rosa Luxemburg and Clara Zedtkin. In this manifesto they had declared that they differed in their views on the war from the rest of their fellow Social Democrats, but that at present, as a result of the establishment of martial law throughout the Empire, it was impossible to express their views. This small band of radical opponents to the Government and to the war was made even then to suffer dearly for its views and for its courage of expressing them, both on the hands of the Government and on the hands of the majority of their fellow Social Democrats.

While internal affairs in the German Empire and the financial support of the Government were thus progressing comparatively without embarrassment to the Government, the actual progress of the war during 1914 was generally entirely favorable to Germany. It is true that at the beginning of the war declarations of war against Germany came with an overpowering swiftness. Russia, France, Belgium, Great Britain, Serbia, Japan and Portugal, all were at war with Germany before the close of 1914. On the other hand, to offset this somewhat, Germany in addition to her original Ally, Austria-Hungary (q. v.), had succeeded in inducing Turkey (q. v.) to declare war against the Allies on November 23, 1914.

With the beginning of 1915 the question of regulating Germany's food supply became of the utmost importance. Germany at all times, at least since after the formation of the Empire, had become an industrial rather than an agricultural nation, and had been a large importer of foodstuffs. The gradual expansion and the increased severity of the blockade instituted by Great Britain and her Allies against Germany stopped, even if not entirely, still by far the greater part of such imports.

Very soon after the beginning of the war the German Government had fixed maximum prices for a number of commodities, such as cereals and potatoes. In spite of these measures, food prices continued to rise. This was due to a number of reasons. A certain amount of hitherto unknown extravagance on the part of consumers became apparent; many others, fearing a gradually increasing shortage of food, became hoarders of it; and, of course, in Germany as anywhere else there were a large number of unscrupulous people interested only in increasing their personal wealth who engaged in food speculation. That part of the population which could bear it least, the poor and the large masses with small incomes or wages, were the chief sufferers.

Late in January, 1915, the Government, therefore, issued regulations providing that all supplies of wheat or rye were to be confiscated and were to be taken over and handled by the War Grain Association. Communal Associates in every town were empowered to take similar steps in respect to all supplies of flour. Compensation was fixed for the private owners of these stocks. Grain and flour dealers and mills were restricted in respect to the quantity that they could handle, and so were bakers and confectioners. An Imperial Distributing Bureau was created to supervise and regulate the consumption of cereals, co-operating in this undertaking with the Communal Associations. The latter bodies were also empowered to determine the composition of bread and cakes and to regulate their delivery. In February, 1915, the Government began to issue "bread cards." Individuals from then on were able to purchase bread at restaurants, bakeries, or grocery stores only after presentation of these cards. Plans were also made for increased production of grains and other foodstuffs. Other regulations were issued at various times during 1915, restricting and regulating the use of meat and other food commodities. By midsummer 1915 the Government announced that as a result of its various regulations the situation had become more hopeful, although the question of the meat supply offered still great difficulties. In order to overcome these difficulties as far as possible an Imperial Fodder Board was created and a certain number of meatless days during every week were instituted.

German industry so far had shown remarkable vitality, especially since after the first months of the war the military authorities had found it possible to permit certain readjustments by means of which groups of laborers essential to the continuation of vital industries were exempted from active service. As in all other countries, a large number of women and of men unfit for military service were gradually drafted into the ranks of labor. The principal difficulty German industries had to face was the shortage of raw materials. As early as February 1, 1915, it had become necessary to commandeer all supplies of copper, tin, aluminum, nickel, etc., for strictly military purposes. This meant the stoppage of certain branches of important industries, although in many instances German scientists succeeded in finding more or less satisfactory substitutes to take the place of the lacking raw materials.

The third session of the Reichstag was opened on March 10,

1915. By this time it had become evident that Germany was facing a long and exhausting war with all the financial, economic, political and social problems that this involved. The Government through its new Secretary of the Treasury, Helfferich, demanded a further war credit of 10,000,000,000 marks to be raised by means of a loan. This demand received the consent of the entire membership of the Reichstag with the exception of two dissenting radical Socialists, Liebknecht and Ruehle. Other Socialist deputies made speeches severely criticizing the aims as well as the acts of the Government without, however, going to the point of withholding their consent to the new loan.

The fourth war session of the Reichstag was held in May, 1915, and was of short duration. Solidarity of the various political parties was still maintained excepting again the few radical Socialists, who continued to express their opposition to the war both through speeches and through withholding their votes on legislation proposed by the Government. This session of the Reichstag was closed at the end of May by a speech of the Chancellor, in which he summed up Germany's achievements and hopes. He also criticized in violent terms Italy's declaration of war against Austria-Hungary.

On August 19, 1915, the fifth war session of the Reichstag was opened by a long speech of the Imperial Chancellor, in which he reviewed the causes of the war and attempted to place the responsibility for it on the Allies. He also touched upon the future of Poland, promising emancipation to this unfortunate country "from the Russian yoke." Nothing was said, however, as to what should become of those parts of Poland which were then parts of Germany and Austria-Hungary, nor did he commit himself regarding the future relations between the "emancipated" Poland and Germany. On the second day of the session the Government brought in a bill for a new war loan of 10,000,000,000 marks. After representatives of the various political parties had made declarations regarding their attitude toward this new financial demand and toward the policies and actions of the Government, the bill was passed. These declarations showed if anything an even greater faith on the part of the various political parties in the ultimate success of the German armies and also brought out the fact that as a result of the military successes gained up to then the lust and the demand for territorial conquests were greatly on the increase. The third war loan resulting from this bill met with so much support that within three weeks it had been oversubscribed.

The Reichstag met again in December, 1915. The principal feature of this session was extensive discussion of the Peace Terms which Germany should demand at the end of the war. This discussion was a continuation of the discussion of the subject which had been going on during the Fall and early Winter of 1915 in all of the newspapers. Only a small although determined minority of Socialists expressed themselves utterly opposed to all schemes of conquest, while all the other deputies seemed to be under the influence of a spirit of conquest which then more than at any other time of the war prevailed in Germany. Still another bill for a new 10,000,000,000 marks war credit was brought in and passed. Although defending the policies of the Government in regard to the financing of the war, the Imperial Secretary of the Treasury admitted that the time was rapidly approaching when capital would have to bear the financial burden of the war by paying heavy war taxes rather than by accepting the Government's invitation to invest in war loans paying a comparatively profitable rate of interest. This declaration was made primarily to meet the Socialistic demands for taxation of war profits, but it fell considerably short of satisfying these demands.

Chapter XLIII

POLITICAL DIFFICULTIES. 1916-1918

ONE of the most important political developments during 1916 was a definite split in the ranks of the Social Democratic party. At the beginning of the year the majority of the Social Democrats were still firm in their support of the Government. Dr. Liebknecht's opposition, however, became more pronounced and more violent and he was expelled, on January 13, 1916, from membership in the Social Democratic Party. The same action was taken in respect to Herr Haase on March 24, 1916. As a result of his expulsion 18 pacifist Social Democrats left their party and formed a new group under the leadership of Haase and Ledebour. Still another group of some 20 members under the leadership of Hoch and Simon, while maintaining their adherence to party discipline, declared that hereafter they would refuse to vote further war credits. Liebknecht and Ruehle, the two most radical Social deputies, refused to have anything to do with any of these groups, and their opposition became more and more violent, resulting finally in the arrest of Dr. Liebknecht and in his sentence to a four-year term of imprisonment after he had made an inflammatory address during the May Day demonstration in Berlin. Hugo Haase, leader of the Independent Socialists, was more moderate, but war credits and the conduct of the war were opposed.

The food situation, as the war continued, became more and more of a problem. Speculation, in spite of all measures taken to suppress it, continued and so did a certain amount of extravagance on the part of the well-to-do. Then, of course, the actual shortage, gradually growing and gradually affecting more and more food commodities, had become by now an acknowledged fact. Bread riots became more frequent and the demands of the Socialists for more extensive regulation became more insistent. On May 23, 1916, it was announced that Herr Von Batocki had been appointed Chairman of a Food Regulation Board. In this office he possessed extensive powers in respect to the regulation of the supply, the consumption, and the sale of food and his appointment practically amounted to the creation of a food dictatorship. One of the first results of his appointment was the establishment of soup kitchens in the large centres of population and the introduction of meat cards along the same lines on which bread cards had already been issued. In spite of the entire stoppage of civilian meat consumption for eight weeks and in spite of many other attempts on the part of the Government to solve the food difficulties, and in spite of the fact that the 1916 harvest was better than that of the previous year, conditions were rapidly growing more serious toward the end of 1916.

One of the most important events of the year was the passage by the Reichstag on December 2, 1916, of the so-called Patriotic Auxiliary Service Law. In general this law provided for the mobilization of all men between sixteen and sixty years of age who had not been called to the colors for service in war industries, agriculture, nursing the sick, and in any other undertaking connected directly or indirectly with the conduct of the war. The execution of the new law was placed in the hands of the war office with General Groener in charge, assisted by a number of men and by Dr. Sorge, one of the best known industrial magnates of Germany.

The discussions about the Peace Terms which Germany was to demand at the end of the war continued throughout the year. Most of the Socialists continued to be bitterly opposed to the annexation of any territory. The extreme war party on the other hand insisted on the annexation of all conquered territory. The Imperial Chancellor and with him a large majority of the great masses of the people took a middle ground, providing for the annexation of Poland, Lithuania, and Livonia. Somewhat later it was claimed by the Social Democrats that the Chancellor was opposed to the annexation of Belgium and Northern France, both then, of course, in the hands of the German armies. This immediately resulted in violent propaganda on the part of the pan-Germans against making peace on too easy terms. In the Summer of 1916 many of the moderate elements combined and formed a national committee for the purpose of bringing about "an honorable peace on moderate terms."

At the beginning of 1916 war appropriations had reached a total of about 40,000,000,000 marks. In January, 1916, payments on the third war loan, amounting to 12,160,000,000 marks, had been completed. The fourth loan was issued during the same month, found more than 5,000,000 subscribers, and brought in about 10,700,000,000 marks. By the end of 1916 the total of war credits voted by the Reichstag was about $16,500,000,000, of which $12,000,000,000 had been raised by permanent loans. The balance of $4,500,000,00 was in the form of floating indebtedness: $635,000,000 of this were notes issued by the War Loan Banks, $1,190,000,000 was represented by the increase in the net circulation of the Reichsbank and $2,100,000,000 more were in the form of advances made by this bank. The year 1916 also brought a number of Cabinet changes. The Secretary of Foreign Affairs, Von Jagow, was succeeded in December, 1916, by Dr. Alfred Zimmerman. General Von Stein became Secretary of War in place of General Von Hoffman, in October, 1916. Dr. Helfferich exchanged the portfolio of finance for that of the interior, succeeding Dr. Delbrueck. The most important change, however, was in the Navy Department. There Grand Admiral Von Tirpitz in March, 1916, had been succceeded by Admiral Von Capelle as a result of the submarine controversy which is treated at greater length in a separate chapter.

The year 1917 brought with it many and far-reaching developments in the internal affairs of Germany. The position of the Imperial Chancellor, as the war continued, became more and more difficult. The principal cause was the differences of opinion in respect to the Peace Terms and the policy of annexation of conquered territories. These differences became more sharply definite and discussions arising from them became more violent. A secondary cause for the weakening of the Chancellor's position was the Russian revolution (see Russia). As soon as the German Government received news of this event, which was a considerable time before it became generally known in Germany, the Chancellor announced that the Government intended to institute immediately electoral reforms in Prussia. This announcement was followed almost at once by demands on the part of the Reichstag for extensive constitutional reforms and these demands precipitated a series of sharp debates. The Emperor finally intervened by the publication of a manifesto in which he promised extensive constitutional changes which, however, were not to be carried out until after the conclusion of the war. The situation in the Reichstag gradually grew so complicated that it was prorogued on April 24, 1917.

The successful overthrow of autocracy in Russia, of course, created a very difficult position for the German Government. The latter's attitude toward the revolution and the difficulties created by it necessarily had to be definite. As far as public expressions and statements of the German Government went they put the responsibility for the Russian upheaval on the shoulders of the Czar, his followers, and their system, and they also assured the Russian people that the German Government had no desire and did not contemplate to interfere in any way with their newly gained liberty.

When the Reichstag met again its debates revealed an opposition to the Government which was stronger than it had been at any other time since the outbreak of the war. One of the new leaders in this opposition was the well-known spokesman of the Centre Party, Matthias Erzberger, who severely criticized the entire conduct of the war.

Erzberger attacked the Government especially vigorously for its wrong predictions in regard to the results to be expected from the submarine war, pointing out that not only had Great Britain not been subdued, but a new and most powerful nation had taken up arms against Germany, the United States of America. This speech, in a way, crystallized the opposition against the Government, and the Chancellor's position became more and more untenable. On July 10, 1917, before a committee of the Reichstag, the Chancellor stated that he had to refuse all demands to reveal the peace conditions, but that any formula of peace without annexations was not acceptable to the Government. Every day the attacks against the existing government became more violent. Germany now, politically speaking, was divided into two camps, the Military party and the Moderates, the latter insisting not only on moderate peace terms, but also on far-reaching constitutional reforms by which they hoped to counteract the Allied claim that in fighting Germany they were fighting for democracy and against autocracy. Almost hourly the Chancellor lost adherents.

On July 12, 1917, the resignation of two members of the Cabinet was announced, together with the decision of the Government to place one cabinet portfolio in the hands of a Socialist. In spite of this, and in spite of other attempts on the part of the Government to reconcile the Moderate element by granting some of their demands in respect to constitutional reforms, opposition against the Chancellor and the policies which he represented became so pronounced that on July 14, 1917, he was forced to resign. He was succeeded by Dr. George Michaelis, who was then Food Comptroller of Prussia and who, up to that time, had been practically unknown. In as far as the new Chancellor had any definitely expressed policies they included unity on internal questions, confidence and solidarity in the Government's foreign policies, and maintenance of Germany's present Allies.

The next important political development was a resolution passed on July 19, 1917, in the Reichstag in regard to the peace terms. This resolution provided for the rejection of "forced annexations" and of any form of political, economic or financial oppression after the war, and defined as the main objects of the war the liberty, independence and integrity of the German Empire. It was supported by the Centre, Progressive and Socialist parties, and although opposed by the Conservative and National Liberals, was carried by a majority of about one hundred. It was undoubtedly an expression of the gradually changing sentiment of the nation in its attitude toward the war, indicating that the Pan-Germans and reactionary elements were losing ground and that a majority of the people were taking a more moderate view. At last the masses of the German people appeared to be asking themselves for the true reasons why Germany should have aroused such widespread and deep-seated hatred not only in hostile but also in neutral countries. The new Chancellor's attitude toward this resolution clearly indicated that he would attempt to arrive at some compromise. He qualified his acceptance of it by the words "as he understood it," which, of course, left the way open to him to interpret it in whatever manner might become necessary as the result of future developments.

Dr. Zimmerman, the Foreign Secretary, had resigned when his chief, the Chancellor, had given up office, and was succeeded by Richard von Kuehlmann. The latter soon became the leading spirit in the direction of Germany's foreign policies, overshadowing in this respect the new Chancellor. He was much better known than his chief, both in Germany and abroad, and had the reputation of being a skillful and experienced diplomat. His policy seemed to have for its principal object to sow distrust and dissension among the Allies. After having given expression to its sentiments in regard to the peace conditions the Reichstag voted another war credit of 15,000,000,000 marks and then adjourned until October.

From then on indications that a serious upheaval was on its way became more pronounced, though, of course, at this time there was no way of telling what form it would take and what consequences it would have. On the one hand a campaign was started, undoubtedly with the support of the Pan-Germans and other reactionaries. Officially its purpose was to reawaken what they chose to call the patriotism of the German people. Its true purpose was an attempt to win support for a "German" peace as opposed to a peace without annexations. On the other hand, disorders which occurred in the Navy, though comparatively slight and limited in extent, sounded almost like the preliminary rumbles of an approaching revolution. Interpellations made in regard to both these occurrences after the Reichstag reconvened in October, 1917, were met by the Government in such an unsatisfactory manner that for the first time since war had broken out a bill involving the granting of a war credit, comparatively small though it was, was referred back to the committee who had reported it to the Reichstag. Eventually this bill was passed, but by that time the Government found itself in such difficulties as the result of the growing opposition toward the conduct of the war that the Reichstag was prorogued. During the last week of October, 1917, Dr. Michaelis resigned and was succeeded on November 1, 1917, by Count George von Hertling, then Prime Minister of Bavaria, and for many years one of the leaders of the Centre Party.

The new Chancellor was then 74 years old. He was essentially conservative, but in spite of this he was rather *persona non grata* with the extreme conservatives, Pan-Germans and other reactionaries. Utterly opposed though all his principles were to those for which the Socialists stood, he still was acceptable to them to a certain extent. Often in years past, previous to the war, the Centre and the Socialists in Bavaria had managed to work together at election time for the purpose of defeating other parties. Then, too, he proved by the first step which he took when the chancellorship was first offered to him that he was sincerely attempting to find a solution for the internal problems of Germany. This step, unprecedented in the political history of Germany, was a series of conferences with the various party leaders and seemed to indicate that the day of a parliamentary government in Germany was approaching. Not until he finally arrived at an understanding, at least partially satisfactory and holding out some hopes for a foundation on which a compromise could be based, did he accept the chancellorship. The major points of his program were the assumption of a foreign policy along the lines of the Pope's message (see ITALY), the abolition, or at least relaxation, of the political censorship and of the state of siege, and the acceptance of the Reichstag's demand for the immediate carrying out of the electoral reforms for Prussia.

The latter, it will be recalled, had been promised in a more or less guarded way in a manifesto of the Emperor early in April, 1917. In July, immediately preceding the resignation of von Bethmann-Hollweg, the Emperor had reversed the position which he had taken in his manifesto to the extent of instructing the ministry to prepare and bring in a bill before the next elections providing for the revision of the Prussian electoral system on the basis of equal franchise. This bill was made public in December, 1917. It provided for the introduction of the equal, direct and secret ballot for the lower house of the Prussian parliament, with a reapportionment of the electoral districts on a more equitable basis. It also changed entirely the make-up of the upper house, reducing greatly the influence and hereditary prerogatives of the nobility, as well as of the appointing power of the king, and greatly increasing the representation of the various other classes of the population, with the single exception of the Labor classes. Far reaching as this reform was, it did not, of course, meet the demands of the Socialists. On the other hand, it also met with strong opposition from the Conservatives.

Early in January, 1918, a determined effort was made to bring about the resignation of the Secretary of Foreign Affairs, whose attitude in the Peace Negotiations with Russia (q. v.) was entirely too moderate in the opinion of the Pan-Germans and other reactionaries. The latter at this time had again gained the upper hand. It was their influence primarily which was responsible for the dictated peace which Finland, Rumania and the Ukraine were forced to make with Germany. They were even strong enough to defeat the Government's Constitutional reform measure for Prussia, and in May, 1918, by a majority of some 50 votes, they substituted for it in the Prussian Diet a complicated sixth-class election law. Having achieved this much, the reactionaries also came out openly for a dictated peace with the other Allies, involving annexation of large parts of Belgium and France, and the payment to Germany of vast indemnities. These reactionary gains, to which the new Hertling

Government apparently put up no opposition, greatly increased the dissatisfaction of the Socialists and resulted in Socialist attacks against the Government from the more moderate Socialist groups, which heretofore had been supporting the Government, at least to a certain extent. The leader of this new opposition was the Socialist Deputy, Scheidemann. He vigorously attacked the Government's policies and warned it that the continuously growing food difficulties and the reactionary propaganda in Prussia were greatly increasing popular discontent and would before long result in serious trouble. That he had gauged correctly the popular sentiment was soon proven by many strikes which broke out all over the country and by even more serious semi-revolutionary demonstrations. Attempts on the part of the Government to suppress these were futile, even though they went so far as to arrest some of the radical Socialist Deputies and to sentence them to long terms of imprisonment.

New fuel was added to the flame of revolt by the uncompromising attitude the Chancellor took toward the rather conciliatory speeches made at about this time by both President Wilson and Prime Minister Lloyd George. Then in March, 1918, a diplomatic-political scandal which had been threatening for some time finally broke when the so-called Lichnowsky memorandum was published. This contained revelations by the former German Ambassador to London, Prince Lichnowsky, who at great length gave his side of the pre-war diplomacy of Germany.

Chapter XLIV

GERMANY'S PEACE DRIVES. 1918

IN JUNE, 1918, Dr. Von Kühlman, during an address to the Reichstag, expressed it as his opinion that the war could not any longer be won by arms alone. This speech coincided with serious attacks which had been made against his personal character, and finally, on July 9, 1918, he was forced to resign. He was succeeded by Admiral Von Hintze, the former German Minister to China.

The Chancellor by this time had found it necessary to reverse his former position in regard to peace terms. He stated that Germany did not intend to hold Belgium permanently. Signs now appeared that dissensions had broken out not only between Germany and her Allies, but also between some of the separate German States. And it became more and more evident that Germany's war Allies were approaching a point where peace for them would be a necessity, and Germany might find herself facing the great western powers alone.

How near Germany by this time had come to the end of her resources became evident by the fact that in September, 1918, peace overtures were made by Germany to Belgium and undoubtedly with the knowledge and most likely at the instigation of the German Government by Austria-Hungary to the Allies. In the meantime Von Hertling had resigned, on September 29, 1918, and Prince Max von Baden had become Imperial Chancellor, on October 2, 1918. Dr. Solf, Colonial Secretary, became also Foreign Secretary. The new Chancellor was favorably known as a man of comparatively liberal views, and he was put in power undoubtedly in the hope that he would be able to rally the conservative as well as the moderate factions to the support of the monarchy to a sufficient degree to overcome the anti-monarchial sentiment which was growing day by day. On October 5 the new Chancellor suddenly made an appeal to the President of the United States, asking him to take steps to bring about peace and advising him that such changes had occurred in the form of the German Government that the President's requirements as expressed in his recent speeches had practically been met. On Octobr 16, 1918, the Federal Council accepted an amendment to the Constitution which made it necessary for the executive to secure the consent of the Federal Council and the Reichstag to declarations of war and to treaties of peace and treaties with foreign powers.

On October 21, 1918, the German government sent another note to President Wilson, describing the fundamental changes that had been made in the German Government, and claiming for the latter that it was now in "complete accord with the principle of representation of the people based on equal, universal, secret, direct franchise." The note also stated that orders had been issued to all German submarine commanders to cease the torpedoing of passenger ships. It further requested that steps be taken by President Wilson to arrange an armistice. This request, however, was qualified by the statement that this armistice must not contain any "demand which would be irreconcilable with the honor of the German people and with the opening of a way to a peace of justice."

Only two days later, on October 23, 1918, the German Government received the President's reply, in which he expressed his willingness to consider, together with the Allies of the United States, the question of an armistice. He pointed out, however, that he felt himself not in a position to suggest to the consideration of the Allies any armistice which would not leave the Allies in the position to enforce, if necessary, any arrangement which might finally be arrived at between the Allies and their enemies, or leave open any way for a renewal of hostilities on the part of Germany.

The German Government immediately began the consideration of the President's reply, which latter was also submitted for discussion to the various political parties as represented in the Reichstag. These discussions began on October 25, 1918, and this day may justly be considered the beginning of the upheaval which was finally to overthrow monarchial government in the German Empire. It was on this day that the German people first began to appreciate the fact that the war had been lost. Enormous crowds assembled before the Reichstag building in Berlin and called for the abdication of the Emperor and the formation of a republic.

The German Government clearly indicated that it appreciated how rapidly conditions were growing dangerous in Germany. Only a few days after the receipt of the President's note the German government dispatched another, even more urgent, request for armistice proposals. In the second note emphasis was laid on the fact that such far reaching changes had occurred in Germany's constitutional structure that the peace negotiations about to be undertaken would be carried on by the people's government "in whose hands rest both actually and constitutionally the power to make the deciding conclusions." This note concluded with a statement that "the German government now awaits the proposals for an armistice."

During the anxious weeks which intervened between the day Germany had made her definite request for an armistice and the day when this armistice was actually signed, political conditions in Germany became more and more turbulent. Especially true was this in the large cities, where day after day vast crowds would assemble and make more or less violent demonstrations against their present rulers. Demands for the Emperor's abdication became more frequent and more insistent.

Beginning with November 3, 1918, when, as we have seen in the story of Austria-Hungary, the Austrian armistice was signed, political unrest in Germany became still more intense. It was on this day that the German Emperor publicly admitted that he was beginning to see the handwriting on the wall. An imperial decree, addressed to the German Chancellor, was issued, in which the Emperor officially and publicly accepted the transfer of "fundamental rights of the Kaiser's person to the people," and in which he approved the fundamental changes in the German Government which had been made to meet the Allied demands. In spite of these admissions, however, the Emperor at this time still refused to yield to any of the many and insistent demands made from all sides for his abdication.

On the following day, November 4, 1918, the drastic terms of the Austrian Armistice were published in Germany and consternation reigned throughout the Empire. These terms first definitely suggested what there was in store for Germany. In spite of the bitter awakening which must have resulted from this knowledge, the demand for an immediate armistice and cessation of hostilities grew more and more insistent. No small share in the increasing war weariness of the German people was borne by the continued success of the Allied armies on the Western Front. At no time during the preliminary discussions in regard to the armistice did the Allied armies let up in their tremendous attacks on the enemy, which were made at many points along the entire front from the North Sea to Switzerland. Day and night the most violent mass attacks, supported by tremendously concentrated artillery fire and aerial bombardments on a scale hitherto unheard of, hammered away at the shattered German lines. With a speed which turned their operation into little less than a rout the Germans retreated from Belgium and France, suffering enormous losses in dead, wounded and prisoners.

At last, on November 5, 1918, the German Government received the Allied answer for which it had been waiting for the last two weeks. It was handed by the United States Department of State to the Swiss Minister at Washington, who then, as he had, indeed, ever since the United States and Germany had gone to war, represented the German Government and its interests in the United States. This note, which in a way may be properly called the foundation on which the armistice and eventually the peace treaty was built, read:

DEPARTMENT OF STATE

November 5, 1918.

From the Secretary of State to the Minister of Switzerland, in charge of German interests in the United States.

Sir: I have the honor to request you to transmit the following communication to the German Government:

In my note of October 23, 1918, I advised you that the President had transmitted his correspondence with the German authorities to the Governments with which the Government of the United States is associated as a belligerent with the suggestion that, if those Governments were disposed to accept peace upon the terms and principles indicated, their military advisers and the military advisers of the United States be asked to submit to the Governments associated against Germany the necessary terms of such an armistice as would fully protect the interests of the peoples involved and insure to the associated Government the unrestricted power to safeguard and enforce the details of the peace to which the German Government has agreed, provided they deem such an armistice possible from the military point of view.

The President is now in receipt of a memorandum of observations by the Allied Governments on this correspondence, which is as follows.:

The Allied Governments have given careful consideration to the correspondence which has passed between the President of the United States and the German Government. Subject to the qualifications which follow, they declare their willingness to make peace with the Government of Germany on the terms of peace laid down in the President's address to Congress of January, 1918, and the principles of settlement enunciated in his subsequent addresses.

They must point out, however, that Clause 2, relating to what is usually described as the freedom of the seas, is open to various interpretations, some of which they could not accept. They must, therefore, reserve to themselves complete freedom on this subject when they enter the peace conference.

Further, in the conditions of peace laid down in his address to Congress of January 8, 1918, the President declared that invaded territories must be restored as well as evacuated and freed. The Allied Governments feel that no doubt ought to be allowed to exist as to what this provision implies. By it they understand that compensation will be made by Germany for all damage done to the civilian population of the Allies and their property by the aggression of Germany by land, by sea, and from the air.

I am instructed by the President to say that he is in agreement with the interpretation set forth in the last paragraph of the memorandum above quoted. I am further instructed by the President to request you to notify the German Government that Marshal Foch has been authorized by the Government of the United States and the Allied Governments to receive properly accredited representatives of the German Government and communicate to them terms of an armistice.

Accept, Sir, the renewed assurances of my highest consideration.

(Signed) ROBERT LANSING.

MR. HANS SULZER,
Minister of Switzerland,
In charge of German interests in the United States.

No time was lost by the German Government. Marshal Foch, the Allied representative, at midnight, November 7, 1918, received the following despatch from the German supreme command by order of the German Government:

The German Government, having been informed through the President of the United States that Marshal Foch had received powers to receive accredited representatives of the German Government and communicate to them conditions of an armistice, the following plenipotentiaries have been named by it:

Mathias Erzberger, General H. K. A. von Winterfeld, Count Alfred von Oberndorff, General von Grünnel, and Naval Captain von Salow.

The plenipotentiaries request that they be informed by wireless of the place where they can meet Marshal Foch. They will proceed by automobile, with subordinates of the staff, to the place thus appointed.

Late during the night of November 7, 1918, the German plenipotentiaries crossed the Allied line near La Capelle. About 2:00 A. M., November 8, 1918, they reached the point which had been selected by the Allied supreme commander within the French lines and spent the rest of the night at Rethondes, about six miles east of Compiègne, and about thirty miles from Marshal Foch's headquarters. They arrived in automobiles, carrying white flags and preceded by a trumpeter. Just outside the French lines they were challenged by a French officer with a small number of soldiers. Having established their identity by showing their credentials, the German delegates were blindfolded and conducted through the lines. At nine o'clock in the morning of November 8, 1918, Marshal Foch received them in the railroad car used as his headquarters. Their credentials were opened and verified. Mathias Erzberger, chairman of the German delegation, made a short address in French, stating that the German Government, having been advised by President Wilson that Marshal Foch had been appointed by the Allies to communicate to the German delegates the Allied conditions, they had been appointed plenipotentiaries to receive these terms and eventually to sign the armistice. Marshal Foch, without replying to the address read the armistice terms, and handed them to the German delegation, asking that they be accepted or rejected within seventy-two hours. The Germans were permitted to communicate with their headquarters at Spa by wireless and by courier.

At 5:00 a. m., Paris time, November 11, 1918, the armistice was signed, and a great step towards bringing peace to a war-weary world had been taken. (See FRANCE.)

THE GERMAN REPUBLIC. 1918-1928

Chapter XLV

THE GERMAN REVOLUTION. 1918.

THE signing of the Armistice came too late to make it possible for the German Government to maintain the old order. Practically throughout the entire period beginning with Germany's first request for an armistice, revolution had been spreading throughout Germany. Some of the smaller states, notably Bavaria, when it became clear that the end had come for the German armies, seemed to show strong inclinations to secede from the Empire, possibly with the hope that by breaking loose from Prussia and its dynasty they might be able to make more advantageous terms for themselves with the Allies. The Social Democrats demanded parliamentary government of a more complete character, and, as it fortunately happened, were ready to take control and carry on organized government.

During the first week of November, 1918, immense and highly wrought up crowds met in many of the large cities, such as Munich and Stuttgart. They freely displayed red flags and signs expressing demands that the war be ended and republics be substituted for monarchies.

The most definite impetus toward actual revolution, perhaps, came from the German High Seas Fleet at Kiel. It appears that late in October, 1918, when the Germans in command apparently had determined that there was no hope left for the German armies it had been tentatively decided to make one last effort to save the day by making a naval attack with the entire German High Seas Fleet. The naval and military commanders, however, had reckoned without the masses of German sailors. Knowing full well that such an undertaking at this time not only was bound to be unsuccessful, but what amounted practically to nothing less than the sure death of thousands of German sailors without even the slightest hope of accomplishing anything for the good of the country, the sailors on many of the largest battleships mutinied. Workmen's and Soldiers' Councils were formed according to the Russian example in all of the more important German seaports, such as

Kiel, Wilhelmshaven, Heligoland, Borkum and Cuxhaven. These collaborated with similar councils formed by the sailors aboard the ships. Actual fighting began on November 7, 1918, on the battleship Kaiser. The officers resisted courageously, but were powerless against the much larger number of sailors. Ship after ship mutinied, hauled down the Imperial flag and hoisted in its place the red flag of revolution. On November 8, 1918, the Governor of Kiel was forced to capitulate. The Emperor's brother, Prince Henry of Prussia, for many years High Admiral of the German fleet and a resident of Kiel, barely managed to make his escape across the Danish border.

From the various harbors the revolt quickly spread to the large centres of German mercantile shipping. In Hamburg, Bremen and Lubeck, intensive street fighting took place.

On November 9, 1918, at last the German imperial idea received its death blow. After resisting for many days the German Emperor had at last decided to abdicate. This decision was made known by the announcement issued by the German Imperial Chancellor, Prince Max of Baden, which stated:

The Kaiser and King has decided to renounce the throne. The Imperial Chancellor will remain in office until the questions connected with the abdication of the Kaiser, the renouncing by the Crown Prince of the throne of the German Empire and of Prussia, and the setting up of a regency have been settled. For the regency he intends to appoint Deputy Ebert as Imperial Chancellor, and he proposes that a bill shall be brought in for the establishment of a law providing for the immediate promulgation of general suffrage and for a constitutional German National Assembly, which will settle finally the future form of government of the German Nation and of those peoples which might be desirous of coming within the empire.

The actual official abdication was not made until the end of November, 1918. It was written in Amerongen, Holland, where the Emperor had found refuge after his flight from Germany. It read:

I hereby for all the future renounce my rights to the crown of Prussia and the associated rights to the German Imperial Crown.

At the same time I release all officials of the German Empire and Prussia, as well as the officers, non-commissioned officers and men of the navy, of the Prussian army, and of the federal contingents, from the oath of fealty which they have made to me as their Emperor, King and Supreme Commander. I expect of them that until the reorganization of the German Empire they will help those in possession of actual power in Germany to protect the German people against the threatening danger of anarchy, famine, and foreign domination.

Given under our hand and our Imperial Seal,
Amerongen, 28 November, 1918.

WILHELM.

From now on revolution spread like a wildfire across all the German states. The King of Bavaria was the first to be forced from his throne and in his place a socialistic journalist, Kurt Eisner, was placed at the head of what was now the Socialist Republic of Bavaria. The Emperor's son-in-law, the young Duke of Brunswick, followed the next day, and in quick succession Württemburg, Saxony, Oldenburg, Mecklenburg, Baden, and all of the lesser German duchies and principalities disappeared and were replaced by republics.

In many places, of course, the adherents of the monarchial form of government attempted to resist by force. But everywhere they were in the minority and the fighting occasioned by the revolution was short-lived and not particularly severe. In the former imperial capital, Berlin, it lasted only for a few days. There, as in many other parts of Germany, each of the two wings of the Social Democrats tried to gain the upper hand. For some time it was in doubt whether the radical wing, under the leadership of Dr. Karl Liebknecht, or the more moderate wing headed by the triumvirate—Ebert, Landsberg and Scheidemann, were to assume the supreme power. The latter, however, finally triumphed and for the time being the Government was placed in the hands of the more modern socialists under the title, the Government of Plenipotentiaries.

Its full title was Council of National Plenipotentiaries. It was composed of three Majority, or moderate, Socialists and three Independent Socialists, and was under the presidency of Chancellor Ebert. The latter, immediately after the last Imperial Chancellor had announced the Emperor's decision to abdicate and the temporary appointment of Ebert (then a small member of the Reichstag) as Imperial Chancellor, had issued the following address:

Citizens: The ex-Chancellor, Prince Max of Baden, in agreement with all the Secretaries of State, has handed over to me the task of liquidating his affairs as Chancellor. I am on the point of forming a new Government in accord with the various parties, and will keep public opinion freely informed of the course of events.

The new Government will be a Government of the people. It must make every effort to secure in the quickest possible time peace for the German people and consolidate the liberty which they have won.

The new Government has taken charge of the administration, to preserve the German people from civil war and famine and to accomplish their legitimate claim to autonomy. The Government can solve this problem only if all the officials in town and country will help.

I know it will be difficult for some to work with the new men who have taken charge of the empire, but I appeal to their love of the people. Lack of organization would in this heavy time mean anarchy in Germany and the surrender of the country to tremendous misery. Therefore, help your native country with fearless, indefatigable work for the future, every one at his post.

I demand every one's support in the hard task awaiting us. You know how seriously the war has menaced the provisioning of the people, which is the first condition of the people's existence. The political transformation should not trouble the people. The food supply is the first duty of all, whether in town or country, and they should not embarrass, but rather aid, the production of food supplies and their transport to the towns.

Food shortage signifies pillage and robbery, with great misery. The poorest will suffer the most and the industrial worker will be affected hardest. All who illicitly lay hands on food supplies or other supplies of prime necessity or the means of transport necessary for their distribution will be guilty in the highest degree toward the community.

I ask you immediately to leave the streets and remain orderly and calm.

A provisional cabinet was now appointed by the Council of National Plenipotentiaries. Its composition was as follows:

The Foreign Office: Dr. W. S. Solf, formerly the Secretary of Colonies, and more recently Foreign Secretary since the retirement of von Kuehlmann.

Treasury: Dr. Schiffer, a leading member of the National

Liberal party and a former Under Secretary in the Imperial Finance Ministry.

Economics: Dr. August Mueller, a Social Democrat and one of the Under Secretaries since members of his party had first been permitted to hold ministerial office.

War: Major John Scheuch, up to then Prussian Minister of War.

Navy: Vice Admiral Mann, the last Secretary of the Navy under the Imperial regime and previously head of the U-boat Department of the Navy.

Justice: Dr. Paul Krause, a National Liberal and a former Prussian Secretary of Justice.

Railways and Postoffices: Dr. Ruedlin, who had held similar office in the Prussian cabinet.

Labor: Dr. Bauer, a Socialist member of the Reichstag.

Minor portfolios were likewise held by Socialist Reichstag members.

The newly formed provisional German Government faced a difficult task indeed. Surrounded on all sides by the enemies of the Imperial Government, the cost of whose lost war was still to be settled, complications also arose in the interior almost immediately. The fact that the leaders of the new Government apparently were willing to form at least a limited coalition with some of the more or less reactionary parties was almost as objectionable to the Radical Socialists as had been the Imperial Government itself. The extreme radicals, known as the Spartacans group, immediately put themselves in opposition to the Ebert Government. This group was under the leadership of Dr. Liebknecht and his Reichstag colleagues, Haase and Barth. The latter two, it is true, differed from the first in being opponents to the use of violence and on the strength of this differencce at this time were members of the Council of National Plenipotentiaries as representatives of the Independent Socialists. In every other respect, however, they supported Dr. Liebknecht and opposed themselves to Ebert and his followers. How much the Spartacist group and their followers differed from the Ebert group can easily be seen by comparison with the address of Chancellor Ebert, quoted above, the following call to arms for the social revolution issued by Dr. Liebknecht during the days immediately preceding the Armistice:

Dear Comrades: For more than four years our rulers have been engaged in a robber war for the oppression of our neighbors. During the last ten or twelve years these same rulers have preached the bad doctrine of "Slavic danger." They sowed in our hearts fear of the Slavs. But this was merely camouflage for further imperialistic aggression. As if the way to St. Petersburg lay through Belgium and Northern France, they gave orders to let the armies loose.

During these four years the peoples of the world have bled until they can bleed no more. And what have we won? Have we won one hundredth part of what we and our rulers started out to get? Instead of this, we have lost until we have nothing more to lose. One thing we have won—the hatred of mankind.

And now we have, through the President of America, asked our enemies for peace. Comrades, now comes for you a fitting opportunity. Unite. Hold together under the banner of the "International." You should not hold yourselves as discouraged. It was never your war. You were driven by your rulers into the world slaughter. You have got what you deserved. It now lies with you to dismiss your rulers.

Act at once. It is your only prospect. Stretch the tyrant at your feet with a mighty blow. He now wavers. A well-aimed blow will at this time win your freedom, and will to some extent recompense you for all the blood that has been shed during the last four sad years.

Lay down your weapons, you soldiers at the front. Lay down your tools, you workers at home. Do not let yourselves be deceived any longer by your rulers, the lip patriots, and the munitions profiteers. Rise with power and seize the reins of government. Yours is the force. To you belongs the right to rule. Answer the call for freedom and win your own war for liberty.

For more than four years have your oppressors used you as the tools with which to fill their pockets. More than four years have they offered your sons, fathers, brothers, as victims and have starved millions, so that they might coin profits out of your blood.

Had you won the war you would have remained helpless slaves; you are beaten. Victory is within your grasp. It lies with you to seize it.

Comrades! Soldiers! Sailors! And you workers! Arise by regiments and arise by factories. Disarm your officers, whose sympathies and ideas are those of the ruling classes. Conquer your foremen, who are on the side of the present order. Announce the fall of your masters and demonstrate your solidarity. Do not heed the advice of the Kaiser Social Democrats. Do not let yourselves be led any longer by unworthy politicans, who play you false and deliver you into the hands of the enemy.

Stand fast like many of the genuine Social Democrats in your companies and regiments. Seize the quarters of your officers; disarm them immediately. Make sure that your officers sympathize with you. In case they do so, let them lead you. Shoot them immediately in case they betray you after they have declared themselves supporters of your cause.

Soldiers and marines! Fraternize! Take possession of your ships. Overpower first your officers. Place yourselves in communication with your comrades on land and seize all harbors and open fire, if necessary, on loyal groups.

Workers in munition factories: You are the masters of the situation. Stop work immediately. From this moment on, you are only making bullets which will be used against you and yours. The bullets which you make now will never reach the front.

Stop making bayonets which will be thrust into your entrails by the knights of the Government. Arise, organize, seize weapons and use them against those who plan to make slaves of you after they have made their own peace. End the war yourselves and use your weapons against the rulers.

In Berlin, the principal city of the Spartacus group, Dr. Liebknecht and his close associate, Rosa Luxemburg, by an unending series of violent speeches, kept the masses inflamed. The head of the Bavarian government, Kurt Eisner, demanded the immediate summoning of an All German National Assembly. The demand was strongly supported in Bavaria and in many of the other German states. A federal conference, therefore, was called, and seventy delegates, representing twenty-one German states, met on November 25, 1918, to formulate rules for the coming National Convention. Differences between the various groups were now even more strongly defined. Anti-Prussian sentiment found expression in violent attacks against Ebert and his government and against the attempt of the Government to call the National Convention to meet at Berlin. Another expression of anti-Prussian sentiment was evident in the formation of a Rhine Republic.

Chapter XLVI

THE SPARTACUS REVOLT. 1918-1919

DURING the last days of November and the beginning of December, 1918, the political confusion and the tendency toward civil war spread still more. Strikes occurred in many of the industrial centres. The South German states, especially Bavaria, became more and more outspoken in their disapproval of the Ebert Government, and in their demands for a separation from Prussian influence, and Eisner, on November 27, 1918, even went so far as to announce that relations had been broken off with the Berlin Foreign Office. Dr. Liebknecht had been freed from prison and as leader of the Spartacus League headed what appeared to be a very serious revolt.

The Ebert Government fought back as much as possible, and to judge by later events, succeeded fairly well in maintaining its hold on the large mass of the German populace. In spite of dissensions within its own ranks it found it possible to announce the appointment of an investigation into the alleged atrocities and crimes of Germany's forces in Belgium and to frustrate a plot to restore the emperor.

Differences between the Ebert Government and the Spartacides now came quickly to an issue. Strikes were of frequent occurrence. The Provisional Government experienced a number of changes, some of the men who had been connected with the former Imperial Government, like Dr. Solf, being forced to resign on the strength of this connection and of the suspicions which it caused. The Ebert Government openly denounced Liebknecht and his followers as traitors and as the worst enemies of Germany, but had neither the courage nor the power to prevent a continuation of their activities. People's Councils, Soldiers' and Workmen's Councils, and councils of one or another kind, sprang up everywhere and added by their various demands and by their political agitation to the confusion.

Matters now began to come to a head. On December 16, 1918, the Central Council of Delegates from Soldiers' and Workmen's Councils convened at Berlin primarily for the purpose of debating the date and place of the National Assembly.

The meeting of the Council was rather stormy. The Independent Socialists and members of the Spartacus group were greatly outnumbered by Majority Socialists. A resolution proposed by the Radicals to invite their two principal leaders, Dr. Karl Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg, to attend the Congress and to invest them with advisory powers was voted down five to one. In spite of this Dr. Liebknecht succeeded in making his way into the building in which the Congress was held, the palace of the former Prussian Diet. He made his way to the roof and from there harangued the vast crowds surrounding the palace. Possibly because at that distance most of what he said could not be heard by any considerable part of the crowd, his usual success in carrying crowds with him was lacking.

These were not the only setbacks which the Radicals suffered on the first day of the meeting. The town hall and public buildings of Neukölln, a suburb of Berlin and the centre of Dr. Liebknecht's propaganda, were occupied by Government soldiers. The local Soldiers' and Workers' Council, one of the strongest radical councils, was dissolved and its members were temporarily arrested.

On the second day of the meeting the Radicals continued their attempts to carry the Congress. Independent Socialist members of the Government attacked their fellow members belonging to the Majority Socialists, without, however, succeeding beyond keeping the Congress in uproar during the greater part of the day.

On the third day still another Liebknecht delegation forced its way into the Congress. They claimed to represent 250,000 workers and threatened that unless they were admitted as their delegates these 250,000 workers would strike on the following day. They eventually succeeded in getting permission to speak and their leader then presented the demands of the Radical Socialists. These were:

First. All of Germany was to be formed into one single republic.

Second. All power was to be given to the Soldiers' and Workmen's Councils.

Third. The supreme executive power was to be exercised by the Executive Council.

Fourth. The Council of People's Commissioners was to be abolished.

Fifth. Proper measures were to be taken immediately looking toward the protection of the revolution.

Sixth. All so-called counter-revolutionists were to be disarmed.

Seventh. The proletariat was to be armed.

Eighth. Propaganda was to be started immediately for the establishment of a socialist world republic.

Almost the entire Congress received these demands in silence and eventually the delegation which had presented them retired from the meeting hall and devoted itself to addressing the crowds assembled on the outside. Later in the day the Congress succeeded in transacting some actual business. A resolution was passed transferring legislative and executive power to the People's Commissioners—the official title of the Ebert Government—until other arrangements should be made by the National Assembly. A central council was appointed for the purpose of exercising parliamentary supervision over both the "reichs" and the Prussian cabinets. This central council was also empowered to appoint and depose the People's Commissioners for Germany and for Prussia. Provision was made for the supervision of the various departments of the new Government by commissioners to be appointed by the People's Commissioners, but selected exclusively from the Social Democratic parties. A resolution demanding the elimination of the bourgeois class from the Government was defeated. The foreign policy of the Government was severely criticised in reports made by special committees.

The fourth day of the Congress opened with the galleries packed with members of the Spartacus group. In spite of this fact, however, and in spite of the confusion which reigned almost throughout the entire day, the Congress eventually succeeded in voting that elections to a National Assembly should be held on January 19, 1919. Almost 400 of the delegates voted for this date and only the surprisingly small number of 70 Independent Socialists voted against it. The chairman, by means of an uncompromising attitude and a courageous insistence on order, managed to prevent any really successful opposition on the part of the Radicals. A new central executive committee was also elected. Its membership consisted of 27 soldiers and working men, all of them Majority

Socialists. Though its functions were comparatively limited this was an important step because by its composition participation on the part of the Independent Socialists in the executive branch of the Government was practically excluded. Having accomplished this much the Congress of Workmen's and Soldiers' Councils adjourned on the afternoon of December 20, 1918.

Within a few days after the end of the Congress the German Government accepted von Hindenburg's suggestion to form a people's guard or national army.

Various setbacks which the Spartacides suffered during the sessions of the Congress did not seem to have cooled their revolutionary ardor. A new impetus was given to it also on December 22, 1918, by the arrival of a delegation from the Russian Soviet Government, headed by M. Radek. The Spartacides in Berlin also received further encouragement by the continued spread of strikes in the principal industrial regions of the Empire, especially in the Silesian and Westphalian coal fields.

The same day that brought the arrival of the Russian delegation also saw a renewal of street fighting in Germany. Armed sailors in sympathy with Dr. Liebknecht and his followers clashed with armed soldiers who were supporting the Ebert Government. By December 24, 1918, these clashes had become more severe and more frequent. The sailors had occupied, during the night, the royal palace and the royal stables situated on the other side of the palace square. Before daybreak the soldiers had succeeded in recapturing part of the palace and during the best part of the morning firing between the two groups continued. Finally, about 10:00 a.m., the Government troops attacked the royal stables. A terrific cannonade lasting only a quarter of an hour sufficed to make the sailors display the white flag both from a window of the stables and from a balcony of the palace. Negotiations, however, for capitulation yielded no result. Somewhat later a regiment of the former guard arrived on the scene with several field guns. Half an hour of quick and well directed fire resulted in the surrender of the sailors, whose casualties numbered over sixty. To a certain extent this episode ended temporarily at least the street fighting, although the Spartacides succeeded in seizing, on Christmas Day, the offices of the Socialist newspaper Vorwärts.

On December 28, 1918, the political differences between the Majority Socialists and the Independent Socialists came to a head as far as the then existing Government of Germany was concerned. As a result of a joint meeting of the People's Commissioners and the Central Executive Council, over which Ebert presided and which brought out the utter impossibility of a compromise between the two Socialist groups, the Independent Socialist members of the People's Commissioners, Haase, Barth, and Dittmann, resigned from the Cabinet.

At about the same period disturbing reports began to arrive from Bavaria. Premier Eisner's position at that time seemed to be seriously jeopardized. He had come out strongly and openly in support of the Independent Socialists as against the Ebert Government. In Bavaria both the Spartacides and adherents of the former reactionary Government had increased their activities and thereby brought about an increase in the industrial unrest and a decrease in whatever stability the new Bavarian Government may have achieved. On December 31, 1918, a large number of prominent men in Munich, the Bavarian capital, were arrested and considerable pressure was brought to bear on Prime Minister Eisner to have him resign in favor of a member of the cabinet, Herr Auer.

Radical disturbances and uprisings were reported also from various other parts of Germany and to a certain extent these were undoubtedly the result of propaganda carried on by the Spartacides and supported strongly, it was believed, by the Russian Bolshevist delegation.

Clearly though it had been established that the popular support was with the Ebert Government rather than with the Radical Socialists, the latter element were not going to give up without a final struggle. Rumors which were current during the last days of December, 1918, and the first few days of January, 1919, indicated that the Spartacus League and its adherents were making ready for an attempt to accomplish by violence that which they had not been able to do by other means.

At the head of the police in the National capital at this time was a man by the name of Eichhorn. It appears that the Cabinet on January 5, 1919, had deposed him as a result of his intimate connection with the extreme radicals. However, he refused to vacate his post and on the following day the storm broke. Police Headquarters in the centre of the city and near many other public buildings were held by Eichhorn and were turned into a Spartacus stronghold. Fighting began almost immediately and before very long had spread over that part of Berlin in which most of the public buildings were located. Armored cars, machine guns, and artillery, were used by both sides and the loss of life was considerable. The fighting lasted for the best part of a week and not until January 12, 1919, was the Ebert Government and its troops successful in capturing the most important strongholds of the Radicals. A few days later the Governmental forces began the enforcement of a decree demanding that every citizen give up all arms within 24 hours and by January 15, 1919, the revolt had been suppressed. The authority of the new republic was assured.

On the following day, January 16, 1919, Dr. Karl Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg, the two most prominent leaders of the Spartacus group were arrested. Shortly after their arrest and while they were being taken in automobiles to a place of detention, they were shot down by their guards. By their death the Spartacus League lost its two most efficient and aggressive leaders and, although the Radical Socialists continued to oppose the Ebert Government in every possible way, the backbone of their opposition had been broken.

On January 19, 1919, elections for members of the Constituent Assembly were held throughout Germany. All men and women over 20 years of age were entitled to participate in the election. The most successful party was the majority Socialists who carried 164 seats; the Clerical Party, formerly known as the Centre and now called the Christian People's Party, carried 91 seats; the Democratic Party, a combination of the former Progressives and National Liberals, carried 77 seats; the German National Party, made up of former Conservatives and Pan-Germans and representing the monarchist elements, carried 34 seats; the minority Socialists, representing the radical elements of the Socialist Party, carried 24 seats; the balance of the seats were distributed among a number of minor political factions. Eichhorn, Haase, Scheidemann, Ebert, Dr. Dernburg, and Count Pasadowsky, were among the most notable political figures elected.

In a general way the elections were conducted in an orderly manner and on February 6, 1919, the Constituent Assembly which was to decide the political future of Germany was opened in the Court Theatre at Weimar. There were 28 women delegates, a decided innovation in German political life. Prime Minister Ebert made the opening address. On the second day, February 7, Dr.

Eduard David, a well-known Social-Democrat, was elected President of the Assembly with one member each of the Clericals, Democrats, and Conservatives as Vice-Presidents. The Assembly then proceeded to the reading and consideration of the new German Constitution. On February 11, Prime Minister Friedrich Ebert was elected Provisional President of Germany by a vote of 277 out of 397 and at the same time the Provisional Constitution was adopted. The new Cabinet consisted of Philipp Scheidemann as Chancellor, Count Von Brockdorff-Rantzau as Foreign Minister, various members of the Socialists, Democrats, and Centrists, occupying the other Cabinet positions.

In spite of the decided setback which the radical element had received in the elections to the Constituent Assembly, sporadic outbreaks, initiated by local Radical groups, occurred for a considerable period after the arrest and death of Dr. Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg.

The most extensive and serious outbreak occurred in Munich, the capital of Bavaria. On February 21, 1919, the Bavarian Prime Minister, Kurt Eisner, was killed on the street by a former officer, Lieutenant Count Arco-Valley. While making the announcement of the Prime Minister's death to the newly assembled Bavarian Lower House, the Minister of the Interior, Auer, was severely wounded by pistol shots directed at him from the public gallery. The Prime Minister's death was followed by a rather extensive revolutionary movement in the Bavarian capital, which drove the then existing Government into retirement and left Munich in the hands of the radicals, who were strongly imbued with the Russian Soviet ideas.

Similar outbreaks, but of lesser extent and violence, occurred in many other parts of Germany throughout February and March, 1919. Strikes also were started in large numbers, and in a general way the outlook for Germany's future was extremely gloomy. In view of these conditions it speaks well of the strength and tact with which the Provisional Government met these conditions that in spite of all these outbreaks it managed to survive, to strengthen gradually its hold on the country and to bring, even if slowly, some semblance of order out of existing chaos. The attacks upon the new Government came almost exclusively from the extreme left wing of what was formerly the Social-Democratic Party. The Monarchists, of course, were not entirely idle, but generally speaking, they were apparently willing to play a waiting game. They were undoubtedly planning and scheming in the hope that at some opportune moment during the existing chaos they might find themselves in a position to attempt the restoration of the monarchy. The fact, however, has been established with reasonable definiteness that neither the ex-Kaiser in his refuge at Amerongen, nor the former Crown Prince on his island of Wieringen were taking any very active part against the existing Government. Indeed, the almost utter negligibility into which these two Hohenzollerns had passed in a few months is without parallel in modern history.

Chapter XLVII

GERMANY AND THE PEACE TREATY. 1919

AFTER the second Spartacist revolt had been successfully repressed there ensued a period of comparative quiet during which all of the political parties were marking time. Undoubtedly the principal reason for this condition was the fact that the discussions of the Paris Peace Conference (see FRANCE) were much longer drawn out than had been expected. While the representatives of the Allied Powers, assembled in Paris, were discussing and attempting to decide the future fate of Germany, none of the German political parties were in a position to do anything which would definitely commit them in any direction. Most of the leading politicians, therefore, restricted themselves to discussions of internal and external problems and to more or less vociferous and violent attacks upon each other. In announcing in March that the Government had suppressed the uprisings in Berlin, Herr Noske bitterly reproached the extremists for causing them. The Independent Socialists replied in kind.

Bavaria was the one exception. There, after the murder of Prime Minister Eisner, a full-fledged Soviet Government was proclaimed on April 7, 1919. That this wedge, driven by the Bolsheviki forces into the German body politic, did not spread further was primarily due to the efficiency with which the new German Minister of Defence, Noske, handled the situation.

The more or less constitutional Bavarian Government which had succeeded that of Prime Minister Eisner under the leadership of Prime Minister Hoffmann had found it necessary to retire from Munich to Bamberg. There it gradually collected all the forces available against the radicals and succeeded in making arrangements for military assistance on the part of Württemburg and Prussia. By the time these plans had matured, the people of Munich and the surrounding country themselves had become heartily tired and exasperated with the radicals. On May 2, 1919, the Soviet Government in Munich finally fell. This was not accomplished without considerable shedding of blood, a large part of which was done by the radicals who in cold blood murdered some prominent Munich citizens who had been imprisoned as hostages, when it became clear to them that the end of their rule was in sight.

With the collapse of the Bavarian Soviet Government the last stronghold of Bolshevism in Germany had been removed. It is true that there was still some danger that Bolshevism might gain the upper hand in Saxony and in Upper Silesia. Localized Spartacan outbreaks also occurred in Bremen and Hamburg. But Minister of Defence Noske found ways and means to overcome all these, and by the time the Paris Peace Conference was ready to hand the Peace Treaty to the German Delegates, on May 7, 1919, comparative peace reigned throughout Germany.

This momentous event occurred in the great dining hall of the Trianon Palace Hotel at Versailles, at 3:10 in the afternoon. Only three-quarters of an hour were needed to present to the representatives of the German people the decisions of the Peace Conference, which it was hoped would remove for all time the German menace and which were to form the basis of Germany's political and economic future. The six German Peace Delegates were: Count Ulrich Brockdorff-Rantzau, German Foreign Minister, Chairman; Dr. Walther Schuecking, Professor of Jurisprudence, University of Marburg and authority on international law; Dr. Adolph Muller, lately German Minister at Berne; Johann Giesberts, Minister of Posts and Telegraphs; Theodor Melchior, manager of Warburg & Co., Bankers; Dr. Eduard David, Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs.

The terms of the Peace Treaty, as far as they affected Germany, have already been discussed in detail in another part of this volume, and we, therefore, may properly restrict ourselves in this place to a short résumé of the territorial and financial losses which Germany was made to suffer in payment of the irreparable loss which she had made the world suffer. This résumé, based on the full treaty text, is taken from the New York "Times Current History Magazine," and reads as follows:

"Germany, by the terms of the Treaty, restores Alsace-Lorraine to France, accepts the internationalization of the Sarre Basin temporarily and of Danzig permanently, agrees to territorial changes toward Belgium and Denmark, and, in the east, Russia cedes most of Upper Silesia to Poland and renounces all territorial and political rights outside of Europe, as to her own or her Allies' territories, and especially to Morocco, Egypt, Siam, Liberia, and Shantung. She also recognizes the total independence of German Austria, Czecho-Slovakia, and Poland.

"Her army is reduced to 100,000 men, including officers; conscription within her territories is abolished; all forts fifty kilometers east of the Rhine are razed, and all importation, exportation, and nearly all production of war material stopped. Allied occupation of parts of Germany will continue till reparation is made, but will be reduced at the end of each of three five-year periods if Germany is fulfilling her obligations. Any violation by Germany of the conditions as to the zone fifty kilometers east of the Rhine will be regarded as an act of war.

"The German Navy is reduced to six battleships, six light cruisers, and twelve torpedo boats, without submarines, and a personnel of not over 15,000. All other vessels must be surrendered or destroyed. Germany is forbidden to build forts controlling the Baltic, must demolish Heligoland, open the Kiel Canal to all nations, and surrender her fourteen submarine cables. She may have no military or naval air forces except 100 unarmed seaplanes until October 1, to detect mines, and may manufacture aviation material for six months.

"Germany accepts full responsibility for all damages caused to the Allied and Associated Governments and Nationals, and agrees to reimburse all civilian damages, beginning with an initial payment of 20,000,000,000 marks (about $5,000,000,000 at pre-war reckoning), subsequent payments to be secured by bonds to be issued at the discretion of the Reparation Commission. Germany is to pay shipping damage on a ton-for-ton basis by cession of a large part of her merchant, coasting, and river fleets, and by new construction; and to devote her economic resources to the rebuilding of the devastated regions.

"She agrees to the 1914 most favored nation tariffs, without discrimination of any sort; to allow Allied and Associated Nationals freedom of transit through her territories, and to accept highly detailed provisions as to pre-war debts, unfair competition, internationalization of roads and rivers, and other economic and financial clauses. She also agrees to the trial of the ex-Kaiser by an international high court for a supreme offence against international morality, and of other nationals for violation of the laws and customs of war. Holland is to be asked to extradite the former Kaiser, and Germany is to be responsible for delivery of the other offenders.

"Germany is required to deliver manuscripts and prints equivalent in value to those destroyed in the Louvain Library. She must also return works of church art removed from Belgium to Germany."

The actual losses suffered by Germany in territory and population as a result of the terms of the Peace Treaty may be seen from the following tables:

	Sq. Miles	Population
Alsace-Lorraine, to France	5,680	1,874,014
Sarre Coal Basin to League of Nations	738	234,200
Schleswig, to Denmark	2,787	693,984
Posen and part of Silesia to Poland (including port of Danzig)	28,412	8,440,379
Malmedy, to Belgium	382	119,184
Total in Europe	37,999	11,361,761

LOSSES OF HER COLONIES

	Sq. Miles	Population
Togoland	33,668	1,003,612
Kamerun	305,019	3,501,537
German Southwest Africa	322,432	102,586
German East Africa	384,170	7,515,666
New Guinea (exclusive of Ladrone Islands)	92,244	545,478
Caroline Islands	560	39,000
Marshall Islands	158	16,000
Ladrone Islands	420	10,000
German Samoan Islands	993	37,980
Kiao-Chau (China)	213	196,470
Total of Colonies	1,139,877	12,968,329
Grand Total	1,177,876	24,330,090

GERMANY IN EUROPE

	Sq. Miles	Population
Before the War	208,825	64,925,993
After the War	170,826	53,564,232

Although the leader of the German Delegation was permitted to address the Peace Conference after the French Prime Minister, M. Clemenceau, had made the opening address, in his capacity as President of the Peace Conference, the German Delegates were informed when the Peace Treaty was handed to them that no oral discussions would be allowed, but that all objections and suggestions on the part of the Germans would have to be made in written form. As a result of this arrangement there ensued an exchange of communications by means of which the Germans attempted to accomplish modifications on various points of the Treaty. Generally speaking, these attempts met with no success.

The terms of the Peace Treaty aroused a storm of protest throughout Germany. Mass meetings against the signing of the Peace Treaty were held in a large number of places. Count Brockdorff-Rantzau left Versailles on May 17, 1919, to consult with the German Government at Spa, from where he returned on the 19th. Originally the Allies had demanded that Germany accept or refuse the Peace Treaty on or before May 21. The exchange of notes on the various terms of the Treaty, however, became so extensive that before long the Germans requested an extension of time, and the Allies finally granted this request, setting June 23 as the last day on which Germany should be permitted to refuse or accept the Treaty. As a result of the various notes sent by the German Delegation, the Peace Treaty, in some minor points, was revised and a copy of this revised version was delivered to the German Delegation on June 16, 1919.

June 23, 1919, the last day on which the Peace Treaty could be accepted or refused by the Germans, was also the date on which the Armistice, which, from time to time had been extended, was to expire. Pending the German decision in regard to the Peace Treaty, the Allied Powers proceeded to perfect their military plans for the invasion of Germany if such a step should become necessary as a result of a possible refusal on the part of the German Government to sign the Treaty. These plans provided not only for invasion of Germany, but for a complete cutting off from Germany of all sources of supplies.

After the German Peace Delegation had left Paris with a copy of the revised Treaty they had proceeded to Weimar. The first result of the presentation of the new Peace Terms was a Cabinet crisis. The Scheidemann Cabinet resigned and considerable difficulty was experienced in forming a new one. An attempt to form a Cabinet with Count Von Bernstorff and Dr. Dernburg as the principal members, failed. Finally a Cabinet was formed with G. A. Bauer as Prime Minister and Dr. Hermann Mueller as Foreign Minister. This Cabinet was frankly a temporary affair. It contained besides these two men most of the members of the former Scheidemann Cabinet.

Of course, considerable time was spent in the various attempts toward the formation of a new Cabinet, and it was not until June 21 that the new Prime Minister was able to make his first appearance before the National Assembly, which then gave him a vote of confidence. It was also on this day that the Allies first refused an official notification to the effect that Germany provisionally accepted the Peace Treaty. In this acceptance the German Government made some reservations, stating that it did not feel itself bound to accept the provision for the trial of the ex-Kaiser and his associates, and that it should not be held responsible if the terms of the Treaty were found to be impossible of fulfillment. The Supreme Council of the Peace Conference immediately replied to the effect that the time for discussion had passed and that the Allies would not accept any reservations on the part of Germany. During the night of June 22 and 23 the German Government made one more attempt to gain time. Its request for extension, however, was briefly and absolutely refused.

Finally, on June 23, 1919, at the last moment, the German National Assembly accepted without conditions or reservations the Allied terms. This acceptance was made by the following note:

"It appears to the Government of the German Republic, in consternation at the last communication of the Allied and Associated Governments, that these Governments have decided to wrest from Germany by force acceptance of the peace conditions, even those which, without presenting any material significance, aim at divesting the German people of their honor.

"No act of violence can touch the honor of the German people. The German people, after frightful suffering in these last years, have no means of defending themselves by external action.

"Yielding to superior force, and without renouncing in the meantime its own view of the unheard of injustice of the peace conditions, the Government of the German Republic declares that it is ready to accept and sign the peace conditions imposed."

Considerable difficulty was experienced in Germany to find anyone willing to take upon his shoulders the odium of affixing his name to the Peace Treaty on behalf of Germany. Finally, after considerable pressure had been exerted by the Allies to hasten the actual act of signing, the new Foreign Minister, Dr. Mueller, and one of his colleagues, Dr. Bell, Minister of the Colonies, were persuaded to undertake the unpleasant task. Dr. Haniel von Haimhausen, who had been carrying on the negotiations in Paris in behalf of Germany ever since the rest of the German Peace Delegation had left Paris, and who had been expected to become one of the signers, had sent his resignation by telegraph to the German Government in order to avoid affixing his name to the Treaty. The two German plenipotentiaries arrived at Versailles late in the evening of June 27. Without further loss of time it was decided that the signing of the Treaty was to take place in the famous Hall of Mirrors in the Palace of Versailles on the following day, Saturday, June 28, at 3 P. M. This historic ceremony, which has been described in another part of this volume (see FRANCE), took but a comparatively short time. While the representatives of some of the minor powers were still engaged in signing the Treaty, M. Clemenceau declared the Peace Conference closed, and the German Delegates immediately left. Late that evening they and the majority of the German Peace Delegation still in Paris returned to Germany.

During the last struggle of Germany to avoid the acceptance of the Peace Treaty two acts were perpetrated by the Germans which indicated clearly the attitude which they were taking toward the fulfillment of the terms of the Armistice and the Peace Treaty. One was the burning in Berlin of French flags which had been captured during the war and which, according to the terms of the Armistice, were to be returned to France. The other was the sinking of the interned German fleet at Scapa Flow. The latter event occurred on June 21, 1919. Without any warning the German crews of the interned ships had opened the sea-cocks and with but few exceptions all of the German ships were sunk. Their crews, who at the last moment left their ships and took to the boats, were rounded up by British sailors, not, however, until some of them had been killed and wounded when they refused to give themselves up. The Allies immediately announced that the German Government would be held responsible for the sinking of the fleet and that reparation for the loss would be exacted, although it seemed to be clearly established that the German Cabinet had neither conceived nor ordered this breach of the Armistice terms.

The Peace Treaty was ratified by the German National Assembly on July 9, 1919, by a vote of 208 to 115 with 99 Deputies not voting. The official documents verifying the German ratification reached the French Foreign Office on July 11, 1919.

The new Constitution was formally adopted by the German National Constitutional Assembly on July 31, 1919. Having been printed in the official National Legislative Journal of August 13, 1919, it became thereby the basic law of the new republic.

The new German Constitution consists of a preamble and 181 articles. It provides for the composition and functions of the National Government; for the relations between the National Government and the various States Governments; for the election and functions of the Reichstag, of the National president, of the chancellor and the National ministers, of the National Council, and of the duties of the various National Government Departments; for the administration of justice; for the fundamental rights and duties of the German citizens; for the regulation of marriage, of education, of religions and religious societies, and of economic life; for the temporary enforcement of existing laws and regulations pending the establishment of newly passed laws and regulations; for the repeal of the constitution of the former German Empire of April 16, 1871, and of the temporary law in respect of the exercise of National authority of February 10, 1919; for a nontinuation of all German laws and regulations in so far as they do not contradict the new Constitution.

Throughout the remainder of the year conditions were more or less stable. On December 3 the Minister of Finance offered a tax budget with a levy of 60% on the largest income. A great bond lottery loan was held December 15 for five billion marks. The sum raised fell considerably under four billion and the Government undertook to make up the balance by its own subscription. Germany accepted the protocol demanded by the Peace Conference and signed it on January 10, 1920, on which day Germany and fourteen powers exchanged ratifications of the treaty.

Chapter XLVIII

PROBLEMS OF THE PEACE. 1920-1924

THE Peace Treaty went into effect in Germany on January 10, 1920, and caused nation-wide disheartenment. The demand of the Allies for the extradition of prominent personages, including the German military leaders of the World War, aroused national feelings to the highest pitch. These sentiments reacted strongly against the newly founded Government which was struggling to gain a foothold. At this, for them, opportune time, the monarchists staged a counter-revolution, under the leadership of Dr. Wolfgang von Kapp and General von Lüttwitz. They seized Berlin on March 13, 1920, and placed a de facto Government in power. President Friedrich Ebert's Government took refuge in flight, to establish itself in Stuttgart. But the trade unions rallied to President Ebert's support and drove the Kapp Putsch, as it was known, from Berlin, after a period of power lasting only five days. A new ministry was formed by the Ebert Government on March 26, 1920, headed by Dr. Hermann Müller.

Disorders in the Ruhr district gave France an excuse to occupy Frankfort and the Main region in April. The German Government protested in vain to the League of Nations. One effect of the French move was the rousing of the German national spirit, for unity throughout the republic.

The first German election was held on June 6, 1920, and resulted unfavorably for the Coalition Government. A new Coalition Cabinet was formed, principally backed by the Centrists, the Democrats, and the People's Party. The new Government accepted the terms for reparations laid down by the Allies. By the end of 1920 the revolution had practically spent its force, and more or less stable conditions began to appear. Nationalist sentiment grew stronger, month by month, and the Ebert Government acquired more power as time went on. The severe reparations terms of the Allies announced in January, 1921, caused the Government to break off negotiations for their settlement. The Allies issued an ultimatum to the German Government on the subject in May, 1921, which brought about the fall of the Government. A new ministry was formed by Dr. Joseph Wirth, which undertook to carry out the demands of the Allies.

In August, Finance Minister Matthias Erzburger was murdered by a Nationalist. The reparations problem again came into prominence at the end of 1921, causing much opposition in the Reichstag to any settlement.

On April 22, 1922, Germany signed a treaty with Russia at Rapallo, by the terms of which each nation waived all World War claims against the other. Both countries denied that there were any secret clauses in the treaty inimical to the Allied nations. A moratorium lasting through 1922 was granted to Germany by the Reparation Commission in the matter of reparations.

Political unrest continued. Attempts to assassinate such leaders as Philipp Scheidemann and Maximilian Harden culminated with the murder of the Foreign Minister, Walter Rathenau, who had canceled early in the year the so-called Wiesbaden Agreement, with France. This agreement had provided for the delivery to France of German products to be credited to reparations.

The depreciation of the mark continued steadily during 1922, and by October its ratio to the dollar was 3,000 to one.

The Wirth Government was forced to resign late in 1922 and was succeeded by a business cabinet under the leadership of Dr. Carl Joseph Wilhelm Cuno. A default by Germany in her allotment of coal under the Reparations Agreement caused France to seize and occupy the Ruhr district in January, 1923. This action aroused bitter resentment throughout Germany, as the country depended on this region largely for raw materials for its manufactures. Unemployment reached a level never before experienced. The ever-increasing output of paper marks brought utter collapse in the value of the monetary unit. By June, its value had almost reached nullity. This, together with soaring food prices, brought about another political crisis and with it a change of Government.

The Cuno Cabinet resigned on August 12, 1923, and a new Government under the leadership of Dr. Gustav Stresemann was formed. He brought in a Coalition Cabinet made up from his own party (the German People's Party), the Socialists, the Centrists, and the Democrats. The new Government took severe measures to halt the passive resistance policy pursued in the Ruhr districts. The financial problems of the country, however, proved too difficult for solution, and the Stresemann Government was forced out of office in October, 1923. In a few days, after vain, but ineffectual attempts by other leaders to form a Cabinet, the Stresemann Government again resumed office. The Reichstag passed a bill in October placing greater powers in the hands of the Cabinet, by means of which it was hoped more stable political conditions would follow.

In October also came the culmination of the movement for a separate government for the Ruhr district, a Rhenish Republic, independent of the German Republic. This scheme on the part of inhabitants of the district had been secretly abetted by French and Belgian authorities, but it met with no encouragement from British and other international sources. On withdrawal of support by France and Belgium, the whole plot fell to the ground. By the first part of the year 1924, the movement had collapsed entirely.

In November, 1923, the monarchists in Bavaria, under leadership of General Erich Ludendorff and Dr. Adolph Hitler, attempted to overturn the Government with the design of re-establishing the Monarchy. The outbreak was quickly put down, the leaders failing utterly to rally any support from the people at large. The Government, at about this time, was confronted with a serious Communistic movement in Saxony and Thuringia. Troops were finally sent to put down this rebellion, which also quickly fell to pieces when stern measures were enforced. These disorders forced a change in Government and the Stresemann Cabinet was succeeded in November, 1923, by a Coalition Government under the leadership of Dr. Wilhelm Marx. The Reichstag, by an almost unanimous vote, gave to the new Government plenary powers for an indefinite time.

In December, 1923, a Rentenbank was established which was to issue a new currency called the rentenmark, which was to be backed by the wealth of the nation. The new rentenmark was established at a little more than four to the dollar. On issue, the paper mark had so depreciated that one rentenmark was the equivalent of one billion paper marks. With the beginning of 1924, the rentenmark was placed definitely upon a gold basis, and for the first time in years, Germany achieved a stable currency. As a measure for budget reform, in January, 1924, the public debt was temporarily repudiated until reparation payments could be decided upon and provisions made for their being met.

In November, 1923, former Crown Prince Frederick Wilhelm came from exile in Holland to his estate at Oehls, Silesia.

Chapter XLIX

REPARATIONS AND ARMAMENTS. 1923-1925

THE Reparation Commission, late in 1923, had decided to appoint two committees to investigate conditions in Germany and to report measures looking to solutions for her problems. One committee was to devise means for balancing the budget and stabilizing the currency, and the other was for examining the methods whereby German capital was exported to avoid payment of reparations. The first committee consisted of ten members, including Charles G. Dawes, as chairman, and Owen D. Young, American financial expert and financier. The second had Reginald McKenna, former British Chancellor of the Exchequer, for chairman. After three months of intensive work, the Dawes Commission, on April 9, 1924, brought in its report, or, as it was known, the "Dawes Plan" for payment of reparations and for stabilization of currency.

The substance of the Dawes Plan was the recognition that Germany must be made to meet the obligations imposed upon her by the Versailles Treaty; that payment must be made by Germany, beginning with a yearly amount of 1,000,000,000 gold marks, this to be increased to 2,500,000,000 gold marks in the fifth year and thereafter; that a mortgage should be placed upon the nation's entire industries to insure the carrying out of these financial obligations; that after five years a survey should be taken of the country's prosperity, other than statistics of exports, to determine whether Germany would be in a position to pay more than the stipulated amount yearly; that a foreign loan of 800,000,000 gold marks should be supplied to insure the gold standard; that a bank of issue should be established to stabilize the currency unit; that an international board of control should be appointed, with an agent to be in charge of all payments for reparations; and that France and Belgium should withdraw at once from occupied areas of Germany. The committee headed by McKenna announced that an estimate of 6,750,000,000 gold marks had been placed on the amount of money that had been exported from Germany. This committee's report also stated that up to date the total foreign capital invested in German marks, now worthless, was about equal to all that had been received on reparation payments. The reports were approved by the Reparation Commission on April 11, 1924, and less than a month later the several Allied Governments had tentatively approved.

Political events both in Germany, where a majority favorable to acceptance of the Dawes Plan was elected to the Reichstag, and in France, where a new ministry came into power, favored the final indorsement of the reparation payment measure.

A conference of the Allied Premiers met in London on July 16, to discuss the mode of execution of the Dawes Plan. On August 2, Germany was invited to send representatives to the Conference. An agreement by which France and Belgium were to evacuate the Ruhr district within one year of the London Conference terms was faithfully carried out. The Dawes Plan was finally agreed upon on August 16, 1924, by the Allied powers and Germany. The German Reichstag gave sanction to the new plan on August 29.

The Reparation Commission, on September 1, 1924, declared the Dawes Plan to be in operation and officially recognized Owen D. Young of the United States as Agent General for Reparation Payments, and Sir Andrew McFadyean of England as Commissioner of Revenues with M. Delacroix of France and Signor Nogara of Italy as associates.

Germany made her first payment of 20,000,000 gold marks to the Agent General on September 1. On October 13, the Reparation Commission thought that the Dawes Plan had been fully established and that the German Government had complied with all the requirements laid down by the London Conference.

German armament was a constant source of suspicion to the Allied Powers during 1924. In March, the Allies demanded that Germany reorganize her police force and make a complete transformation in the equipments of factories heretofore turning out war material. New regulations were imposed, prohibiting the import into, or export from Germany of war material of any sort. An Allied investigation of armament in Germany was ordered in June. The Stresemann Government was forced to admit that there were various military associations throughout the country, but promised that the Government would see to it that their powers would be circumscribed.

A new election in May resulted in return to power of Dr. Wilhelm Marx, who formed a Cabinet on May 28, 1924. The provisions of the London Conference relative to France's withdrawal from the Ruhr district were carried out in full by France. New elections were fixed for December 7, and active campaigning began in the early autumn. The results of the election showed that the Social Democrats had gained 29 seats, the Centrists 5, the Democrats 6, and the German National Party 9 over the election in May. The Social Democrats had in the new Reichstag 131 members, the greatest number of any party. The Centrists were next strongest, with 69. Chancellor Marx resigned on December 11, finding it impossible to form a new Coalition Cabinet. The task of forming any ministry proved to be a difficult one, and it was not until January 15, 1925, that a government could be formed. Dr. Hans Luther succeeded in forming a new Cabinet on that date, with himself as Chancellor; Herr Martin Schiele, Vice-Chancellor; Dr. Stresemann, Minister of Foreign Affairs; and Herr von Schlieben as Minister of Finance. The new Cabinet reflected the strong nationalist movement that was spreading through the country. On February 28, 1925, President Friedrich Ebert died. The loss of the first German President came as a great shock to the country, in which his popularity was increasing day by day. The forced election for the Presidency caused intense political activity and a vigorous campaign was at once instituted.

The election on March 28 resulted in a diffusion of votes so that no one candidate received an absolute majority, and it became necessary to hold a second election. In the first election, the Nationalists polled 10,408,365 votes for Karl Jarres; the Socialists, 7,798,346 for Otto von Brun, and the Centrists, 3,884,887 for Dr. Wilhelm Marx. On April 8, Field Marshal Paul von Hindenburg was elected over Dr. Marx. He was inaugurated President of Germany on May 12, 1925.

In June, the Allied Military Control notified Germany that if certain specified steps were not taken by the Government to further disarmament of the country, complete evacuation of the Ruhr district by the Allies would not take place. The Reichstag adjourned on August 12, with only a part of the administrative program accomplished.

Chapter L

LOCARNO AND AFTER. 1925—

THE most important step taken by the nations of Europe, since the Peace Conference at Versailles in 1919, was the Conference of European nations held at Locarno, Switzerland, which resulted in the Locarno Treaties, or Locarno Pacts, as they were known. Great Britain, France, Italy, Belgium, Germany, Poland and Czechoslovakia, took part in the conference.

The first covenant signed was made by Great Britain, France, Belgium and Italy with Germany. The second and third covenants were between Germany and Poland and Germany and Czechoslovakia. The treaty made by the first group is summarized as follows: the contracting countries collectively and severally guarantee the maintenance of the territorial status quo resulting from the Treaty of Versailles as to the frontiers settled between Germany and Belgium and between Germany and France. Germany, Belgium and France mutually undertake that they will in no case attack or invade each other or resort to war against each other. All disputes between these nations, not capable of diplomatic solution, shall be submitted to the Permanent Conciliation Commission, and if not settled by this means, the differences shall be passed to the Council of the League of Nations for decision.

The treaties signed between Germany, on the one hand, and Czechoslovakia and Poland on the other, contain provisions that in case of differences between these nations which cannot be adjusted by diplomatic means they shall be referred to either an arbitral tribunal or to the Permanent Court of International Justice at The Hague. The treaties were signed on October 16, 1925.

The signing of the Locarno Pact brought about a Cabinet crisis in Germany, caused by the Nationalists' strenuous opposition to the Government's entering into any agreement that would fetter her from regaining in the future, by force of arms if need be, territory that she claimed rightfully belonged to her.

In November, 1925, the Government made reply to the Council of Ambassadors, agreeing to the demands made by the Allies for further disarmament by Germany. Germany agreed to abolish the office of Commander-in-Chief of her forces, to disperse her General Staff, to reorganize her police soldiery in accordance with the wishes of the Allies, and to destroy all remaining great guns at the arsenal at Königsberg. Germany also agreed to curtail the military training of German youth.

The German Reichstag passed, after much debate, the Locarno Pacts, and they were signed at London on December 1, 1925. Socialists supported the measure only on agreement that Dr. Luther would resign as Chancellor. This he did on December 5. Political bickering caused failure in coalition of opposition parties, and after several attempts by other leaders to form a government, without avail, President von Hindenburg once more called upon Dr. Hans Luther to head the Government. He succeeded in forming a Cabinet on January 19, 1926, with Dr. Stresemann as Minister of Foreign Affairs; Dr. Peter Reinhold, Finance Minister, and Dr. Wilhelm Külz, Minister of Home Affairs. The rest of the Cabinet were practically new men. The new Government received a vote of confidence on January 27, 1926.

British troops withdrew from the Cologne areas on January 30, and on the following day the northern area of Allied occupation was formally turned back to German sovereignty.

The new budget was brought forward in the Reichstag by Finance Minister Reinhold on February 10, 1926. The program, which received the approval of the Reichstag, called for a tax reduction of 550,000,000 gold marks, to be met by internal loans.

Sentence in the notorious Feme case, where eleven ex-officers and soldiers were accused of more than a score of murders, was rendered on February 2, 1926, with the conviction of nine of the men involved.

On March 2, Chancellor Luther announced in the Reichstag that unless Germany would be the only additional permanent member of the Council of the League of Nations, she would refuse to enter the League. At a meeting on March 8, 1926, the League of Nations did not admit Germany. Poland, Spain and Brazil each demanded a permanent seat on the Council if one should be allotted to Germany, and this insistence of other nations, together with Germany's attitude, was responsible for the failure to admit Germany, and Germany's entry was postponed until September. Italy also was somewhat hostile to Germany's claims and France was inclined to favor those of Poland, in accordance with her policy.

The unemployment situation in the German Republic at the beginning of 1926 showed no improvement over the statistics of the preceding year. Two million persons in 1926 were receiving state relief of some kind. On the other hand, in April, a statement was made by Seymour Parker Gilbert, who had succeeded Owen D. Young as Agent General of the Reparation Commission in 1924, that Germany was not staggering under great and excessive financial burdens as the outcome of the World War. He pointed out that the debts contracted by the principal Allies were greater than those incurred by Germany. Thus Great Britain's debt was $34,000,000,000; France's, $19,000,000,000; and that of the United States, $21,000,000,000; whereas Germany's war debt, including the liabilities under the Dawes Plan, amounted to $15,000,000,000. During the fiscal year, the total amount received by taxation within the Republic was 6,856,103,480 marks, or nearly 100,000,000 marks more than the budget estimated.

The deaths of two notable men of Germany occurred in April. One of them was August Thyssen, head of the Ruhr iron and steel industries and the wealthiest man in the Republic; the other was Professor Fritz Rausenberger, who designed the long-range gun which shelled Paris.

The new German steel works, combining the largest steel manufacturing interests in the state, began operations on May 14. The merger was effected and partially financed by the American bankers, Dillon, Read and Company.

The question whether the old flag and colors of the Empire could be used alongside the new flag of the Republic became a prominent feature of political controversy. The Government decided, on May 5, that German diplomatic officers abroad could use the old standards together with the new. Democrats, Nationalists and People's Party opposed. Although defeated, these parties were strong enough to overthrow the Luther Government, which already had come near to defeat upon a number of state problems. The Luther Government resigned, and President von Hindenburg invited Dr. Marx, leader of the Centrist Party, to form a new Cabinet. He accepted and became Chancellor on May 16, 1926, but retained otherwise the former Luther Cabinet. Chancellor Marx at once removed the two great stumbling blocks of the old Government, namely, the flag question and the claim of the ex-rulers for compensation for property seized. He ruled that the old royalist emblems and the new Republic's flags could be used together, pending a conference which could select a compromise emblem. Millions of signatories had asked for a referendum in the matter of the property of the former ruling family. The referendum having been voted for, Chancellor Marx set a day when voters could register their decision, June 20 being the day fixed. But the referendum of June 20 proved to be null and void, since the votes cast were not sufficient in numbers to meet the requirements of the Constitution. Those opposing confiscation, foreseeing defeat, stayed away from the polls and did not cast their ballots. The Communists and Socialists were to a man in favor of confiscation. The People's Party, the Nationalists and other parties were against it. It was estimated that 60 per cent of the voters stayed away from the polls, while about 35 per cent voted for confiscation.

The German-Russian Treaty received approval of the Reichstag on June 10. The perplexing question of settling the claims of the former rulers of Germany was again in the foreground in July, which threatened again to bring about a Cabinet crisis. Chancellor Marx was forced to withdraw the Government measure for settlement of claims, and the Reichstag passed a law postponing all action upon the problem for six months.

The loss of Germany's colonies by the terms of the Versailles Treaty had ever since been a source of disappointment and an ever present subject of political discussion. Each year was held a German Colonial Congress, in which was centered the movement for colonial restitution. It met for 1926 on July 31, and passed resolutions to the effect that Germany's entry into the League of Nations should be conditioned upon her right to reclaim her lost colonies.

General Hans von Seckt, Commander of the Army of the German Republic, was forced to resign his command by the Reichstag, for permitting Prince William of Prussia, son of the former Crown Prince Frederick William, to enlist secretly and illegally in the Army and thus to take part in the autumn manoeuvers in September. General Wilhelm Heye was appointed to succeed in Command of the Army on October 9.

The question of payment for property of the former rulers of Germany remained unsettled after the defeat of the referendum. The former reigning houses of the Kingdoms of Prussia, Bavaria, Saxony and Württemburg and of nineteen duchies and principalities, continued to press their claims for reimbursement. It was estimated that this property in estates, castles, palaces and art treasures amounted to more than 3,000,000,000 marks. Many attempts by the Government were made to effect some just settlement, as confiscation without compensation was held to be against all just principles of state sovereignty. The separate ex-kingdoms and principalities at last brought about settlement with their former ruling houses, Prussia and Gotha alone excepted. Negotiations in regard to Prussia's settlement of long-standing claims of the former Kaiser Wilhelm were brought to a successful conclusion when on October 15 the Reichstag, by a vote of 258 to 37 enacted a measure to pay its former royal family the sum of 15,000,000 gold marks, together with about 250,000 acres of land and certain castles and palaces. While the settlement did not represent anything like the claims of the Hohenzollerns, and was not, on the other hand, agreeable to the factions that demanded total confiscation, it was felt to be the best possible solution of a problem that had vexed every Government since the organization of the Republic.

The budget for 1927, submitted in December, 1926, totaled 10,500,000,000 marks, including 2,000,000,000, marks as reparation payments.

The Marx Cabinet, after a stormy career of a little more than six months, was forced to resign on December 17, because of Socialist opposition. The vote of no confidence was 249 to 171. President von Hindenburg requested Chancellor Marx to continue his Government until a successor could be selected. The ministerial crisis continued for more than six weeks. On January 31, 1927, however, Chancellor Marx was able to form a new Cabinet, a coalition of leaders of the Centrists, Populists and Nationalists. Its chief members were Dr. Marx as Chancellor, Dr. Gustav Stresemann as Minister of Foreign Affairs, Herr Heinrich as Minister of Finance, Dr. Walther von Keudell as Vice-Chancellor, and Dr. Julius Curtius as Minister of Economics. The Opposition, consisting of Socialists, Democrats, Communists and National Socialists, would have about 220 votes as compared to the Government's 270. The new Cabinet secured a vote of confidence on February 5.

An emergency labor law providing for a forty-eight hour week was passed by the Reichstag in March. Financial statistics show the great decline of 75 per cent in the numbers of men worth one million gold marks. It was estimated that not more than 4,000 persons in Germany had property worth 1,000,000 marks, with only about 50 persons classed as having 10,000,000 marks, the ex-Kaiser Wilhelm being conceded the richest man of Germany with an income of approximately $1,000,000.

According to latest statistics, there were 792,000 injured soldiers and 1,067,600 children receiving state pensions. It was also stated that more than 57,000 former civilian officials and 37,000 Army and Navy officers were drawing pensions in excess of 8,000 marks each. Six former German Chancellors were also on the pension rolls, each receiving in the neighborhood of 20,000 marks yearly. The pension load on the Government was estimated to total $350,000,000 yearly out of a budget of $2,000,000,000. Labor statistics showed that German industries in 1927 were employing more men and women than at any time between 1900 and 1914, the year of the breaking out of the World War with its vast changes in the wealth and industry of nations.

The question of allowing the Kaiser to return to Germany was brought up in the Reichstag in April. While it was shown that a majority of the members of the Reichstag was against permitting him to become a German citizen again, no definite measures were taken. On May 8, the monarchists had a parade, in which 60,000 adherents of the Hohenzollerns took part. There was no disorder, the public showing little interest.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

BIBLIOGRAPHY

No attempt has been made to include in this bibliography more than a representation of the many excellent works on Germany and Germany's history which her own unrivalled scholarship has produced. Many of these, despite their intrinsic value and historic importance, remain accessible only in the original. It is also true that many, on account of their Teuton seriousness of style, are rather unsuited to the needs of the general reader though inestimable to the specialist or student.

GENERAL HISTORIES

Bryce, James.—"Holy Roman Empire." New York and London, 1887.
This scholarly classic is a portrayal of the relations of Rome and Germany during the Middle Ages. Its reading should precede the study of the general history of Germany.

Dunham, S. A.—"A History of the Germanic Empire." 3 vols. London, 1834.
Offers a clear and judicious narrative of the mediæval period. For the modern period the reader must seek another author.

Henderson, E. F.—"A Short History of Germany." 2 vols. New York, 1901.
A brief but excellent treatment exhibiting modern critical scholarship at its best. Henderson's works are all admirable.

Horne, Charles T.—"The Story of Germany."
A good one volume account.

Janssen, Johannes.—"History of the German People." 10 vols. St. Louis, 1900.
A work of consummate ability. The author is a Roman Catholic and his views show strong conviction. This history takes high rank, both in scholarship and literary quality, and it should be consulted for comparison on all important points. The account of the conditions in Germany before Luther is the most complete to be found.

Lewis, Charlton T.—"A History of Germany from the Earliest Times." New York, 1874.
Founded on Müller's German work. A good brief history.

Linder, Theodore.—"*Geschichte des deutschen Reiches vom Ende des vierzehnten Jahrhunderts bis zur Reformation.*" Vols. I and II. Braunschweig, 1875-1880.
A study of the sources, with much new material. A monumental and eventually a voluminous work, for reference rather than for general perusal.

Menzel, Wolfgang.—"The History of Germany from the Earliest Period to the Present Time." (Translated from the fourth German edition by Mrs. George Horrocks.) 3 vols. London, 1849.
A satisfactory account down to the year 1848. In style very readable.

Sime, James.—"History of Germany." New York, 1875.
The details of the history of Germany, considered as a confederation, are too numerous to make the account easily compressible within a small manual; but this volume is useful and interesting, although very brief.

SPECIAL PERIODS

Armstrong, Edward.—"The Emperor Charles V."
Beard, Charles.—"Martin Luther." London.
Probably the best English account of Luther before his retirement to the Wartburg.
Bigelow, Poultney.—"History of the German Struggle for Liberty." 4 vols. London, 1905.
One of the most important and reliable of modern works.
"Bismarck, The Man and the Statesman: Reflections, etc., by Himself." English translation. 2 vols. London, 1898.
——"Letters."
The study of the individual vitalizes history.
Busch, M.—"Bismarck: Some Secret Pages of his History." 3 vols. London, 1898.
Carlyle, Thomas.—"History of Friedrich II., called Frederick the Great."
Should be included in any bibliography of the subject, but rather inadequate as history though acceptable as literature.
Comyn, Sir Robert.—"History of the Western Empire." 2 vols. London, 1851.
Coxe, William.—"History of the House of Austria." London, 1860-1868.
The only complete history of the house of Austria in English.
Dahlinger, C. W.—"The German Revolution of 1849." 1903.
As its sub-title indicates, this is an account of the final struggle in Baden for the maintenance of Germany's first national representative government.
Debidour.—"*Histoire diplomatique de l'Europe, 1814-1878.*" Vols. I and II, Paris, 1891.
Contains an account of German diplomacy during the critical period of the nineteenth century.
Deniche, H.—"*Von der deutschen Hansa: eine Historische Skizze.*"
Deventer, M. L. van.—"*Cinquante Années de l'Histoire Fédérale de l'Allemagne. Etude historique et politique.*" Brussels, 1870.
The best account of the Confederation from 1815 to 1866.
Droysen, Joh. Gust.—"*Das Leben des Feldmarschalls Grafen York von Wartenburg.*" 3 vols. Berlin, 1851.
The life of York offers many sidelights on the Germany of his time.
Droysen, Gustav.—"*Gustav Adolph.*" 2 vols. Leipsic, 1869.
A discussion of the political considerations and situations into which Gustavus Adolphus entered, thus forming an important contribution to the literature of the period.
Duncker, Max.—"*Aus der Zeit Friedrich des Grossen und Friedrich Wilhelms III: Abhandlungen zur preussischen Geschichte.*" Leipsic, 1876.
Essays in historic criticism.
Elberstadt.—"*Der deutsche Kapital-markt.*" Leipsig, 1901.
A very thorough survey of the capitalization of the entire German industry and the money market in all its relations to the life of the people.

Eltzbacher, O.—"Modern Germany." London, 1905.

Eugene, Prince of Savoy.—"Memoirs."

Fisher, Herbert A. L.—"Studies in Napoleonic Statesmanship—Germany." Oxford, 1903.

This is a study in civil and administrative history, being an account of the growth, character and influence of the Napoleonic system in Germany.

Frederick the Great.—"Works," ("Correspondence," "History of my own Times," etc.) (Translated by Thomas Holcroft.) 12 vols.

Freytag, Gustav.—"*Bilder aus der deutschen Vergangenheit.*" 5 vols. Leipsic, 1884-1886.

——"*Neue Bilder aus dem Leben des deutschen Volkes.*" Leipsic, 1862.

These volumes of essays or historical pictures are charming in style and well deserve their extraordinary popularity with cultured readers.

Gardiner, Samuel R.—"The Thirty Years' War." London, 1874.

A good summary, giving due emphasis to the important points in the progress of the war and the general results.

Giesebreckt, Wilhelm von.—"*Geschichte der deutschen Kaiserzeit.*" 5 vols. 1863-1861.

Date considered, this remains one of the great modern works on the mediæval history of Germany.

Gindely, Anton,—"History of the Thirty Years' War." (Translated by Andrew Ten Brook.) 2 vols. New York.

This translation constitutes the most complete and scholarly account to be had in English.

Häusser, Ludwig.—"*Deutsche Geschichte vom Tode Friedrichs des Grossen bis zur Gründung des deutschen Bundes.*" 4 vols. Berlin, 1863.

A valuable history by an able historian specialist for the Revolutionary period.

Headlam, J. W.—"The Foundation of the German Empire, 1817-1871." Cambridge, 1897.

Henderson, E. F.—"History of Germany in the Middle Ages." New York, 1894.

Henderson's works will always be found adequate in their presentation of the facts within their subject limits.

Hozier, H. M.—"The Seven Weeks' War." 2 vols. Philadelphia, 1867.

One of the best accounts of the antecedents and incidents of the war of 1866, graphic and readable, and well supplied with maps and plans.

Junck, Karl.—"*Der deutsch-französische Krieg, 1870 und 1871.*" 2 vols. Leipsic, 1876.

A very satisfactory account from the Teuton standpoint; commendable for its historical and political phases.

Koser, Reinhold.—"*Friedrich der Grosse als Kronprinz.*" Stuttgart, 1901.

A small classic by perhaps the greatest living authority.

Koepp, Friedrich.—"*Die Römer in Deutschland.*" 1905.

A useful little monograph on the Romans in Germany.

Lecomte, Ferdinand.—"*Guerre de la Prusse et de l'Italie contre l'Autriche et la Confédération Germanique en 1866.*" 2 vols. Paris, 1868.

An historical and critical account of the war of 1866, with maps and plans.

Lowe, Charles.—"Prince Bismarck: an Historical Biography." 2 vols. London, 1886.

A biography of real excellence. Lowe was Berlin correspondent of the London *Times.*

Malleson, G. B.—"The Refounding of the German Empire, 1848-1871." London, 1893.

A useful and in every way available book.

Marcks, E.—"Germany and England: Their Relations in the Great Crises of European History, 1500-1900." London, 1900.

This is a translation from one of the foremost German historians.

Metternich, Prince.——"Memoirs, 1773-1815." (Edited by Prince Metternich and translated by Mrs. Alexander Napier.) 4 vols. New York and London, 1880-1881.

Invaluable material for the historian and extremely interesting to the reader of German History.

Moltke, H. C. B. von.—"The Franco-German War." London, 1893.

Translation by A. Forbes.

Mueller, Wilhelm.—"Political History of Recent Times (1816-1875), with Special Reference to Germany." (Translated by John P. Peters.) New York, 1882.

Murdock, Harold.—"The Reconstruction of Europe." Boston, 1892.

The period of the Second Empire.

Ranke, Leopold von.—"History of the Reformation in Germany." 3 vols. London, 1845-1847.

Commentaries on the Reformation. A book of permanent value, exhibiting Germany's relations to the rest of Europe during the Lutheran Revolt.

——"Memoirs of the House of Brandenburg and History of Prussia during the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries." 3 vols. London, 1849.

This translation by Sir Alexander and Lady Duff Gordon constitutes the most valuable account in English of the history of Brandenburg and Prussia before the Seven Years' War.

——"*Zur deutschen Geschichte vom Religionsfrieden bis zum dreissigjährigen Kriege.*" Berlin, 1870.

Deals with the period from 1552 to 1618 and forms an introduction to the study of the Thirty Years' War.

——"*Denkwürdigkeiten des Staatskanzlers Fürsten von Hardenberg.*" 5 vols. Leipsic, 1877.

A valuable contribution to the literature of the Napoleonic period.

——"*Ursprung und Beginn der Revolutionskriege, 1791-1792.*" Berlin, 1878.

A remarkable presentation.

Raumer, Friedrich von.—"*Geschichte der Hohenstaufen und ihrer Zeit.*" 6 vols. Leipsic, 1825.

Exhibits German scholarship at its best and improved by an eloquent descriptive style. In treatment it is eloquent and impressive.

Richter.—"*Annalen der deutschen Geschichte im Mittelalter.*"

An incomparable work.

Robertson, William.—"History of the Reign of Emperor Charles V." 3 vols. London, 1888.

Rüstow, R.—"The War on the Rhine Frontier." Translated from the German by J. G. Needham. 3 vols. London, 1871-1872.

A political and military history.

Schäfer, Arnold.—"*Geschichte des siebenjährigen Krieg.*" 2 vols. Berlin, 1867-1874.

Important as a diplomatic history. Not entertaining, but valuable to the student.

Seeley, J. R.—"Life and Times of Stein; or Germany and Prussia in the Napoleonic Age." 3 vols. London and Boston, 1879.

Of striking historic value. The work is based on original materials and is judicial in tone. It furnishes a good account of the reform which brought about Prussia's greatness.

Seignobos, Charles.—" Political History of Europe since 1814."

To be consulted for the portion dealing with German affairs.

Simon, E.—" Emperor William and his Reign." 2 vols. Paris, 1886.

Smith, Munroe.—" Bismarck and German Unity." New York and London.

Staël, Madame de—" Germany." 3 vols. London, 1813.

The literary genius of its author makes this a work of permanent interest.

Stirling-Maxwell, Sir W.—" The Cloister Life of the Emperor Charles V." London, 1852.

——" Don John of Austria." 2 vols.

Both works are valuable as historical bibliography.

Sybel, Heinrich von.—" The Founding of the German Empire." 5 vols. New York, 1890-1898.

This is a translation by Perrin and Bradford of Von Sybel's important and thoroughly modern work.

Treitschke, Heinrich von.—"*Deutsche Geschichte im neunzehnten Jahrhundert.*" Vols. I to III. Leipsic, 1879-1886.

Designed to exhibit the origin and characteristics of the new life of Germany and considered the most complete general history of this period. Strongly Prussian.

——"*Zehn Jahre deutscher Kämpfe, 1865-1874. 2te Aufl., fortgeführt bis zum Jahre 1879.*" Berlin, 1879.

Essays on the political problems arising between the Danish war and the complete establishment of the empire.

Tuttle, Herbert.—" History of Prussia to the Accession of Frederick the Great, 1134-1740."

——" History of Prussia under Frederick the Great, 1740-1756." 3 vols.

The best works in English, unfortunately cut short by the death of the author. Judgments and statements not always unbiased, however.

——" German Political Leaders." New York and London, 1876.

Descriptive essays offering critical analysis and comparison.

Vehse, Dr. E.—" Memoirs of the Court, Aristocracy and Diplomacy of Austria." (Translated from the German by Franz Demmler.) 2 vols. London, 1856.

A picture of society and public characters in the whole period of Austrian history from Maximilian I to the death of Francis II.

Walker, F.—" The Protestant Reformation." New York.

Whitcomb, Merrick.—" Source Book of the German Renaissance." Philadelphia.

Zimmern, Helen.—" The Hansa Towns." New York, 1891.

The Hansa was one of the earliest representatives of the federal spirit. This is an interesting study, but presupposes, of course, some knowledge of the general history of Germany.

MISCELLANEOUS

Bax, E. B.—" German Society at the Close of the Middle Ages." 1894.

This is a study of the social side of the Reformation and deals with the underlying causes of the general disintegration of the time.

Baring-Gould, S.—" Germany, Past and Present." 2 vols. London, 1881.

A careful study, including a valuable description of the peasant proprietors and the general characteristics of modern Germany.

Bartels.—"*Geschichte der deutschen Litteratur.*" Leipsig, 1902.
The most recent history of German literature.

Dawson, W. H.—"Bismarck and State Socialism." London, 1890.
A portrait of Germany since 1870 in its social and economic aspects.

——"Germany and the Germans." 2 vols. London, 1894.
Excellent in arrangement and substantial in its treatment of the phases of national life selected for discussion.

Francke, Kuno.—"History of German Literature as Determined by Social Forces." New York.

Lair.—"*L'impérialisme Allemand.*" Paris, 1903.
Furnishes a review of the extraordinary results of the last twenty years in the industrial and commercial development of Germany.

Lotz.—"*Verkehrsentwickelung in Deutschland, 1800-1900.*" Leipsig, 1900.
A popular presentation of the growth of railways and the part they play in Germany's industrial development. A brief sketch of the transportation system of the Middle Ages is included.

Williams, E. E.—"Made in Germany." London, 1896.

William Carey Int'l University
3 1539 00047396